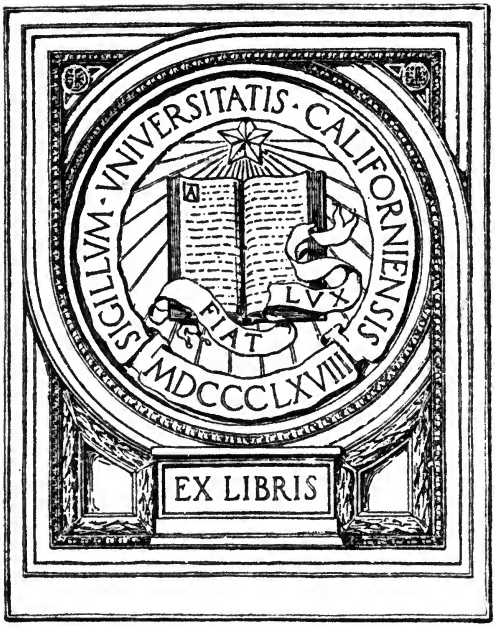
Reviewed



BANCROFT LIBRARY

2 vols
300

SIR EDW. SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE

OF HIS SHIPWRECK,

AND CONSEQUENT

DISCOVERY OF CERTAIN ISLANDS IN THE CARIBBEAN SEA;

WITH A DETAIL OF MANY EXTRAORDINARY AND HIGHLY INTERESTING EVENTS IN HIS LIFE, FROM THE YEAR 1733 TO 1749.

AS WRITTEN IN HIS OWN DIARY.

EDITED BY MISS JANE PORTER.

THIRD EDITION.

IN TWO VOLUMES.—VOL. I.

LONDON:
LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1841.

PZ3
P821Si

LONDON:
Printed by Manning and Mason, Ivy-lane, Paternoster-row.

NAUTICAL AND GEOGRAPHICAL INTRODUCTION

TO A NEW EDITION OF

SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE,

AS NOW REPUBLISHED, IN THE YEAR 1841.

In 1831, the first edition of this work was published. Several editions of it have since succeeded; during which time, many discussions have occurred, between reviews and other periodicals, respecting the identity of the islands wherein the principal scenes of Sir Edward Seaward's Narrative took place. Some of those reviewers, doubting even the islands' existence, concluded the whole to be a total fiction of the Editor's fancy; and ended with a no gentle animadversion besides, on her presumption, (as they inferred,) in attempting to insinuate a work of her own invention, upon the Public, as a true story. A sweeping blame, had there been any justice in it, that must have included no less names than those of Daniel de Foe, and Sir Walter Scott, in the sentence of literary delinquency. She, however, had written a Preface to her work: and, to those who chose to disbelieve its language, she did not return any response to their charges; but left the facts of her *data* to be proved, in the progress of time; and the verification of her *land and sea marks*, by some probable actual observation, perhaps at no very distant period, of a more widely-spreading political and commercial international relations than then existed; which might carry the enterprising mariners of England, to every nook of the ocean's boundaries. And, such an

evidence she has now the pleasure to produce, in this tenth year after the first publication of Sir Edward Seaward's Narrative.

It is a Report, made by Mr. C. F. Collett, of the Royal Navy; and communicated to the Royal Geographical Society of London, in 1837, by Captain Beaufort, R. N. From which, the candid, and particularly the nautical, reader, will find several extracts in these following pages, which immediately point to the fact, that the islands mentioned in the Narrative of Sir Edward Seaward, are not visions of the fancy, but substantial *terra firma.* Though their far-insulated and perilous situation has, hitherto, rendered them almost a *terra incognito;* except to shipwrecked mariners; or to desperate buccaneers, whose havens of refuge must generally have been, like unto themselves, objects which other men would seek to avoid, rather than to near. At least, such appears to have been the state of Seaward's Islands, when a merciful Providence conducted his storm-driven little barque over their foaming reefs, into a haven; which had been so long deserted by any wandering keel, in flight from foe or tempest, that when he and the faithful partner of his fortunes, found shelter there, no trace of former inhabitant remained; and, for some time, he did not doubt, that he and she were the first human beings who had trod those rock-girt shores. But the Report from Mr. Collett, concerning the island of *Old Providence,* and its consort-isle, the *Catalina;* and which he appears to confidently believe are the Islands of the Seaward Narrative; while the history he gives of them, previous to, and subsequent to the landing of the Gloucestershire knight and his lady; give sufficient testimony to those supposed desert spots in the ocean, having received frequent wild inmates, in early times. Which fact, an accidental circumstance, not long after his arrival, also discovered to Sir Edward

Seaward, in the cave under the promontory. But first, to prove the real existence of these Islands; and where they lie; Mr. Collett writes thus:—

"During the progress of the survey of the eastern coast of Central America, and of the islands and cays adjacent, under the direction of Captain Richard Owen, of his Majesty's ship Thunderer, in 1835, we visited the Island of *Old Providence*."

This is the Island, which the subsequent remarks of the surveying-navigator, identifies with the chief of Seaward's Islands. Mr. Collett proceeds as follows:—

"This small island, of which no authentic description has appeared, claims attention from its having been the resort of both buccaneers and more modern privateers, as well as from the fertility of its soil, which requires little cultivation. Situated about 125 miles from the nearest part of the Mosquito coast, and 38 miles only from the Mosquito Bank, it can be seen at a distance from eleven to twelve leagues; and is easily distinguished from the neighbouring island of St. Andrew, by the curious outline of its abrupt and peaked mountains. St. Andrew (from which it may be seen in clear weather,) bears from it s. by w. forty-seven miles. The positions of the island and cays, as determined by the recent survey, are as follows:—

	Lat. North.	Long. West of Greenwich.
Low Cay, at the N. W. of the coral reef	13° 31′ 36″	81° 20′ 30″
Basalt Cay, 45 feet high	13° 24′ 0″	81° 22′ 10″
North end of Catalina	13° 23′ 40″	81° 22′ 10″
Isabel	13° 22′ 54″	81° 32′ 0″
Highest Peak, near the centre	13° 21′ 0″	81° 21′ 50″
South Point	13° 19′ 15″	18° 23′ 10″

Var. compass 6° 45′ easterly, May, 1835.

"Separated from the island's northern end, by a cut or channel of from forty to sixty yards wide, is the island of *Santa Catalina*, 1800 yards long, by 1300 in its greatest

breadth; forming the northern boundary of a harbour, (thence named) affording secure anchorage, in from two to three and a half fathoms. But these islands are very hilly, and, on approaching them, present a delightful variety of scènery. On the authority of one of the oldest inhabitants, the channel between the islands is said to have had eight or nine feet water; at present, however, it has, at its eastern entrance, only two feet. This change of depth, may be accounted for by the drift of sand and stones from off the reefs, whence there is almost a constant set into the cut, owing to the prevalence of the N. E. and E. N. E. winds.

"In tracing the history of these islands (which may be found, on reference to Kingrose's translation of the Lives of the Buccaneers, published in 1684); the larger may be identified as St. Catherine, of which much mention is made. From whom, or when, it received its present name of *Old Providence*, it is not easy to say."

The Editor of the Seaward Narrative, would presume to suggest, it might have been so named, in grateful memorial of some such providential escape, as that found by Sir Edward Seaward himself, on that same formidable shore. But to resume the Report:—

"*Old Providence*, is nearly four miles and a quarter long; and two and a half in its greatest breadth: of an irregular and oval shape. The highest ground (which can hardly be called a point), near the centre of the island, rises 1190 feet above the level of the sea. From this hill, others, mostly wooded to their summits, diverge towards the shore, and terminate boldly. The island is surrounded by an extensive bank of coral, and coarse sand, stretching to the northward, for ten miles and a half. A reef, in many parts dry, extends in a northerly direction, at a distance of three-quarters of a mile, along the eastern side, till within about three miles of the north-

east angle of the bank, whence it trends west across the bank, for two miles and a half; having at its western extremity a small cay, about two or three feet high, composed of coral, sand, and stones, brought there by fishermen from the islands. On this northern part of the reef, and three-quarters of a mile to the eastward of the cay, H. M. schooner Jackdaw, was wrecked on the morning of the 11th March, 1835. Its wreck was complete; and the lives of the crew, were only saved by the presence of mind and decision of Lieutenant Barnett, her commander; who, seeing at once the impossibility of avoiding the reef, ran his vessel directly on the most favourable spot for enabling him to construct rafts: by which, with the assistance of a sloop, his crew and provisions were landed with safety. This unfortunate occurrence (the shipwreck), was occasioned by the inaccuracies of the Spanish plan of the island, with which the Jackdaw had been supplied, being the best then published; but which made the reef to extend only four miles and a half from the island, instead of ten miles; added to a strong south-west current. Since that time, a very accurate chart of the islands, and cays adjacent, has been completed, on the scale of four inches to a mile; which represents all the features of this extensive bank, and coral reef, very minutely.

"This reef, binding the eastern shore of the island, extends to, and terminates at, the distance of a mile and a quarter from its southern point; whence the soundings extend in a southern direction, from two miles and a quarter, to three miles. The sea almost constantly breaks on the reef; so that it can be discovered long before the bank is approached; and although the openings in the reef have a depth of from three to five fathoms water, a passage is seldom attempted, except by small vessels. The coral rocky heads within, (that is, the westward of

the reef,) are very numerous and dangerous; and some small wooded cays are situated to the northward of the islands.

"*Old Providence* should always, if possible, be approached from the northward; and by day; in consequence of the prevalence of the N. E. winds, making it in the parallel of 13° 32′ 33″; soundings will be first got on the bank, in from fifteen to seventeen fathoms, coarse coral sand; then steer W. by N. ½ N. by compass, keeping along to the northward of the reef, at about three-quarters of a mile distance, till the highest peak on the island bears S. 3° E.; then shape a course towards it, rounding the western elbow of the reef, at one and a half or two cables' distance, when, after a run of about three-quarters of a mile, good anchorage may be obtained in five, eight, or ten fathoms, with the Low Cay bearing N. N. E. If, however, intending to proceed to the anchorage off *Santa Catalina;* on rounding the reef, steer S. by W. ½ W. nearly six miles, until Morgan's Head transits the highest peak in the island; then haul up S. E. by S., and stand on till Basalt Cay bears E., Morgan's Head, S. E. ¾ S., and anchor immediately on obtaining soundings in five or six fathoms. For a vessel coming from the southward, and by night, the most advisable plan would be, on making the land, to lie-to till daylight, keeping it in sight. When, in the morning, the beat up to anchorage would not be above six or seven miles, with a certainty of a good breeze and smooth water. In working up, the clearness of the water enables the eye to detect the shallow rocky heads, which abound within three cables' length of the whole edge of the bank. No dependence can be placed on the currents, as they vary in strength and direction *off* the bank, while determining the outer eastern part of which, an almost invariable set to N. W. was experienced. The tides are variable, sometimes, in north-

westerly breezes, rising as much as two feet; but no greater rise or fall, than six or seven inches, was observed during the six weeks (part of April and May,) that our boats and the ship were employed surveying the island.

"The only harbour is that of *Catalina*, before mentioned; to enter which a pilot is almost indispensable. The anchoring ground is good, and although open to the winds from N. W. to S. W., the reefs in that direction form a barrier to the setting in of a heavy sea.

"Morgan's Head (named after the noted buccaneer,) is a very remarkable rock, nearly detached from the S. W. point of Catalina Island. It rises forty feet from the level of the sea, and from its proximity to the rocks of the island, is not easily distinguished till closely approached. On entering the harbour, it will be found to bear a striking resemblance to the figure of a man's head, and gradually developes the profile of an elderly-looking ruffian.

"Split Hill, near the northern end of the island, is 550 feet in height, and has the extraordinary appearance of a hill having been, by some sudden convulsion of nature, rent in twain as far as one-third down from its summit. It is peaked on each side of the chasm, which is about sixty feet wide, and eighty feet deep. The geological structure of this island, would seem to be chiefly lime-stone, containing numerous small but deep coves near the water's edge. The rocks generally are precipitous. I am not aware that basalt has been found on the island. But at Basalt Cay, about 400 yards to the northward of Catalina, the basaltic columns rise to forty-five feet above the sea, and stand about fifteen degrees from the perpendicular, inclining to the southward. The coral formations, appear to resemble those in other parts of the West Indies.

"The watering-place for ships, is situated on the

western shore, at two miles and a quarter from the anchorage in the harbour. It can be easily recognised, by being a little to the southward of some white cliffs. It is the largest of four streams, issuing from one spring, situated in the highest part of the island. The filling-place, whence excellent water of a chalybeate quality was procured, is about 100 fathoms from the mouth of the stream, and partially hid by a sandy beach, through which it forces itself after heavy rains. No spring of water, is to be found on the small island of *Catalina*. Wood, for fuel, can be procured on its western part, where there is no cultivation, from its being very hilly. No trees large enough for spars for ships, grow on either island. The calabash and mangrove furnish good knees for boats; the latter grows in swampy ground, and near the beach. Cedar is good, equal to that of Cape Gracios à Dios, and squares from twenty to twenty-four inches. Iron-wood is found on the N. E. hill of Old Providence. Manchinees, or manzanilla, is found in abundance; a very curious shrub of from twelve to fifteen feet in height, called by the inhabitants, Cockspur, is found in great quantities all over the island. It receives its name from the resemblance of the pods, which cluster the bush, to the shape of a cock's-spur.—The pods, when ripe, are occupied by numerous small black ants, whose bite is so severe, as to be said to have caused death.—This shrub is not found on any other island in these seas, and no account of its having been imported, exists.—Fruits of various kinds, such as sapodillos, mangoes, oranges, tamarinds, plums, limes, etc. are plentiful. — Wild pigeons, guanas, and hiccatee or land-turtle, abound. — Also yams, coccos, plantains, and pumpkins.—Likewise fowls, and turkeys; and cattle, generally in good order. —Fish peculiar to these latitudes, are in abundance.— Sharks too, are very numerous.

"Cotton is the staple export.—This, with turtle-shell, and a few hides, are the principal articles of trade.—And are annually taken away by the traders, in exchange for English calicoes, cloths, etc., brought from Jamaica.

"In the beginning of 1835, the population, by the last census, was 342 persons; about one-half of whom are slaves. They have three vessels, of from ten to fifteen tons burthen, employed in turtling; which, from their size, are very easily managed among the banks they frequent—such as the Serrana, Serranilla, Roncador, etc. *Old Providence* is visited by the traders who frequent the coasts from Cape Gracios à Dios to San Blas. The island is under the government of the republic of New Granada, (one of the three divisions of the recently liberated part of Spanish-America, to which its memorable liberator, Simon Bolivar, gave the name of Columbia): and at *Old Providence*, a collector and a civil magistrate reside, who administer the government, with two assistants. English is the language spoken."

Such was the state of the islands, at the time of Mr. Collett's survey; but the succeeding extract from his curious, and interesting paper, will show something of what they were previously; at least a century before the period of Sir Edward Seaward's Narrative.

"During a short war with Spain, in 1625-6, the Spanish Guarda Costas were constantly employed in aggressions upon the trade of the English and French; and, by their own severity, gave room for the system of buccaneering, at first adopted in self-defence, and retaliation; and, subsequently persevered in, from habit, and a love of plunder. If time did not permit the buccaneers to lavish their booty away, they used to hide it in the bays which they frequented; and where much treasure is still supposed to be concealed. In 1664, when the Spaniards were in quiet possession of the islands,

Mansvelt, celebrated alike for his daring and crimes, took them by storm, considering them well adapted for the head-quarters of the lawless band of which he was the leader. At his death, Morgan assumed the command, taking possession in December 1670. At this time, the small island of *Santa Catalina* was well fortified, having no less than nine batteries on it, mounting in all forty-nine guns. And remaining some time, he and his followers continued their depredations upon the Spaniards, always bringing the spoil here. But before he left it, he threw the guns of the forts into the sea, and set fire to the houses and forts; preserving one of the latter only, from complete destruction. Morgan was knighted 1675. In 1677, he was appointed deputy-governor of Jamaica, with a salary of 600*l*. In the ensuing reign of James II., he was recalled to England, on account of his not only conniving at, but assisting in, the depredations committed by the English buccaneers on the fleets, and subjects, of Spain."

Hence, if these islands may be identified with those of Sir Edward Seaward; and as we read of Morgan's destroying all vestiges of their buccaneering strongholds, and even of every human habitation, (about the year 1675,) previous to his taking possession of his new magisterial dignity in Jamaica; and as we see that Seaward did not land on the "reef-girt" shore, till 1733, the intervening half century, of their abandonment by man, might be expected to allow both islands to be overgrown into the trackless, though beautiful solitudes, in which the young Bristol merchant found them.

Mr. Collett then proceeds to say, that little mention was made of these islands, after the affair of Morgan dismantling them, until the year 1795; when (they being then under the dominion of Spain, though left to be a desert,) a few industrious families from Blue fields on the Mosquito coast, settled there by permission from the

Spaniards. From that time, until 1817, the poor little colony remained in peaceful possession. But just at that era, of an almost universal agitation over the political and the moral world, when the Spanish South American provinces separated themselves from the sway of the mother country, a bold adventurer, of the name of Aurey, obtained a commission from one of them, to proceed amongst the isles; and arriving at *Old Providence*, he found no difficulty in assuming its government. He repaired its principal fort; and being accompanied, and followed, by many spirits as daring as his own, he collected a no contemptible number of armed vessels within his harbour; which, sallying forth at opportune occasions, annoyed the Spanish trade, and filled his own coffers with spoil. He built a town, (the one now on the island,) to which he gave the name of Isabella. "It stands," observes Mr. Collett, "at the northern end of *Old Providence*, at the head of *Catalina* harbour, close to the channel between the two islands. Not more than eight or nine houses, or huts, now remain of what was then a populous and flourishing place. Several houses, however, and plantations are scattered over the island, accessible only by a sort of road which passes round the island. No one resides now on the island of *Catalina:* all the ground there, capable of cultivation, is laid out in plantations of corn, cotton, etc. One of the oldest inhabitants of the larger isle, is McKellor, the pilot, who boasts of being a Scotchman; and was in the habit of amusing us with many interesting exploits of General Aurey, and his followers; in which the narrator, generally figured as a principal character. The principal trader at present with the island, is a Mr. Shepherd, of San Juan de Nicoragua, who has several sloops and schooners."

Mr. Collett concludes his observations, with the following remark:—

"On reading Miss Jane Porter's interesting narrative of Sir Edward Seaward's Shipwreck, little doubt can be entertained but that the islands, to which she alludes, are the same that have been above described; for there exists no two islands, so large, and closely situated, as *Old Providence* and *Santa Catalina*, along the whole line of the Mosquito coast. In her preface to that work, she states: 'The islands which form so large an object of interest in this work, may be found in the neighbourhood of the Seranillas; but until Sir Edward Seaward, on being cast ashore there, discovered them to be habitable, they had been marked down as a cluster of barren rocks only, whose dangerous reefs warned ships to avoid them.' Had she favoured her readers with a copy of the chart to which she occasionally alludes, as having been constructed under the direction of Sir Edward Seaward, a more certain conviction as to the identity of the islands on which she has founded her work, would have been obtained. As it is, we are left to conclude, from her accuracy in delineating their situation, resources, productions, and proximity to the Seranilla Cays, (which are only a composition of sand and stone, not more than six feet in height;) that the islands of *Catalina* and *Old Providence*, were the scene of the events she has so admirably narrated."

After the above just quoted suffrage from so accredited an authority, the Editor of Sir Edward Seaward's Narrative, trusts that no more may be deemed necessary to prove the real existence of the islands her pen has described; and also, from the preceding corresponding historical extracts, their perfect identity with those now bearing the names of *Old Providence* and *Catalina*.

Green Street, Grosvenor Square,
August 23d, 1841.

PREFACE BY THE EDITOR,

TO

THE FIRST EDITION OF THE WORK.

The manuscript papers, or rather manuscript books, constituting the Diary from which the following Narrative is taken, were put into my hands by the representative of their much respected writer, merely as a curious specimen of old-fashioned times, the perusal of which might amuse me. On reading the manuscripts, I found, not only amusement, which may be called the least worthy effect of any written production, but a deep and affecting interest;—such as a man might feel while listening, at his own comfortable fireside, to the strange adventures, and hair-breadth escapes, of some dear and long-absent friend, just returned to his kinsfolk and neighbours, after a widely wandering, and chequered travel in distant lands.

Thus impressed, I ventured to recommend the publication of Sir Edward Seaward's Diary, to its owner. He smiled, and objected, saying, "He should expect the spirit of the worthy knight, would haunt him to his dying day, did he make such an exposition of family history, and of the unpretending abilities, as an author, of the journalist himself; who had evidently penned it, for no other eyes than those of his kindred."

But this delicacy was afterwards persuaded to the desired point, by the judgment of a person whom he held in the highest respect; and by the very arguments which my friend had used as objections; namely, the unpre-

tending simplicity of the relation, the family events described in it, as well as those of an extraordinary or more general nature; also its sound and truly British principles, religious and moral. The style is certainly homely, but not that of an ignorant man; the Diary being kept in the common diction of genteel persons in those times, respectably educated, but without aim at the elegance of a man of letters. The manner of the Narrative may sometimes be found a little too particular; yet it is what might be expected in a careful, and therefore minute, record of daily occurrences. That it was begun with no other view than to keep such a table of reference for the writer's own future use, appears from certain internal evidence in the early part of the journal itself; and that it was afterwards completed for a dearer object, a note, which was annexed to it, most affectingly shows.

I shall here mention, that, besides the regular Diary-books in the possession of my friend, there are many lose papers in the same case with them; by which it appears that Sir Edward Seaward was born in the year 1710 or 1711, and departed this life in the year 1774, at his seat in Gloucestershire. His wife, so affectionately referred to by him throughout, was removed from earth to heaven, not long after their last visit to London, in the spring of 1749. And there is a note or memorandum concerning the mournful event, as I mentioned before, appended to the first book of the Diary, of which the following is a copy;

" I feel her loss so deeply, that nothing less than the power of God could support me under my bereavement. But I live in the certain hope of meeting her again, and for ever, in the mansions of the blessed. And I thank her Heavenly Father and mine, that he has put it into my mind to set in order the narrative of my life, to amuse

me the while. For, in so doing, I seem to live my days over again with her, who was every thing to me on earth. And in this, I not only find consolation, but sometimes feel a bright sunshine, like one of her own smiles, warm the sepulchral chamber of my heart. Should my nephews and nieces read it, when I am again with her, they will the better know her worth, whose tender regard fostered their infancy, in those dear islands, where with her I found an earthly Paradise, and lived in a sacred happiness without alloy.

" 10th Feb. 1756-7."

At the earnest desire of my friend, the possessor of this interesting manuscript, I cheerfully undertook the task of being its editor; but my task has been light, being chiefly confined to alterations in the old style of orthography, to that of the present standard; and a little similar change, where the antiquated grammatical, or rather anti-grammatical, construction, presented any awkwardness. I have also divided the Narrative into chapters, for the convenience of resting pauses for the reader; and, to facilitate reference, have given a table of contents annexed to each volume.

In the earlier part of the Diary, from the 1st of January to the middle of March, the date of the past, and what was very soon after fixed on for that of the present year, are both preserved at the head of the pages: a mode of dating, which, I believe, arose out of an ancient custom of beginning the year at the vernal equinox; and we see in the *Spectator*, that Addison, who lived a little before Sir Edward Seaward's time, used the double dates during the three early months of the year. The original Diary, and consequently this published Narrative, copied almost word for word from it, is very precise in its dates; noting

even the days of the week by name in their regular passing, not only as to private but public occurrences. It is also equally correct in the topography of places on land, and in their maritime positions on the ocean.

The islands which form so large an object of interest in the work, may be found in old charts, in the neighbourhood of the Seranillas; but until Sir Edward Seaward, on being cast ashore there, discovered them to be habitable, they had been marked down as a cluster of barren rocks only, whose dangerous reef warned ships to avoid them. The important consequences of that discovery, may be a subject of useful reflection to British statesmen, even in the present day.

It would be forestalling the interest of the reader, were any closer remarks made here on the events of the Narrative; but I cannot refrain from pointing attention to the home-policy of the upright Governor of Seaward Island, with regard to its engrafted Negro population. It appears so competent, with some modifications, to meet the united demands of the right of property in, we may hope, the *last* race of imported slaves into our possessions; and the brotherly pleadings of a general humanity, that I would venture to recommend it to the particular consideration of all sincere friends to the poor sons of Africa; whether those friends be in England, or the Western World.

Besides this predominant feature, there are some other circumstances in the Narrative, so full of a peculiar interest, by leading us behind the curtain, both in the court and cabinet of George II.; and likewise in the famous fields of battle, whether under tent or sail canvass, on the Spanish Main, nearly a hundred years ago; that I can hardly forbear from expatiating on their admirable painting, both with regard to the events themselves, and

the living personages to whom they introduce us. These parts remind me of the pictures of Hogarth, and of Wilkie; bringing before us the incident, and the actors, just as they were, simple, natural, and true to the fact.

There is a circumstance connected with the integrity of the Narrative, which I do not deem necessary to mention to the reader in this preface: he will learn it in its proper place, towards the conclusion of the work; and there his own judgment will at once recognise the advantage of not having had it anticipated here.

THE EDITOR.

Esher, March, 1831.

CONTENTS TO VOL. I.

CHAPTER I.

Parentage and boyhood of Sir Edward Seaward.—He sails for Virginia.—Returns to England.—A proposal to go to the Bay of Honduras.—Revisits his home.—Eliza Goldsmith—her affection for Seaward, and the dawn of her peculiar excellency of character.—His uncle at Bristol.—The marriage at Awbury.—Seaward and his Eliza, with an attached little dog, quit their native village, 1733 ..... Page 1

CHAP. II.

They sail from Bristol.—Banks of the Avon.—Appearances of the Island of Jamaica.—Port Royal.—Kingston.—Prepares for his voyage to the Bay of Honduras.—Sunday Negro-market.—He sails from Kingston—encounters a hurricane—the brig is wrecked—he, with his wife and dog, preserved. ..... p. 19

CHAP. III.

Their emotions on making the shore.—How they proceed—apprehension of Savages — they venture from the vessel—discover a fountain of water—an alarm—preservation of the surviving live stock, etc. they had brought from Jamaica ..... p. 33

CHAP. IV.

Their first Sabbath on the island.—Seaward's subsequent occupations.—A cavern discovered in the promontory.—He sows various seeds, — Sees mullet near the rocky point. — A variety of incidents. — Penetrates into a wooded region.—Discoveries.—Begins building a house with planks from the ship.— Subsequent proceedings.— Seaward and his Eliza seem to exist like our first parents in Paradise.—Discover an eligible situation for erecting a permanent dwelling.—See a magnificent silk-cotton tree.—An interesting scene with a turtle.—Some casuistry on killing a large fish.—They explore the isthmus to its northern extremity.—Resumes his labour..... p. 48

CHAP. V.

Various arrangements on board the vessel.—Their exultation on seating themselves in their wooden palace on shore.—He occupies himself in providing for the future.—A sudden tempest—their conduct on the awful occasion.—A return of boisterous weather—their employments on board—the sky clears—they revisit the shore ..... p. 79

CHAP. VI.

The rising sun.—The beach covered with deposits from the late storms.—He takes a large crayfish—removes all their live stock from the vessel to the shore—plants yams and coccos, melon and pumpkin seeds—lays out a plantation near the silk-cotton tree.—They are sick from eating the crayfish—what medicine they took.—He brings the remainder of their fruits on shore, stows them in the plank-house—goes to work at the cotton-tree plantation daily—his reflections on shade and sunshine, connected with his places of occupation—discovers the chocolate-nut near the cavern—finds an old military belt there ..... p. 89

CHAP. VII.

An unsuccessful effort to gain the summit of the promontory.—Attempts to construct a boat.—Catches mullet.—He and his wife on the verge of a quarrel.—Young goats.—A contrivance to get at the cocoa-nuts without cutting down the trees.—Eliza tries to make a basket.—A project *sine die*.—An apologue, illustrative of the necessity of employment to the maintenance of happiness.—He contrives to form a fish-pot.—Another trial to reach the top of the promontory.—Takes a strange animal.—Some welcome domestic news.—They catch mullet by torchlight.—Sand-flies.—Armadillo tamed.—Fine shells.—Rod-fishing by Eliza and her dog.—Seaward drinks too much wine—is ill in consequence—how he is recovered—goes to work again ..... p. 111

CHAP. VIII.

They project an expedition of discovery—encounter a herd of fierce animals—a conflict—how they dispose of the slain, and treat their wounded dog.—Seaward explores a hidden cave—scruples about appropriating what is found.—They ascend the promontory to

look out for a sail.—His reflections on the present state of his mind and feelings.—Projects new undertakings—works at them daily ..... p. 169

CHAP. IX.

They descry a canoe approaching the island—how they act on the occasion—incidents attendant on their first intercourse with the strangers—a party of Negroes—their sympathy and usefulness—how the Negroes spent their first Sabbath on the island.—Their visit to a second island just opposite—they accomplish the circuit of the first island.—A turtle feast.—Harvest—the product of Seaward's labours got in.—May rains.—Cabbage plants.—The Negroes make some progress in Christian knowledge.—Seaward begins to build a good house at the silk-cotton tree plantation..... p. 202

CHAP. X.

Description of the grounds under cultivation.—The Negroes story of themselves, and escape from shipwreck.—Many excellent reflections.—Negroes' harvest got in.—A storm on the first of September (1734).—Eliza's birth-day celebrated.—Seaward remarks, it was then he began to write his Diary.—The new mansion finished—their first night there, they call it Plantation House.—Eliza resumes her English attire—the Negroes properly clothed.—Seaward arranges his fire-arms—account of his library.—A place stoccadoed off for the live stock.—Christmas-day.—The Negroes circumnavigate the second or western island.—Hurricane.—Guns heard in the offing.—Seaward puts up a flag-staff on the promontory, hoists the English colours, and takes possession of the islands in the name of the King of England—calls them Seaward Islands p. 240

CHAP. XI.

An important event occurs.—They frighten a Spanish *guarda costa*.—A Virginian schooner comes in—the captain's story.—They reconnoitre the Spaniard—fear an attack.—A night rencontre with an armed boat from the *guarda costa*.—Two Bermudian blacks taken.—Seaward secures his treasure—talks with the Virginian captain concerning a passage to Jamaica.—A slight survey of the island's channel.—The schooner repaired.—Seaward bargains with him to take him and his wife to Jamaica ..... p. 262

CHAP. XII.

Preparations for departure.—Seaward would not allow the vessel to sail on the Sabbath-day.—Certificates of freedom given to the persons left behind.—A marriage solemnized—some clerical scruples.—Embarks his treasure.—He and his wife part kindly from the people.—He notes the landmarks while sailing out of the harbour.—Latitude observed at noon.—The schooner off the northern point of the islands next day.—Observations with respect to the reefs and appearances of the land—puts the schooner's head to the north for Jamaica, and takes a temporary leave of the islands..... p. 287

CHAP. XIII.

Seaward and his wife arrive at Kingston, Jamaica.—Lands his treasure.—Takes leave of the Virginian captain.—Lodges at a *brown lady's*—A new-fashioned dress, necessary for going into society.—He orders masts and sails, to refit the wrecked brig at the islands.—Measures, to send a large portion of his wealth to England.—Visits Port Royal.—The Solebay frigate.—Engages a crew for the brig.—A wife for one of his faithful blacks.—A fine lugger-boat, and a schooner purchased.—A cargo for Seaward Islands.—Commission as their Captain-commandant.—A slave mart.—Francis Drake takes the command of the schooner, called the Porghee.—Seaward and his wife discourse on their great possessions.—Final arrangements for returning to the islands ..... p. 298

CHAP. XIV.

Difficulty of approach to the islands.—Reception on their arrival.—A cannon mounted on the promontory.—The wreck refitted, sails for Honduras.—Subsequent occurrences.—How the people are employed during the May rains.—Fair weather.—A plantation commenced on the western island.—Drake makes a survey and chart of both.—Pleasant excursion to the new plantation.—Description of the Plantation-bay.—Drake's scheme for taking turtle to the Kingston market.—Sheep-pasture bay.—Suggestion of Mrs. Seaward, to draw some of their English relatives to the settlement.—She names the two islands; calling that on which they first landed, St. George's Island; and the other Edward's Island.—The Porghee ready for sea.—Drake's commission, with the earnings of the people ..... p. 342

CHAP. XV.

The Porghee sails for Jamaica.—Active proceedings at the settlement.—Lots given on Edward's Island.—Drake returns.—Brings letters, and new Negroes.—Seaward suspected to be a pirate.—Buildings commenced at the Peccaries' Field.—Last encounter with the old inhabitants.—Seaward and Eliza visit the Cocoa-nut Grove.—Her appeal to his feelings on a subject of humanity..... p. 377

CHAP. XVI.

An English brig seen off the southern channel.—Meeting with Seaward's brother, and Eliza's sister, who come out married.—Stores sent to Seaward by his uncle at Bristol—his surmises as to the source of his nephew's riches.—The English brig departs for Honduras.—Seaward takes his brother over parts of the settlement.—A Spanish schooner arrives.—Seaward puts on a show of importance.—Drake sails to Jamaica for artisans, etc.—Peccary Field House finished.—First child born in the islands.—Anxiety for the safety of Drake and his schooner ..... p. 395

CHAP. XVII.

The Porghee with a multitude of people on board.—Embarrassment to lodge them.—Woodcutters employed in clearing lands.—A retreat for the wild pigeons.—Marriages and baptism.—Military training.—Practical ideas on slavery.—A Spanish merchantman.—Seaward gives up trading to his brother, Mr. James Seaward, and makes him a present of Peccary Field House.—A Spanish schooner and another vessel arrive.—Parade on the occasion.—Interview with the Spanish commander.—An aqueduct, and several improvements, planned.—Seaward determines to visit England.—Arrangements with this object.—Embarks for Jamaica, with his wife and little dog ..... p. 422

SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE.

CHAPTER I.

Born of loyal and honest parents, whose means were just sufficient to give a common education to their children, I have neither to boast of pedigree nor of learning; yet they bequeathed to me a better inheritance—a stout constitution, a peaceable disposition, and a proper sense of what is due to my superiors and equals: for such an inheritance I am grateful to God, and to them.

I had not left school long when I felt an inclination to see foreign parts, and under this impression I desired earnestly to go to sea; but my poor dear mother would not hear of it, and I could not find it in my heart to grieve her, even for a moment; so I yielded up my inclination to my duty, and during two years was content to assist my father in the management of his little farm; taking the diversions of fishing and shooting, in their seasons, by way of amusement and recreation. At the expiration of this time, my paternal uncle sent for me to Bristol, and placed me in his counting-house. Within a year from this event, I lost my dear mother; on which occasion I returned to my paternal roof, to console my remaining parent, with whom I remained a few months. During my stay on this melancholy occa-

sion, I took some little part in the farm business; but having many unoccupied hours, I passed most of them with our benevolent pastor, my former kind schoolmaster, the Rev. Mr. William Goldsmith; between whose amiable family and my father's there had existed the kindest feeling from our infancy; and these additional happy hours improved it on my part and on theirs.

One morning, as my father and I were talking over my future prospects in life, I received a letter from my uncle, in which he stated that he wanted me to go to Virginia in one of his vessels, as supercargo. I was delighted with the proposal; to which my dear father made no objection, as he might hope soon to see me again. In a few days I took leave of our friends at the parsonage, and of my own family. At parting, my father gave me his blessing and my mother's Bible; and with these much valued gifts, I left the village of my education and nativity.

My uncle received me kindly, and took much pains to instruct me in the business which he had appointed me to manage. I was delighted with every thing connected with my preparation for the voyage, and I sailed on the 5th of April, 1733, in the Mary brig, for America, with an assortment of goods.

We arrived in the Chesapeak Bay on the 2d of June, which was considered a good passage, and on the following day proceeded up the river to Baltimore. On my arrival, our correspondent was civil to me, but that was all. He did not like a supercargo being sent in the vessel, and therefore threw many obstacles in the way of my disposing of the cargo, and of purchasing tobaccoes to advantage; but owing to the friendship of a Scotch merchant, of whom our correspondent in consequence became jealous, I experienced in a short time that con-

duct from him which he should have observed to me at first. I did not, however, resent his former behaviour, but received the assistance he was disposed to render me, in perfect good humour, and thanked him for each instance of his attention and kind offices. My cargo was at length completed to my satisfaction, and our correspondent gave me reason to think I had gained his esteem before we parted. He made me a present of a Virginia nightingale; a beautiful red bird, about the size of a thrush, with a feathery crest. "This," said I to myself, "is for my aunt." I should have liked to have procured another for Eliza Goldsmith; but as I could not bring one for each of her sisters and my own also, I prudently gave up the wish. But I got some capital tobacco seed, which, with a few heads of Indian corn, and a few pumpkin seeds, I put up; intended for my poor dear father to try them on his farm, as I thought those plants might perhaps thrive well in England.

On the 8th of August I took leave of my friends at Baltimore: and after a stormy passage, but with a fair wind generally, we arrived at the port of Bristol on the 15th of September; to the great surprise and delight of my uncle, who did not expect the brig at least for a month to come. I was much elated by the novelty and success of my voyage, and hastened to the town as soon as we dropped anchor in Kingroad. Quick as my movements were, he had received notice of my coming, so that he met me at the door of his house. A crape on his hat arrested my attention. I cast my subdued eye, heart-struck, on it, then, looking at him earnestly, said, "Have I lost my father?" Without answering, he turned and went into the house, and I followed him. "God's will be done, Ned!" said he to me; "how many hogsheads of tobacco have you brought home?"—

"My dear uncle," I replied, "my heart is too full to speak on business at present; let me retire for a few minutes, or to go and see my aunt, and after that I will give you every information you desire." Saying this, I left him in the passage, and went into the parlour, where I found my aunt; who always had been kind to me, but now she was doubly so; she wiped the tear from my eye, and endeavoured to stay my grief by every comforting expression that goodness could suggest: but nature would pay the tribute of sorrowing, in spite of every attempt to prevent it. My aunt, perhaps, now tired of saying the same thing over and over again, left me alone. In a short time I began to feel myself composed, and my aunt returning, told me the particulars of my dear old father's illness and death; which had taken place a month before. Tea was brought in, and my uncle followed it. He took me by the hand, saying, "Poor Ned! thou hast a tender heart; poor boy!—but thy father was a good father, Ned, and it is honest and creditable to thee to show decent sorrow for the loss of such a parent: but he has n't left thee anything, Ned; what little he had, he has bequeathed to thy brother and sisters; they are young, thou knowest: he thought thee might get thy own bread——."—"And he thought right, I hope, dear uncle," I replied; "he did righteously; and I revere his memory the more for taking care of the most helpless."—"But how many hogsheads of tobacco didst thou bring home, Ned?"—"Three hundred, sir; but if you will allow me till after tea, I will then go with you into the counting-house, and give you every information you require respecting the cargo and the voyage."—"Wouldst like to go again, Ned?"—"Yes, sir, certainly, if it be your wish: after I have made a short visit to my brother and sisters, I should be

very glad to make a second voyage."—"I don't think thee'll go to Virginia again, Ned; here is a letter for thee from my son Tom, at the Bay of Honduras, and I think thee will find a proposal there more to thy mind." I thought it right to do as he wished, and instantly read the letter, which, although from a near kinsman, was quite a letter of business; proposing that I should join him at Honduras, and that he would give me a share of the profits, if I would reside there, and allow him to return to England: he would take the part in England his father had been doing, and I should step into his shoes there, as his father wished to retire. I required time to consider of it; and soon after going with my uncle to the counting-house, entered into a detail on the subject of my recent voyage. Throughout he was well satisfied, and frequently said, I was "no fool:" which expression, from him, meant no ordinary compliment.

On the next day he asked me if I had made up my mind on the proposal of going to Honduras. I said, I had been turning the subject over in my mind, and found that I could say nothing about it. "What dost mean by that?" exclaimed my uncle, testily. "I mean, sir," said I, "that as I neither have money, nor anything else, but what I derive from you, that it does not become me to say anything about it, further than I am ready to do whatever you may think me qualified to undertake, and that may be for my welfare."—"That'll do, Ned," said my uncle; "I'll guide thee right, my boy: and Tom is no churl, he will not grudge thee a good outfit, and thy fair earnings. But if he were, am I not thy uncle, and his father? and the staff is in my own hand; I will make no difference between him and thee; thou art a good boy, Ned, and I loved thy father; and thou hast shown thy willingness to lean on me, and

be guided by me, and I will not disappoint thee in thy desire: go into the country, and visit thy brother and sisters; and when thou returnest, the brig shall be ready to sail with an investment for Jamaica and the Bay."

The Virginia nightingale had been brought on shore while I was closeted with my uncle. I had not said any thing about it to my aunt, for fear of some accident happening to it; but I came into the parlour as she was admiring it. "La! what a pretty bird, dear Edward: who have you brought that pretty bird for?" cried she. "For you, aunt, to be sure; for whom else could I bring it?"—"Well, I thought so, dear Edward, but I was not quite sure: for young people do behave themselves so ungraciously now-a-days to their elder relatives, that I did almost wrong thee, my dear boy."—"Nay, aunt; you have always been kind to me, and I am indeed happy in this opportunity of showing you that I remembered my aunt, when a wide sea divided me from her."—"So you have, Edward; and you know I love you as a son. Will the bird talk, Edward — what do you call it, Edward?"—"It is a Virginia nightingale, dear aunt."—"Oh! then, it is a singing bird?"—"Yes, aunt, it sings a little; but not so sweetly as our nightingale: it has received a larger share of beauty from the hand of its Maker, than the nightingale of England, but our nightingale far exceeds it in melody."—"That is as it should be, Edward—one handsome, another clever: to one riches are given; to another health; and so forth. God is wise and just, dear Edward; but you have been taught to know all such things from your good mother, and Parson Goldsmith."—"I hope so, aunt," I replied; "but have you any commands to Awbury (for so was then called the obscure village of my birth); I am going there as soon as I have settled accounts with my uncle

as to what I have been doing in America."—"I will trouble you," said she, "with a little parcel for the girls, and my love; and if canst borrow a pillion, I should have no objection to go behind thee, and see what they are all about."—This last part of my aunt's speech rather embarrassed me. Much as I loved my aunt, I confess I felt no desire to ride a pillion horse on this occasion. But she was only jesting; so that I had no reason to fear either vexation or detention from this source.

In a few days I finished with my uncle, and then made arrangements for paying the intended visit to my friends. I set out on horseback, with feelings of a very sober kind; and being alone, had much time for meditation as I rode on slowly. I looked back on the happy days of my boyhood; played with my fellows, in memory, on the green before the school-house; and called to mind some of the old people, and, among others, my honoured father, sitting beneath the venerable elm there, in its full maturity of three hundred years. I believed then that the world could not boast such a man, nor such a tree. I thought also, with pleasure, on my revered pastor and schoolmaster, who was meek and kind-hearted to all, and who managed to make his boys scholars, without using either the birch or the ferula. He was, indeed, more anxious to teach us our duty than our Latin; but he contrived to teach us both. The kindness of his nature seemed to kindle a kindred feeling throughout the school, so that we felt disposed to help each other, and did so; and lost nothing, but gained much, in the brotherly task: he loved my father; and his family and ours were like one. The nearer I approached the village, the more impatient I became to arrive; I thought on my sisters, and their friends his daughters, every moment with increasing emotion; I gave Dobbin the spur, and

gradually quickening my pace, came up to our gate at a brisk canter. My sisters received me most affectionately, and quickly sent for my brother, who happened to be out. He came, and the meeting was affecting; we saw ourselves all together, but our parents were no more with their children; we looked on the place where they were wont to sit, and wept.

By degrees my brother entered on family affairs; and I soon mentioned to him my uncle's intention of settling me at Honduras as a merchant, and I expressed a hope that fortune would favour me so that I might be able to provide for my sisters. This kind sentiment towards them was as kindly received by them; but the youngest said, she would not wait the event of fortune-making, but would go with me. "I will send for you, dear Maria," said I, "when I am fairly settled, if you then should like to come."—"I will go with you, Edward," she replied, "unless you can prevail on Eliza Goldsmith to be your guardian angel." Though she said this playfully, and perhaps a little apprehensively, I felt as if electrified by the unexpected appeal: certainly I had always been sensible to a sentiment of a peculiar character for Eliza Goldsmith; I felt that it was not exactly like that which I bore to my sister Maria, though it seemed to connect their images in my thoughts. I had seen several beautiful and amiable women abroad, but they could not bear comparison with Eliza Goldsmith; Eliza's sweet smile was, in truth, always playing around me, and doubtless it was the memory of what that sweet smile so faithfully expressed, which had unconsciously fixed my affection. Thus, I had been calm, almost happy, during my absence from Eliza; for nothing had occurred to make me discover what lay hidden in my heart; but now the tumult of my feelings awakened my

suspicions, and my agitated answer confirmed Maria's: "Eliza Goldsmith," I said, "leave her happy home for me! leave father, sisters, for me!" and I believe I said the last words in a way that would have shown a child my adoring affection; then I added, in an altered tone, "Eliza Goldsmith would never think of Edward Seaward, as you seem to wish, Maria."

I sighed deeply; Maria smiled: but she soon grew serious, and said, "you know, Edward, that Eliza is sincerity itself; indeed, she has not a feeling that she need be ashamed to own. From the hour that she became sensible to your decided preference for her,— your love, I will say,—she never tried to hide her great affection for you."

"Become sensible to my preference!—to my love!—Maria,—I never thought,—never dared,—surely I never could have said any thing——."

"Never purposely, I dare say, Edward," replied Maria; "nor anything that would be directly understood by other people; but Eliza could not remain blind to what we all saw. It was plain to every one of us, that when Eliza was present, you never missed any other creature; that you were even more proud of her approbation, than of dear Mr. Goldsmith's; that you were always imagining how you could give her pleasure. When she was sick, don't you remember how you watched everybody's looks in the house; and how kind and affectionate you were to her after her illness? It was not long after her recovery, just when you went to Virginia, that she told me she would die single, unless Heaven should bless her by making her your wife."

"Maria! my dearest Maria!" I said, and embraced her, not being able to complete what I wished to say.—While I kept silent, for I was wholly overcome with the

suddenness and sweetness of this surprise, my sister went on telling me several things, which were doubly grateful to my feelings, as giving me fresh proofs of Eliza's attachment, and of her superiority over all other women in that frankness which is only to be found in generous and noble characters.

At last I recovered my ordinary powers, and thanking my sister for the kindness of showing me where I might find a treasure beyond valuation, I said, "If it be really so, Maria, Edward Seaward is the happiest of happy men; but to ask Eliza Goldsmith to go with me to such a climate! to marry Eliza, and bury her amongst people that would not comprehend her; no! I cannot be so selfish. Did I not refuse to take you with me, my dear sister, because I love you? and ought I not to let the same motive prevail against my wish for such a dear companion as Eliza? I must not think of it; I will act as becomes the pupil of her excellent father."

"Well, well, this is all very fine," said my elder sister; "but I think, before you make rash resolutions, you had better come with us to the parsonage, and see how you feel about it in Eliza's company."

This remark set us all on foot; and it being now nearly sunset, we went forth to visit the dearest friends of our earliest years. How happy was my old master to see me, how rejoiced the girls! Eliza only was silent; but as I took her hand, there was something in its tremor, and in her shaded eyes, that showed there was an anxious feeling at her heart, which prevented her from entirely sharing her sisters' joy, or from welcoming me with the cheerful kindness they did. They talked, she was silent; I was surprised, disappointed, bewildered; it was not the reception I had foolishly expected! yet I endeavoured to keep my spirits elate; but soon

found I could not continue conversation; first I became silent, then serious, then depressed. I now found that although I had not been six hours in the village, the Goldsmiths already knew of my intended residence in America, and the subject was accordingly brought forward by them, and variously commented on. Each member of the family had a hope, a fear, or a solicitude to express. One sought to encourage me, another to dissuade me from accepting my uncle's offer. Eliza remained silent; I wished to know her opinion, but I had not the courage to say so. I suppose my looks asked for it; for at length she said—

"Edward, the providence of God is with you, whether in England or in the solitary desert; be not dissuaded from doing that which in your own mind you may think right."

There was a noble firmness in her voice as she said this, although her eyes had tears in them. On meeting those sweet eyes, I got up from the place where I was sitting, between my dear sister and Miss Goldsmith, and seating myself beside Eliza, took her hand, and, turning towards her, would have spoken, but could not; her hand trembled a little, yet she looked on me with a sweet and settled composure, which gradually shed a calm over my agitated feelings.

I cannot now repeat what we said to each other about my removal to a distant land, having no distinct remembrance of it, we were both so deeply moved; all I am sure of is, that I did not speak of love. Our hearts, indeed, were already united; and I think Eliza felt, as I did, that, after this evening, they never could be separated.

The tea called us round the table, over which we conversed on past times with great delight.

"Do you remember," said Eliza, "when you taught

me through this window, how to know the moon to be in its increase or in its wane?"

"I do remember it, dear Eliza," I replied; "it was the young moon, a simple curved line, showing itself nearly where the sun had set; and I remember—yes, I well remember, the words you then said to me, as we looked upon it; but I may not repeat them."—"O repeat them! repeat them!" every one exclaimed; "surely you cannot be ashamed of anything Eliza said."—I looked at her,—the bright colour heightened on her cheeks, but she was not confused. "I will repeat them myself, Edward," said she, "as they must be told: I said, 'You are my sun, dear Edward, and I thy faithful moon, watching thee in the west.'"—"That was precisely it, my dear Eliza," I rejoined; "and may it be prophetic!" In these few ardent words, I had avowed my attachment, and finished the cruel struggle between my desire of having her the consoling partner of my exile, and my unwillingness to take her from a peaceful home. She was silent for a moment or two; but her eyes spoke the while most eloquently; she turned them alternately from her father to me, and resting them at last on me, said in a very low yet still firm voice, "I have long believed in your love for me, Edward Seaward; now you assure me of it: to-morrow you leave Awbury; I cannot conceal what I feel at the possibility of another separation.—My father! my sisters!—you know his worth, you will not think hardly of your poor Eliza's delicacy, if now, before you all, I confess my deep affection. Edward, dear Edward, I should pine and die, where you to go alone to the dreadful country you are destined for: may it now be our fate to live or die together." Before she finished, I drew near her, and snatching her hand, pressed it to my lips: a hallowed

tear, seen only by the eye of Him who looks into the heart, dropt on the hand: it was the seal of Edward's faith —it was not unperceived. I kissed that dear hand again and again, with difficulty articulating a few words of devoted affection, and sat down by her, with a delightful consciousness that she was mine.

The feelings of all present where highly excited; tears flowed apace, or stood in the eye of each, and my dear sister Maria kissed us both, weeping tears of joy. Mr. Goldsmith sat the while without speaking, but with a serious gravity which somewhat awed me; yet his habitual kindness prevented his presence, or even his demeanour, being a check upon the honest sentiments of our united families on such an occasion; and he knew the character of his youngest daughter too well, to impute her conduct to anything but innate dignity and innocence. It was now his own turn to add a word:—"My children," said he, "we will sleep on this, and talk it over to-morrow." — I passed the rest of the evening in conversing with Eliza. I told her, that she only had possession of my heart from my earliest years; but that I did confess, I had not been conscious of the extent and power of my affection until this very day, for that I had not dared to think of it as a motive to action. I could not venture to propose to myself taking her from safety into danger, and perhaps from happiness to misery; but the honest avowal of her sentiments, now at once decided me; and on my return to my uncle I would tell him frankly, that without her I would not go to Honduras. This was well; it was something like herself — frank, undissembling, and explicit: and flowing from the same pure source of an unfeigned attachment. With these, and such like conversations, we passed the time, until our departure for the farm: and our returning walk was even

more happy than when going thence, under the exhilarating influence of high anticipation.

On the morrow we again visited our friends at the parsonage, and spent the day with them, — a long and happy day, embracing the past, the present, and the future. I cannot trust myself to venture recounting the circumstances of our delightful intercourse; and a few days more, like to the last in sweetness but not intensity, completed my present visit to my native village. I had arranged every thing with my revered tutor and pastor, and he promised to confide to me his beloved daughter.

I left them early in the morning of the 26th of September, with a promise quickly to return. My horse went lazily home, and I felt no disposition to hurry him; my thoughts took an opposite direction to that which occupied them when on my way to revisit those from whom I was now receding. I had my hopes and fears as to the future. The past was for the time blotted from my memory, if I except the happy days so lately passed at Awbury; but those days seemed to constitute my present existence.

I arrived late in the evening at my uncle's, and was glad that he had gone to the club; so, after taking tea quietly with my aunt, I retired to rest. In the morning we met at breakfast: the old gentleman was happy to see me, talked over the business at Honduras, told me the brig was getting ready; that we were to touch at Jamaica, land some of the cargo there, and take in lumber, with some other articles, for the Bay; and that his correspondent at Kingston would put me in the way to obtain a few useful things for my better accommodation at St. George's Key; where his son had resided for nearly a year, in little better than a negro hut; and so forth. I heard him with a courteous attention, and then thought

it right for the purpose now nearest my heart, to say, "Dear uncle, may I ask you one or two questions?"—"Certainly, Ned! certainly! a hundred, if you like, so they be short ones."—"Then, first, uncle, how long do you suppose I may have to stay there?"—"Till you make so much money, Ned, that you cannot spend it without coming to England: keep that in mind, boy: so make haste in your calling."—"Well but, sir, that may not be accomplished as long as I live."—"O yes, Ned, I don't think thee hast a great stomach for wealth."—"But, sir, you wished my questions to be short; will you make the answers so? May I be five, or six, or seven, or ten years at St. George's Key?"—"Yes, perhaps you may; not less than five or six years, certainly."—"Then, my dear uncle, I should not like to live there a bachelor, and perhaps get into immoral connexions, that would degrade me in my own eyes, and in the opinion of those I love." —The old gentleman laughed immoderately, stood up, held his sides, and laughed and coughed, exclaiming, at intervals, "Ned, you will be the death of me!" I knew not what to think of this; but my aunt made him sit down, saying, "Mr. Seaward, our nephew is right; I like his sentiments." — "He is an ass, and you are a fool!" he replied, looking morosely at her; "I don't want any of your prudery and nonsense; I will talk to him." The old lady walked out, and left us together. My heart sunk within me. In imagination I had already beheld my dear Eliza living with me in ease and affluence, enjoying the bright sunshine of my prosperity, under the patronage of my uncle. A cloud now hung over me, which I expected to burst with a thunder-storm, the minute my aunt quitted the room. But my uncle was a wag in his way: he began to laugh immoderately again; then recovering himself, said, "It's better to marry than

burn; eh, Ned?" and continued his laughing fit. He was then able to resume: "That's it, Ned, eh? but where is the wife, to be had at so short a notice? We can't give an order for her—Bale, No. 1, marked E. S., Ned, eh?" He then took another hearty laugh to himself, and became quiet. I was now at ease, being convinced there was no surly humour on his part, but the contrary, and thought this was my auspicious moment. I at once told him the whole affair of my engagement to Eliza Goldsmith. He heard me out, in a business-like manner; and after some pause said, "Well, Ned, it's your affair, not mine; and if you are bent on it, I'll do my part. How the speculation will turn out, thee don't know, and I can't tell thee: these sort of articles, that we take for better for worse, not being allowed to try the sample, don't always answer expectation; but thee may'st be more fortunate, than some other people; and, as there is no time to lose, get thy business done; and, if thee likes, we will put her and thee in the manifest." He finished by shaking me by the hand, kindly and warmly, saying, "Ned! married or single, I will always be as a father to thee, boy." I hope I thanked him as I ought; I am sure if I thanked him as I wished, I did thank him as I ought. He desired me to return the next day to Awbury, and finish my business.

On the morning of the next day, on wishing me a prosperous journey, he put a little parcel into my hand for my bride, which I had the happiness to deliver before night; it was a hundred-pound bank-note, a very acceptable wedding present. Time pressed hard; there was no leisure for calling in church; I must return to Bristol, to employ a proctor to procure a licence. My uncle, on seeing me, and learning the cause of my being back so soon, was rather testy about loss of time; it

being of great importance to get the brig off, as the month of October was advancing. I could not obtain the licence under ten days; but, that we might make the most of the interval, I requested my dear uncle and aunt to invite my sister, Maria and Eliza Goldsmith to Bristol, to have the opportunity of seeing their niece and my intended; and, moreover, I considered that the two young gentlewomen, in paying this visit, would be enabled to make a good use of my uncle's kind present, for Eliza's outfit. My request was instantly complied with, and the invitation joyously accepted.

My uncle was equally delighted with his niece and with her friend; but Eliza was evidently my aunt's favourite; she went with her every where, chose every thing, bought every thing; while the dear girl received with thankfulness the attentions of the old lady.

The important paper was at length obtained; and my worthy uncle, with his spouse, proposed to accompany us to Awbury. We set off, a happy party. Mr. Goldsmith received us with his usual kindness: the wedding followed; my uncle was in high spirits, which often burst forth in boisterous joy. He brought some "Bristol man's milk" with him, as he called it—old sherry wine, bought of Mr. Sheriff Glisson — and with this he made merry, and plied my good father-in-law beyond what he could well carry; but it was a wedding merry-making; and he gave a hogshead of beer to the villagers, and made it a happy day. On the morrow we took an affectionate leave of our dear friends: our feelings were deep and various; there was little said at parting, but much expressed by that natural language, which the overflowing heart never fails to manifest. My aunt and uncle first stepped into the coach that was to convey us; I then handed in my dear Eliza; she had scarcely taken her

seat, when an unexpected volunteer sprung in after her. "Who are you?" cried my uncle. "Ah, poor Fidele," said Eliza, "I had overlooked you in taking leave of my friends." She patted him kindly, and was handing him out to the servant, when the dog (a beautiful little spaniel of King Charles's breed) turned back his head, to look once more on his favourite mistress, and whined so piteously, that my uncle, who observed it, exclaimed, "No, no!" and stretching himself forward, so as to be heard by the group without, "let the little fellow go with her; he has a warm heart towards her, and a good one too. Dogs never change, though men sometimes do: no allusion to you Ned."—"Take him, Eliza," they all said, and I more emphatically than all the rest. I was affected, in witnessing the attachment of this dumb creature, to the one to whom I myself was so devotedly attached. My sister Maria and I then got into the carriage; and, with many adieus from the windows, we set forward; and, after a pleasing journey of a few hours, arrived at the door of my uncle.

Next day we went soberly and diligently to work, to prepare for our departure. However, there was yet much to do. I had frequent conferences with my uncle at the counting-house; and at length he gave me my instructions in writing, with letters to Mr. Dickinson at Kingston, and letters for my cousin at Honduras.

CHAPTER II.

We sailed from Bristol on the 30th of October, 1733, with a fine breeze from the eastward. On going down the river Avon in a boat, to join the brig at Kingroad, Eliza was charmed by the scenery on each side of the banks. St. Vincent's rocks presented a sublime object on the right side; and those on the left, covered with wood from the water's edge to their summits, rivalled, by their beauty, the sublimity of the perpendicular precipices opposite. "I shall never forget this scene," she observed, "it is so impressive." She did not then know that a time was not far distant, when her abode would be under such a rock; equally precipitous, but more gigantic.

The wind was fair; we sailed down the Bristol Channel, with fine weather and smooth water. It blew fresh from the north-west, after passing Lundy Island; and for ten days we proceeded jocundly; but a long continuance of contrary wind, with rain soon after, as emblematic of human life, altered our condition and our feelings. Eliza was very sick, and the captain was in bad humour; so that we were far from comfortable: but the wind changed again, and with it returned our lively sense of present happiness, if I may so express it. Such are the events that modify earthly enjoyment. In three weeks we got into the trade winds: here, with studding sails, low and aloft, the vessel glided along smoothly and delightfully. In little more than five weeks, we passed through the Mona passage, between Porto Rico and Hispaniola; and on the day six weeks of quitting the Bristol Channel, we made the east end of Jamaica. The high blue mountains, presented a most magnificent spectacle; and when we

approached near enough to discern the trees and plantations, we were charmed by the superb face of the whole country. The sky was brilliant and cloudless, the breeze fair and refreshing: our spirits were proportionally buoyant; and as the vessel ran along shore for Port Royal, all the next day our delight was kept alive by the newness and vastness of the scenery which lay upon our right. The grand expanse of ocean was no novelty now to us, or we might have turned our back upon the shore to gaze upon it, as a suitable accompaniment to the sublime and beautiful landscape which so totally absorbed us.

A negro pilot came on board, as we neared Port Royal. Eliza was a good deal struck by his appearance, and his manner, and way of speaking; which, being nothing new to me, I hardly noticed: I had seen such in Virginia, but to her there was much to interest; he was to her mind's eye, at that moment, the representative of the whole negro population; which drew from her some observations, alike creditable to her head and her heart. We soon hauled round Port Royal point; the sandy foundation of a small town of little importance. But many years ago, on the space we now sailed over, its ancestor had stood, a place of wealth and elegance; which, they say, like Sodom and Gomorrah, having become the seat of all licentiousness, was swallowed up by an earthquake in 1692.

We had nothing to do at Port Royal, therefore did not drop anchor, but worked up to Kingston against the sea-breeze; and came to, off the town, just as the breeze was dying away. Mr. Dickinson, my uncle's friend, was absent in the country at his penn; we therefore determined to remain on board all night, and did so. About nine o'clock next morning, we received a visit from him,

and much courtesy; he insisting that we should take up our residence at his penn during our stay in the island; which we gladly accepted, and accordingly accompanied him on shore; and after I had delivered my letters to him, and made some arrangements with respect to the cargo, he drove myself and wife out into the country; where we were agreeably entertained by the hospitality of our friend, and the novelty of all we saw.

I returned with him in the morning to Kingston, to business, leaving my dear wife at the penn; and this was our daily practice, going back again a little before supper time. The part of the cargo for the Jamaica market, was landed. American lumber, as planks, shingles, etc. together with American flour in barrels, some maize or Indian corn, together with island produce, as coffee, sugar, rum, etc. recompleted the cargo for Honduras. Mr. Dickinson gave me an appalling account of the place we were bound to; he said, St. George's Key, where my cousin resided, was nothing better than a large sand-bank; and that the town of Belize, on the main land, consisted of a few wretched houses on the south side of the river of that name; and that the whole country, for nearly a hundred miles in every direction, was little better than a swamp covered with mangroves; that there was neither beef nor mutton to be had; that the inhabitants passed most of their time up the country, cutting logwood and mahogany; that they lived on Irish salted provisions, American flour, and maize; and looked to their fish, and turtle, as their only resource for fresh provisions. This was a sad prospect. "No wonder," said I, "that my cousin Tom desires to return to England." I must confess, the account from Mr. Dickinson disheartened me not a little, and I thought it right not to conceal what I had heard from Eliza.

"Well," said she, "but we shall be together Edward; happiness is not meat nor drink, but peace and contentment; and under privations, we may be induced to seek that happiness where alone it can be found." My heart owned the support it had received; I was again at ease, and attended to the completion of our cargo with cheerfulness.

All being ready on Saturday the 22d of December, the captain determined to sail the next day, viz., Sunday the 23d; on which holy day, for some fanciful reason or superstition, sailors like to put to sea. By Mr. Dickinson's advice, I was to buy two or three goats; and as many fowls and ducks, and Guinea-fowl, as the coops would hold, for stock on our arrival at St. George's Key; the probability being that I should find "a plentiful scarcity," as he expressed it, of such things at my cousin's residence; who, he said, lived like a Bay-man, on salt provisions and turtle. I was therefore to go into the negro market on Sunday morning, the market-day of Jamaica. I told Eliza of my object, and she desired to accompany me; yet not without passing a just but severe censure on such an unchristian usage in a Christian colony. The market was held in a large street, and we saw it full of negroes, male and female, with all sorts of fruits and vegetables and poultry; it was a grotesque scene, and, although I had been on this side of the Atlantic before, was perfectly novel to me. We bought two goats with kid, a dozen fowls, as many Muscovy-ducks, and half-a-dozen Guinea-fowl, a great quantity of yams and plantains, and coccos (a sort of potatoe), some shaddocks, and oranges, and limes, and a few pumpkins and water-melons, half-a-dozen fine pine-apples, and as many musk-melons, some capsicums and bird-peppers, and two large sugar-canes.

Mr. Dickinson's negroes took our stock on board,

which, when the captain saw, he exclaimed, "What are we to do with all this? we shall be only five or six days on the passage."—"It is stock, captain, for St. George's Key," I replied, "where I shall be happy to see you take some of it when we arrive."—O! very well," cried he; "you may keep poultry there, if you carry a good stock of maize for them; but nothing will grow there, that you have brought on board, except the pumpkins and water-melons; unless you could take some good soil with you; and I don't think that would pay freight."

The brig was under weigh at eleven o'clock, and we ran down to Port Royal, a distance of eight or nine miles, in little more than an hour. With the same fine breeze, we stood out to sea, and shaped our course to the southward, to keep clear of the Pedro shoals; which, by the way, was not our proper route: we should have kept between those shoals and the island of Jamaica; but it was the captain's obstinacy, or fate, not to do so. In the evening we were becalmed, Portland Point being just discoverable from deck; and during the night we made little or no way through the water. About three o'clock in the morning (Monday 24th), the wind off the land reached us, which carried the brig a few leagues farther to the southward. Early in the forenoon the trade-wind set in, very fresh, from the E. N. E., when the captain, considering himself clear of the Pedro shoals, edged away a little to the westward; and finding, by observation at noon, that he was well to the southward, the brig was kept away west, the trade-wind continuing to blow steadily from the eastward, but sometimes freshening almost into a gale. We found by our reckoning on Tuesday at noon, that we must have run nearly two hundred miles during the last twenty-four hours.

The gale began now to slacken, and the wind veered

to the N. E. and N. N. E. in squalls, looking sometimes very black to windward, so that from time to time we were under the necessity of taking in sail. But the sea had got up, and the motion of the vessel had become very uneasy; therefore it was necessary to lash and secure the hen-coops on deck, and every thing in the cabin and state rooms, as safely as possible. Towards evening the weather became still more unsettled; sometimes perfectly calm, yet the sea much agitated; sometimes blowing a fine steady breeze from the eastward, which induced the captain again to set the topgallant sails; then suddenly chopping round with a heavy squall from the N. W., obliged us to clew up all sail. I requested the captain, as night was coming on, to hand the mainsail and topgallant sails, and close-reef the topsails, and, being made snug, to lay to under easy sail till daylight; as we were now approaching the main land, where the shoals and rocks were numerous, and not accurately laid down on the chart; but he would not consent to heave the vessel to, although he made her snug: he would keep his course, to get in under the island of Rattan in the morning, if possible; and I was obliged to yield to his determination. One of the men said we should have a hurricane: "The hurricane months are over, you blackguard," replied the captain angrily. The man, however, appeared to know what he was talking about, and I, for one, believed him; but the captain laughed at him, after his choler had subsided. I then thought it quite time to insist on the dead lights being put in, to secure the cabin windows against the violence of the sea, if it should break up against them: and well it was that I had been firm to have it done; for the windows were scarcely secured by their wooden outside shutters, when it began to thunder and rain in torrents; it was one

cascade of water from the heavens. My poor dear wife had gone below into the cabin a little before the storm came on; she had been induced to descend, by the awful blackness that totally overspread the sky, which until then had been cheeringly bright in some one quarter or other; and although I did not remain five minutes after her, I was thoroughly wetted to the skin, before I could get off deck and run down the ladder. I had scarcely entered the cabin, when the wind arose suddenly, and with such violence, that the brig in an instant seemed on her beam ends. At this moment I thought I heard some one fall down the companion ladder. The hurricane had blown the sails to ribands, but the crew had succeeded in getting her before the wind. The vessel being a little steady, I went to see who or what it was that had made the unlucky tumble, and found my two goats; which, in the bustle and confusion, had probably attempted to take refuge in the companion; or some one had thrown them there purposely out of the way, as the door was immediately closed down after them, to keep the sea from rolling from the deck into the steerage passage and cabin. This circumstance, which at the time did not appear worthy of much notice, was nevertheless important; the hand of Providence having directed it.

I now endeavoured to console my wife, whose strength of mind and kindness of heart bestowed reciprocal consolations on myself. "God will preserve us, my honoured love!" said she; "I feel that we are safe, notwithstanding this dreadful hurricane: but," added she, pressing my hand, and moving it to her lips, "if we should be drowned, we shall die together, and we shall not be separated: we shall meet, where we can part no more." Her feelings now overpowered her, and she fell on my neck and wept. I kissed away the tears from her eyes, saying, "We will trust in the Almighty."

I wanted to go on deck, but was not able to effect it; the companion door would not move, and the sea was dashing over the quarter deck. I, however, got the people there, to open one of the side doors a little, and I peeped out. The wind howled horribly, and the sea was all in a foam: the brig was running before the wind, sometimes on one point of the compass, sometimes on another, just as the gale happened to chop round; which it sometimes did, and then the sea broke over the brig, while she was veering to the wind. Two of the hands, and the yawl, had been washed overboard. We continued to be driven by the storm for eight or ten hours, I cannot tell in what direction; but about two or three o'clock in the morning, they called out, "Breakers, breakers! land! breakers!" I was below with my wife in the cabin. Being no seaman, I could do no good on deck; but, hearing this, I got up the ladder to the companion door. All was again fast down, and they could not open it; in fact, all hands were too much absorbed by the awfulness of their situation. In a few minutes the vessel struck, and we, who were below, were thrown violently on the cabin floor. The poor dog, our faithful Fidele, howled mournfully as he was driven to the further end of the cabin: this, at such a moment, had a powerful effect on us. "We are indeed lost!" said my wife, as she recovered a little from the fall she had just received. I did not now wait to console her by my words: I renewed my efforts to force the companion door, and get upon deck; but it was perfect darkness where we were, and I could not find anything to add to my own ineffectual strength, nor could I make any one on deck attend to me; they could not hear me for the noise made by the howling of the wind and the breaking of the sea; yet I sometimes heard them, and could discover that they

were cutting away the wreck of the mainmast, which lay over the side—making ready to get the long boat over the gunwale, to escape, if possible, from the perishing vessel. I now became frantic; I knocked with my hands, and hallooed with all my power, but to no purpose. By accident I stumbled over an empty stone bottle at the foot of the ladder, with the bottom of which I struck the companion door so violently that I succeeded in arresting the attention of the captain. He unbolted it, telling me at the same time, "We are all lost!" but that the men were trying to launch the long boat, our only chance; for, although it was likely she would swamp in the breakers, it was quite certain the brig would go to pieces in a few minutes; and if Mrs. Seaward and I chose to go, we must be up in a second, for "look there!" said he; crying out at the same time, "another shove, lads, and she's all our own!"—the long boat was launched; and I returned down the ladder, with all speed. The brig was lying on her starboard side, the sea breaking over her bow and fore-chains; but from the position of a rocky island to windward, she was pretty quiet abaft, and to leeward, so that a boat might live under her lee; and I expected the captain would wait for us there a little. The moment I rejoined my dear wife, I urged her instantly to accompany me to the deck, telling her our situation. "No!" said she, "I will not stir, and you will not stir; they must all perish; a boat cannot endure this storm. Let us trust in God, Edward," continued she, "and if we die, we die together."—"It is done," I replied; "we will not stir."—"Then tell them so," cried she hastily; "and if you can lay your hand on the bread-bag in your way, it may be useful to them, if they survive this hour." I hastened to ascend; at which moment the brig seemed to right,

and I was struck back by a column of water rushing down the companion, followed by the shutting to of its doors. The brig had swung off the point of the reef, and the sea then broke over the main chains, the vessel being upright. I now easily succeeded in getting on deck, but no boat was to be seen; yet now and then I thought I heard the voices of the miserable crew at some distance, on the brig's quarter; and sometimes I fancied I saw them, when the strong lightning's glare lighted up every thing around for an instant, leaving the immediate darkness greater. The brig soon took the ground again, on a reef within, and heeled over as before, which threw me down the ladder; the companion doors fortunately slamming to after me, as the sea instantly broke over the vessel fore and aft. My ever kind wife hastened to my assistance, but was herself thrown to the other side of the cabin. I was not hurt, so that in a little time I reached the place where she lay, and we crawled up together to windward, where we endeavoured to secure ourselves. More than hour passed away with us thus, in dismal darkness below; but we enjoyed the light of God's presence; offering up prayer to him, in short but emphatical ejaculations; and he heard us: we felt the influence of his peace, and were resigned to his will.

Our situation was awful; in all human probability, within one short hour we should be engulfed by an overwhelming sea. With arms folded round each other, we sat, endeavouring to keep our position, and so remained till the heaving motion of the vessel gradually subsided, and at length became scarcely perceptible; but she continued to lie over, nearly on her beam ends. I now again thought it right to reach the deck, and as the ladder had been lashed to its situation, it was not displaced, notwithstanding all the shocks the vessel had

sustained. On ascending the ladder, I pushed open the lee half of the companion door, when a gleam of joy rushed upon me, on perceiving that the day had dawned, and that the water to leeward was quite smooth. The brig now lying on the innermost part of the reef, I discovered high land a-head and astern, and a fine sandy beach abreast of us, little more than a mile off. I hastened below to my dear wife, into the dark cabin, exclaiming, "Come to me, my love; come on deck; it is daylight!" Without a word, she made her way to me, and ascended the ladder. On emerging from darkness into light, her feelings overcame her, and she poured forth her heart to God. After a few moments of abstraction, she crept down to the lee gunwale of the quarter-deck: "Where is the boat and our poor companions?" she exclaimed; "I do not see them!"—"Perhaps," I replied, "they are safely landed on yon beach, and will soon return to take us out of the vessel." I now looked earnestly around me: the mainmast was gone, but the stump was standing; the wreck of it had been cleared away: the foremast remained, but the fore-topmast had gone, and was hanging by its rigging forward: the booms were gone, the boats were gone, the gabbose for cooking gone, the binnacle gone: the hencoops alone remained in their places; but all the fowls and Guinea-fowls that were in the coop to leeward, were drowned: the ducks which were in the other coop survived, and also four fowls; yet these seemed more dead than alive. All was desolation on deck and aloft; but the day had dawned, and the morning smiled serenely on us, while a gentle calm spread itself over the ocean all around.

The land astern of the brig to the northward, seemed high and well wooded; but our eyes were attracted by the smooth sandy shore, where we wished and hoped to

be; and thus gazing, our attention became gradually riveted on a promontory, which terminates the sandy beach to the southward, distant about three miles. The rising sun shone directly upon it, and it was then that it arrested our particular notice, indeed admiration, notwithstanding our critical situation. When these almost happy emotions had a little subsided, we looked in every direction for the boat, but looked in vain; and then sad misgivings for the fate of the crew crossed our mind, which, even in spite of our consciousness to the late mercy, extended itself to ourselves; for although we felt an honest anxiety for the lives of our captain and his crew, yet we depended on them as a means, and, indeed, the only probable means, of our own escape from this unknown shore. In these contemplations, and suspense, we continued for some hours; during which time I fortunately thought I would try the pumps: the brake of the starboard pump had been shipped, but its bolt was twisted by some violence, so that it would not work: I could not find the other brake; and with great difficulty, after much hard exertion, I got the brake out, and shipped it with the bolt in the lee pump. I then went to work, and there was plenty to do; I kept pumping till I was quite exhausted, and the water still came up as abundantly as ever. I concluded the brig's bottom must be stove in, so that if we should beat off the reef into deep water, we must sink and go down.

About ten o'clock in the forenoon, the breeze began to set in from the sea, nearly E. N. E., and the brig worked fore and aft. I told my wife what my fears were, and that if it so happened, we must endeavour to get up the fore-rigging; as the water in-shore of us could not be very deep, and take the chance from thence of any escape that might offer. She pressed my hand, and looked like an angel in my face, but spoke not a word.

The sea-breeze freshened, and the sea beat a little on the weather side of the brig. In half an hour her stern swung off into deep water, and she hung by the bow. We now righted, that is to say, the vessel became upright in the water, and, although no seaman, I had sailed enough to know something about it; I therefore immediately went to the tiller to see if the rudder was gone, which I had every reason to expect, but it was not; and at this discovery I rejoiced greatly, exclaiming, "The rudder is safe; that's well!" My wife did not precisely understand this, but she felt security in my look, and she thanked and blessed God for his goodness. The sea-breeze blew more freshly, but we hung by the fore-foot on the edge of the reef, which no doubt was higher than astern. At length the brig broke adrift, having most likely torn off her false keel forward, and perhaps some of the coral rock which had held her. I was now all amaze; I did not know what to do. "We must be patient, Edward," said my dear wife; "we shall go quietly on the sand." The brig continued to drift in upon a point of rock, close to which we saw a little rivulet. On this rock I expected to be dashed in pieces, but the current which was setting us on that point, also directed us past it to the southward; so that the brig drifted between the reef to the eastward, and the long beach to the westward, down towards the perpendicular mountainous height, which we had so attentively fixed our eyes on early in the morning, as forming the southern extremity of the sandy extension. I was desirous to get the brig under some command: there was something dragging astern; but finding the fore-staysail yet untorn, although the sheet had been carried away, I got the weather sheet over, and was able to set the sail: the vessel's head now paid off, and she would steer; I there-

fore made up my mind to keep on as far as I could with safety, hoping to see some inlet, as the current proved there must be a passage somewhere; but if I could not discover one, to bump her on the sandy beach. She went along cleverly, for a vessel almost a wreck; that is, she was not at all water-logged, and consequently in no danger of sinking; hence on that score my great fear was removed. I soon approached the mountainous promontory, which seemed to stand up before me like a vast giant, to obstruct my further progress: I therefore determined to bump her on shore. The wind, by striking against the high land, blew directly from the east, which favoured my intention. I then put the helm up, and that, together with the fore-staysail, brought her head west, and I ran for the beach close under the promontory. How great my joy when I discovered an inlet, not twice the vessel's breadth! I pushed into it, and in a few minutes found myself at the end of a little cove, with rocks and fragments of rocks on my larboard side, and a fine sandy beach on my right, with the same a-head. Here the brig struck, and stuck fast with her bow: the shock threw myself and my wife forward with great violence; and we were both more bruised by this happy event, than by all the tossings and tumblings we had experienced during the hurricane. "Blessed be God!" cried I, getting up and shaking myself: but my dear Eliza was stunned, and it was some time before she recovered her senses. Eventful as our situation was, I thought of nothing but her: I sat down by her, and rubbed her hands between mine: she looked up and smiled; then raising her arm over my neck, and kissing my forehead, as she was often wont to do, said, "I thank God you are safe, my Edward!"

CHAPTER III.

We saw ourselves at length delivered from the perils of the ocean, and placed in a state of security: we raised our hearts to the fountain of mercy, and blessed God in thankfulness. It was, however, some time before we could collect ourselves: we looked back upon the ocean, and the reef, and the rocky islands, from whose horrors we so lately had escaped, with strong emotions still partaking of terror, although now in safety; and this feeling was somewhat increased by the immediate sight of the immense cliffs, which towered over the masthead of the brig, as if ready to fall upon us. But it was not long before our self-possession completely returned: we were in a snug place, and the sea all on this side of the reef, to far beyond us, perfectly smooth: our fears, therefore, gradually dissipated; we felt ourselves under God's protection, and were at ease.

"Poor Fidele!" suddenly exclaimed my wife, "it is only now that I remember thee! I will go down into the cabin, and see what has become of my faithful little dog." — "Yes, my Eliza," replied I, "we will go down together; and as we are in a safe place here, where the sea cannot break in upon the vessel, I will get out the dead lights, and let the cheerful day and fresh air into the cabin, by opening the windows; we shall then see what we are about." The poor dog was overjoyed by the first admission of light, and by our presence: he could not contain himself; to use a homely but expressive phrase, he seemed as if he would jump out of his skin; his caresses were incessant, and he could only be restrained by his mistress taking him on her knee. I soon succeeded in

getting all the dead lights out: we then saw the devastation that had taken place below; tables, chairs, swinging lamp, chests, trunks, and many other things huddled together, and some smashed to pieces. How the dog escaped without broken bones, I cannot divine; but we also had escaped; and a sparrow falleth not to the ground, without the permission of our heavenly Father.

We now felt, and acknowledged our exhaustion; so that I earnestly wished to get something to refresh my dear wife; but I could not find any bread, nor, indeed, anything else, at the instant. Soon, however, I laid my hand on an unbroken bottle of wine jammed up in one of the berths, and forcing in the cork, we each took a small quantity; then reclining on the after-lockers, to repose ourselves a little, we both fell asleep. I suppose I slept some hours: for when I awoke, I looked up, and saw my Eliza sitting by me, with Fidele at her side: she had been watching me in my sleep. "Dear Edward," said she, "you have taken a sweet rest: how delightfully the breeze blows in upon us, through the cabin windows! I should now be very comfortable, if we could find the boat with our companions." I arose, and set about hunting for some biscuit, and found the bag I had intended to throw into the long boat: it was hanging on a nail behind the ladder; and there at my feet, I saw our two goats huddled together behind a hammock, some one had stowed away in that place, the preceding day. I brought the bag along with me joyfully, and we began to eat of it with thankfulness; taking a little sup of the wine now and then from the bottle; which, in our exhausted state, was great refreshment and support to us. I told Eliza I had seen the goats, and that they were alive. We now went upon deck, taking Fidele with us: in passing, I handled the poor animals,

as they lay in the nook under the ladder: one of them, I was sorry to find, had its hinder leg broke: we felt pity for the poor creature, but could not at that instant attend to it; for it occurred to me, that the bow of the vessel should be immediately secured by ropes to the rocks, as another hurricane might come, and blow us out of the creek, in which the good providence of God had havened us. There was plenty of rope on deck, sheets and halliards of the wreck: with some of these I quickly got on shore, the larboard side of the brig being close to the rock, and set about making them fast round large blocks of cliff on our larboard bow; then rested content, after three or four hours' great exertion, with what I had done.

While I was thus employed, my wife had taken the dead fowls from the coops, and broken some biscuit in small pieces, with which she fed the remaining live ones. "We can eat one of the drowned fowls," observed I; "it will be a good dinner for us, and we want it."—"I am not hungry," she replied; "yet you must be so: but how can we make a fire?" Here I was at a stand. There were fire-arms in the cabin, unloaded, and consequently useless: I had pistols in a trunk, blocked up in the state-room by an accumulation of things against the door, and which, therefore, I could not get at. I then bethought myself of the ship's spy-glass, and found it hanging safely in its bracket. "This will do," said I; "the great lens is a burning-glass; I will step on shore with it, and kindle a fire: you and Fidele shall go with me."

We put up a couple of the dead fowls into our bag, with the remains of the biscuit, and the bottle of wine; and, by a little help, my dear wife and her faithful dog, both overjoyed, once more trod the welcome earth again. We looked on the vessel with deep emotion, and on the

strange land we were now for the first time treading together — the probable residence of our future life, whether long or short. We did not proceed far along the sand under the rocks, among the fragments of which were thorny bushes, without picking up some dry branches and dead leaves; but being under the shadow of a high precipice, standing directly south (and therefore intercepting the sun's rays to a considerable distance, nearly from his rising, even until his setting, at this season of the year), I carried some of my fuel to a place where the sun shone; then unscrewing the top of the spy-glass, took out the large lens; with which in a short time converging his rays, I ignited the leaves, and thus a fire was instantly kindled. My dear helpmate set to work plucking the fowls, while I removed the fire closer to the rock, into the shade; and, by the aid of plenty of dry sticks, made a large blaze there, on the embers of which the fowls were to be dressed. "We have no water," she said, "and I am indeed very thirsty." I did not know where to find the water on board the brig, and therefore proposed to walk along under the rocks, and look for a spring. She did not like me to go out of her sight, fearing I should be surprised by savages; who might be somewhere about, although we had not seen any. This idea had never yet crossed my mind; but now it was suggested, I confess it made me very uneasy; but the apprehension regarded her, not myself. In consequence, we agreed to dress the fowls as fast as we could, and return on board to eat them, where, perhaps, I might obtain some water. To hasten this project, I stopped her in the process of plucking them, and taking my penknife from my pocket, contrived to skin them with great dispatch; and in half an hour they were both broiled. The poor dog, being half famished, ate up the liver and gizzards with great avidity; while the cooking necessary to

our stomachs, under our present feelings seemed to go on but slowly. As soon, however, as we thought them eatable, I put them into the bag with the biscuit, and retraced our steps hastily to the brig, fearing every moment to be surprised by some of the natives.

On our return into the cabin, I was fortunate in finding water in a tea-kettle; which had slid into a corner to leeward under some other things, without having been upset. This was a great boon in our present straits, and we drank of it greedily, and then partook of our proposed dinner with thankfulness.

My first attention was directed to repel any attack from the natives, and I lost no time in getting down the three muskets which had hung securely in their fastening. I knew where the captain kept the ball cartridges in his state-room; which, being on the weather side when the vessel struck upon the rocks, was not blocked up at the door. I tried the flints, and loaded the muskets, and placed them on the after-lockers in the cabin: with this preparation for our defence, I was at present satisfied.

We now set to work to put the wreck of furniture, and other things, in their places, which were heaped up in one corner of the cabin, close to our state-room door. I say we, for my delicate little Eliza put out all her strength to help me. We very soon accomplished our task; and I was glad to find that there was little damage done to the things, so tossed together. Before evening, the cabin looked much as it used to do: and the vessel being in a perfectly safe and quiet inlet, we felt much comfort in the possession of so desirable an asylum.

We again went upon deck, to look around for the boat and our companions; but they were not to be seen. To have a more extended view, I went up the fore-rigging, and had not ascended far, when I was enabled to see over

the sandy beach, which seemed about half a mile broad; and I was delighted to behold an extensive lake or fine harbour, surrounded by land, immediately on the further side. Eliza had followed me to the forecastle, to be my guardian angel, as I went on this, to her mind, perilous expedition. At the first moment of seeing over the sandy isthmus, I made some exclamation of surprise, and then endeavoured to explain what I saw. A confused idea crossed my mind, that we were somewhere on the Spanish Main; and on coming down, I told her what I thought. "Well, be it as it may," said she, "we have felt that God is gracious, and we will rest entirely upon his providence." I wished her to land again, as I had fire-arms; saying, we would walk under the rocks, to the further side of the isthmus. "I will do so, if you wish it," she replied; "but I think it were better to defer it until the morning; and in the mean time we can do something for the poor goat that has broken its leg; and make some other arrangements here, for which there is much need." I instantly acquiesced, perceiving at once the reasonableness of the suggestion; for I had been impelled to make the proposal, by some indescribable curiosity, and nothing more.

I got the poor goat upon deck, and bound up its broken leg in the best way I could; then, bringing up the other, gave them half a dozen plantains, which they ate eagerly. All our vegetable stock, brought from Kingston, had been put into the steerage in hampers: into this place there was a door from under the companion ladder, but there was also a small hatch over the steerage, which had been battened down during the gale, and I was obliged to remove it before I could make my way to anything below. Here were the sailors' berths, and chests, and a few yams and plantains, which they

had provided to eat with their salt meat: they also kept a bag here for biscuits, and supplied it at their pleasure. Our former discovery of biscuit, was nearly exhausted; but, on finding this new store, we gave the remainder in our bag, which was almost dust, to the few fowls and ducks that had survived the storm; their feathers were now dry, and they looked quite cheery. The sun being set, the evening came on apace; we therefore retired to our cabin, closing the companion door after us. Hitherto we had been satisfied with occasional bursts of gratitude to our heavenly Father, for his providential care of us; but now we went upon our knees, and with our whole souls, rendered to him the due sacrifice of praise and prayer.

We lay down in peace and thankfulness; but notwithstanding this happy frame of mind, our slumbers were disturbed, by the noises of the preceding night yet ringing in our ears. We arose with the dawn, the cool freshness of which was truly delightful: a couple of oranges, with biscuit, was our breakfast: and, still finding water in the tea-kettle, we drank some of it, mixed with a little wine. "Now, my Eliza," said I, "will you venture on shore, and let us explore the other side of the isthmus?"—"Yes" she replied, "I will go cheerfully now." I took two of the muskets, and gave to her a boarding-pike to carry as a staff, and to have recourse to for defence, if necessary; and with our faithful little dog, we descended at one step from the brig's side to the rock. I shouldered both the muskets, and keeping up as yet the good old fashion of England, she took my right arm with her left, but holding in the other her spear-pointed staff.

We thus proceeded to cross the isthmus, close under the precipitous promontory; when after walking about

two hundred yards, or rather more, I observed a chasm, or falling back of the rock, in the recess of which our eyes were delighted with the sight of many acacias and some other small trees. Having gained the summit of the sand-hills, we suddenly had a distinct view of the fine sheet of water beyond, with land on every side of it. The sea breeze was faint, and the water but gently stirring with the breeze. It was a charming scene; we stopped a few minutes to gaze on it, then proceeded to gain the margin of the lake. The rocks continued stupendous, but less precipitous; being wooded high up, more or less, with palmettos and some other small trees. When we came within about two hundred yards of the beach, they terminated abruptly, presenting a high front to the west; opposite to which lay a low black rock, that stretched itself into the lake nearly one hundred yards; and between these rocky opposites, the sand of the isthmus seemed still to spread. When we came to this point, we looked round the face of the promontory that now appeared before us, and had the inexpressible delight to see at no great distance a spring of water, gushing forth in an ample stream clear as crystal. We instantly made towards it, and simultaneously thought of the Israelites in the desert, and we blessed their God and ours; both of us feeling that the gracious words of his mercy were literally verified unto us, giving us "rivers of water in a dry place, and the shadow of a great rock in a weary land."

Fidele was the first to taste the pleasant stream: we quickly joined him, and with the palms of our hands partook of the cool and delicious water with great eagerness. This was a discovery that promised us lasting comfort: we took our seat on a piece of rock close to its source, and felt as if we never could tire in gazing on it,

as it flowed from its stoney bed, running in a clear little stream among some trees, that grew between it and the lake.

As we sat in a sort of ecstatic reverie, the dog barked; I seized one of the guns, which lay by me: Eliza looked earnestly at me, but with full self-possession: we were on our feet in a moment: she took up the other gun, holding it in one hand, with the boarding pike in the other, ready to give me either, as occasion might require. Fidele continued to bark, keeping his head towards the rock a little beyond us. We listened, but could hear nothing: I looked up and all around; nothing appeared. We fully expected a surprise from some of the natives: at last I heard a noise just above us; Fidele scrambled towards it; I cocked the gun; I feared a something,—a wild beast perhaps; I knew not what; we did not see our enemy. I had no share in the fight; Fidele killed him in an instant; I heard him squeak; but what he was, I had no idea. I clambered up into the brushwood, where the encounter had taken place, and there saw a large iguana; which, in superstitious times, might have been exhibited as a dragon. I drew him forth with our pike; and as we looked on him with much curiosity, the brave little dog wagged his tail, showing he sought that commendation which was and is ever due to valour; and we liberally bestowed it on him. I took up the iguana, for I had learned in Jamaica the creature was esteemed a great delicacy, eating like chicken.

Trifling as the incident may appear, our nerves had received a little shock during this adventure; but we again rested on the rock, and then returned by the way we came to our ship. I deposited the iguana; and, after much persuasion, Eliza allowed me to go, accompanied by Fidele and a musket, back to the fountain for a

supply of water: I did so, and quickly returned, without any accident. The loss of the gabbose during the hurricane, we did not know how to remedy; we were afraid to light a fire on board, without a fireplace, lest we should burn the ship; and we felt unwilling to trust ourselves on shore to cook our victuals: but the last was the least dangerous alternative, and being armed, we resolved not to allow our late groundless panic to prevent us from adopting it. I made up a fit place of stones among the rocks, a little beyond the brig's bow, and there kindled a fire in the same way I had done on the day before; while my wife got out some tea and sugar, and the metal tea-pot, and a couple of tin mugs, that had resisted the smashing effects of the hurricane. I boiled the kettle, (first reserving two or three quarts of water for other purposes), then roasted a couple of plantains, and in half an hour we sat down to the most comfortable repast I ever enjoyed. We were thankful to the Author of all bounty; which sense of gratitude to him is not the least of his best gifts.

During my absence at the fire, Eliza had not neglected to dispense some of the water I had reserved, amongst our thirsty ducks and fowls; the former of which were in great want of it; and as she had discovered the bread-locker, nearly half full of biscuit, and a bag in it with Indian corn, that had been brought on board to feed the poultry with, she gave the poor things a good meal. Those which had been drowned, were now becoming putrid; so that I thought it best to throw them overboard, and I did so. This was a foolish act, for it drew some sharks into the creek next day: they soon devoured the dead poultry, but continued to haunt us for a good while, to our terror; as by some accident we might possibly fall between the vessel's side and the rocks, some

time or other in passing; and then their jaws would speedily become our executioners.

We sat below for a few hours, in the heat of the day, and took a survey of our situation: the discussion was too various to admit of being noted down here, but I proceeded to act upon the decisions we made. It appeared to me, that, as the vessel had taken the ground fore and aft where she lay, there was no hazard of her sinking from any leak in the bottom; but, nevertheless, if the water were not pumped out, it would continue to rise within her to the level of the sea, and thereby spoil much of the cargo; to which we looked in a great degree for our future subsistence and comfort. I therefore fell to in the evening, and pumped for an hour; of which there was much need, for the water came up as fast as the pump would go. I resolved to pursue this every day, but instead of doing it in the evening, to make it my first occupation at break of day, when I was fresh, and the air cool. While I worked at the pump, my wife drew forth part of the fruits and vegetables from the steerage, and dried and aired them on the quarter-deck. I thought the empty coop a good place to put them in, and she arranged them there. The goats took care of themselves, as she was thus employed; even limpy had not lost her appetite, from the fracture. One of the water-melons, that had been bruised, was set aside for our refreshment, which we found cool and pleasant; but we only indulged in part of it, and, collecting the seeds with much care, reserved the remainder of its fruit for to-morrow. Not being accustomed to labour, we were sufficiently fatigued to remain quietly on deck until it was time to go to rest. The eventide is delightful in tropical climates: we sat on one of the hencoops, until the stars appeared, enjoying the cool stillness of the air,

and the varied prospect that surrounded us: we then retired to our devotions, and to bed.

I arose with the dawn, and performed my task at the pump. I would gladly have bathed in the sea after it, to refresh myself; but I saw a couple of sharks, and I thought no more of the wished-for luxury. My kind helpmate did not slumber in bed after I arose, but got up, and, searching all the lockers, found were the sauce-pans were kept, and many other things, as the salt, pepper, butter, etc. etc., which had been placed there for present use. She also discovered the harness cask, with the salt beef and pork in it, for the ship's company: it had been hid from me in the steerage passage by the ship's awning, that was thrown over it. I now took the tea-kettle, also a large tin cooking vessel with an arched handle, and accompanied by my two faithful companions, not forgetting a musket, marched to the fountain and brought back a supply of water. We soon got a tea breakfast, so congenial to our former habits.

It had been determined that one of our first objects, should be to get some of the seeds of our fruits, and some of the roots, as our yams and coccos, into the ground, the late rains having rendered the soil favourable for their reception; but the spades and shovels and hoes were all among the cargo; and how to approach them I could not devise; with nothing but my own strength, to move the bulky casks, and other things, that filled the hold of the brig, were an herculean task: they had been shipped in England, and were therefore under what was taken in at Jamaica; but being articles likely to suffer by pressure, on account of their shafts, I concluded they must be immediately below the lumber: however, there was nothing for it but to go to work with perseverance and a good-will; so, after breakfast,

I opened the main hatchway; and saw, the boards and shingles stowed close up to the deck. I pulled out a great quantity of the shingles, throwing them on deck, and then got hold of some of the long planks; four of which I succeeded to hoist on deck. I placed these planks over the starboard gunwale of the brig; one end of each resting there, the other on the sandy beach, which was close to her side: along these planks I slid all the boards down upon the beach, as fast as I could get them up; and at intervals amused myself by throwing the shingles (small pieces of wood used in the West Indies instead of slates) as far as I could, beyond the boards let down by the slope. I worked hard till twelve o'clock, and was heartily tied.

My wife had kept up the fire, on the rocks on the other side, and had made free with a shingle or two to help it: she had put some coccos on to boil, and a couple of plantains to roast, and so far had endeavoured to provide a dinner for us. I was pleased with her care and industry; "but we will eat the iguana, dear," said I; "it is very good."—"I do not think I could taste it," she replied; "it looks so hideous; yet, if you eat of it, I will certainly try to do so." I soon prepared the animal, which was not much bigger than a rabbit; and, getting a saucepan out of the locker, cut the creature in pieces, and mixing a little pepper, salt, butter, and flour into small balls, stewed it excellently. We sat down to our iguana and vegetables; and she, as well as myself, admired my unexpected talent at cookery, while we found the dish even exquisite. After our repast, we retired below for a few hours; and, in talking over matters, I lamented, not knowing where the water-casks had been deposited. My wife thought they must be in the hold, if there were any; and asked me if I did not

recollect that a large one, filled with water, had stood on the deck, and which, no doubt, had been washed overboard in the hurricane; but probably, though the voyage was expected to be short, and many might not have been brought, yet some must be discovered after a search. I hoped so; for the fact is, I was desirous of putting my hand on water on board, for our culinary purposes, without going for it across the isthmus, having so much other labour before me. In the afternoon I went down into the hold; and having cleared away a considerable quantity of the lumber, I was enabled to discover what I wanted, and got at the water-casks; which, as Eliza suggested, were few, only two in number. I forced the bung out of one of them, and contrived to get the hand-pump into it; a great point gained, under our present circumstances. I pumped a bucket full of the water, and, bringing it up, poured some out for the poultry. As they hurried to drink, I was glad to observe on reconnoitring them attentively, that they were rightly assorted,—one gallant cock, poor fellow, now but in shabby attire, with three hens, looking little better. There were also two or three drakes among the ducks; and I was pleased in having thus assured myself of a prospect of their multiplication, when we could trust them on shore to enjoy their liberty. We regaled ourselves at even with the remainder of the water-melon; and, as we had not yet entered upon a rigid economy of our delicacies, we boiled our kettle, and finished the day with tea.

Our rest this night was sound and refreshing; the noises of the storm had died away upon our ears; we had purchased sleep by the laborious exertions of the day, and were only awakened by the crowing of the cock.

This day was occupied much as the former—in pumping out the ship, and getting the shingles and deals, and some small squared timber, out of the hold, upon the beach. My dear wife reminded me that the next day would be the Sabbath, and as such we must keep it. I blessed God for the consecration of that day, and thanked her for telling me of it, as I was not aware that the week had so nearly expired. We boiled a piece of salt beef and salt pork to serve us until Monday, and finished the day in thankfulness.

CHAPTER IV.

Sunday, 30th December. — We arose with the dawn, and both expressed an earnest desire to bathe in the sea, for we felt that such a bath would be not only grateful, but highly useful to us, our laborious occupation during the last four days requiring for us complete ablution; but we were deterred from plunging into the transparent wave, that so powerfully invited us, by having seen the sharks; and therefore contented ourselves, for the present, with a good washing.

The sun arose in splendid majesty, and for a few minutes shone resplendently into the cabin windows; but he had not risen half a degree above the horizon, before he was veiled by the high rocky island, which lay astern of us, distant about half a mile. After prayer, we went upon deck to enjoy the calm coolness of the morning: all was beauty and freshness around: we blessed God for the profusion of his bounties, and felt the situation in which his providence had placed us as the place of our rest: we thought upon the storm we had survived, with adoring gratitude; lamenting the fate of our rash companions, who, trusting to their own might alone, had distrusted the compassion of the Almighty.

Eliza had brought the Prayer-Book upon deck, and opening it, she read—"O come, let us give thanks unto the Lord, for he is gracious. The sea roared, and the stormy winds lifted up the waves thereof: we were carried up as it were to heaven, and then down again into the deep: our souls melted within us. Then cried we unto thee, O Lord, and thou didst deliver us out of our distress. Blessed be thy name, who didst not despise the

prayer of thy servants, but didst hear our cry and hast saved us. Thou didst send forth thy commandment, and the windy storm ceased and was turned into a calm. Thou, Lord, hast made us glad through the operation of thy hands, and we will triumph in thy praise. Blessed be the Lord God, even the Lord God, who only doeth wondrous things, and blessed be the name of his Majesty for ever!" Then we both said, in the fulness of our hearts, Amen! Amen!—and throwing ourselves on the neck of each other, wept tears of joy and gratitude.

About the time the ascending sun looked over the rock upon the vessel's deck, the sea-breeze set in, which blowing into the cabin windows rendered it more agreeable below than on deck. We therefore descended; and after breakfast determined to show our respect to the day by dressing ourselves in better attire. The trunks were opened, and my beloved wife dressed herself as she would have done at Awbury on a Sunday; and I followed her example: we then sat down quietly, and I went through the Morning service, she reading the lessons for the day. After this proper and consolatory exercise, we talked to each other about those dear friends we had left behind in England, and often with grateful tenderness reverted to the father of Eliza, to whom both of us were much indebted for the peace we now enjoyed; being separated from all the gaieties of life, but having for our portion God and ourselves.

It being the winter solstice, or a few days after, and the sea-breeze blowing fresh, we did not find it unpleasantly hot upon deck; for although it was now near to noon, the vessel was completely in shadow of the promontory. We therefore enjoyed ourselves sitting arm in arm on the quarter-deck, feeling an internal happiness that scarcely could have been anticipated in such a situa-

tion: it was that peace which the world cannot give nor take away, and with which the stranger intermeddleth not. At one o'clock we went below, and took a slight repast by way of dinner; and as soon as the high rock which overtowered our vessel extended its protecting shadow to some distance over the isthmus, my dear wife put on her gipsy hat, and we prepared to go on shore to take a walk. Yet we were somewhat afraid, although we had not seen any traces of natives nor other inhabitants; neither had we heard the howlings of wild beasts: still we did not deem it prudent to venture without some defence. As it was Sunday, I did not choose to carry a gun; so I bethought me to go to one of my trunks and take out my pistols, which I did; and fastened them to a belt made of a silk pocket-handkerchief; then taking a boarding-pike in my hand, and giving Eliza another, to serve at once for a pilgrim's staff and a weapon — thus accoutred, with our faithful little dog, we stepped on shore.

I had observed a grove of cocoa-nut trees towards the centre of the isthmus, bearing about north of us; or I should rather say I saw the tops of them, for the sand-banks appeared unusually high between them and the eastern beach. We now proposed to direct our steps to that place, and proceeded for some distance under shadow of the promontory, during which it was very pleasant; but after we emerged from that friendly shield, the heat became intense, which, adding to the disagreeableness of the deep loose sand getting into our shoes, disposed us to return. I, however, perceived we could avoid the latter inconvenience, by edging down to the sea-side, which we did; and, by keeping close to the water's edge, found the footing firm and the walking pleasant. Thus feeling ourselves quite at ease along the margin of the beach,

we often stopped to contemplate the reef on which the brig had struck; and, observing now the surf break over it, we felt a renewed spirit of gratitude to God, who had delivered us from a watery grave.

After proceeding about half a mile, we picked up many beautiful shells, which were admirable for their high polish. I put them in my pocket, one by one, as they presented themselves to us; until finding myself rather heavily laden, I said, "Eliza, we will leave some for our next walk." My dear companion instantly comprehended the cause of my remark, and desired to share the burden; but it was not already one, although it would have soon become so, had we not ceased to yield to our desire of collecting these beauties of the ocean. By this amusement, and the frequent contemplation of objects around us, the evening had imperceptibly crept upon us, so that the sun was setting just as we reached the eminence behind which stood the grove of cocoa-nuts: from that point we had a full view of the bright orb of day, making his slow descent over the land that bounds the lake upon the west. The sight filled us with admiration; and, as his radiance streamed along the sky, we raised our hearts to Him who made so glorious a creature—so glorious, indeed, that men have worshipped him for his and their Creator; as if, dazzled by his beams, the light of their understanding had been put out, not to see that light or darkness, heaven or earth, all, are but creatures, the work of thy hands, O God! self-existing, unseen by the eye of man, yet everywhere visible in thy works, giving life and motion to all created things, and in whom and by whom we live, and move, and have our being.

We returned by the western beach, and, keeping close to the water's edge, walked with a good pace; and soon arrived at the point beyond which the gushing fountain

pours out its refreshing water; but it being now nearly dark, we could not stop to drink, but hastened across the isthmus, and got on board. After resting a little, we took some wine and biscuit, and being refreshed, gave prayer and praise to the Father of mercies. Thus having spent our first Sabbath in the land of our solitude, we retired with repose of spirit to sleep.

Monday, 31st.—The dawn of the next day found me at the pump, which, after a quarter of an hour's work, began to throw out the water slowly, and to my great joy and relief, before half an hour had expired, it sucked, that is, no more water remained within its reach; so that on ceasing to work it, the air rushed in from above. I now went into the hold, and searched about for the boxes that contained the spades, hoes, axes, etc., and at last found them stowed athwart-ships, close to the after bulkhead. I got a maul and large chisel from the carpenter's chest in the steerage, and forced open their lids. I took out a spade, a hatchet, a felling axe, and a couple of hoes; then hastened to the cabin to show my dear wife the proofs of my success, and to inform her of a cessation from my morning's toil at the pump. She was alive to every incident that concerned me, and she expressed the pleasing emotion she felt, by a kind word and a kinder smile, when I showed her the spade, and told her I had cleared the vessel of the leakage. We now had breakfast; after which I thought it right to cover up the main-hatchway loosely, not requiring to work any more at the cargo for the present. I had cleared away all the lumber amid-ships, but there was still a good deal more forward in the vessel. We cut up a pumpkin and a piece of pork, which I stewed together for our dinner. Then, as before, we took care of the pumpkin seeds; and on all future occasions we never omitted to gather up the seeds of our fruits as we used them.

In the afternoon we went on shore to look about for spots of favourable ground to plant some of the seeds of the water-melon, which we had eaten a few days ago, and also of the pumpkin we had just cut up, but of which at least one half yet remained, for it was very large. I put the hatchet into my belt, and taking a musket and my spade in each hand, set forth, my guardian angel carrying her pike, while brisk Fidele led the way. I knew that the water-melon required much sun, but the pumpkin less: the former would only grow in hot climates; the latter would come to perfection even in the south of England. I also knew that a sandy soil was favourable to both these plants. I therefore felt I should not seek long without finding proper situations for them; but it must be on the other side of the isthmus, beyond the termination of the promontory, somewhere near the spring of water.

When we had advanced a couple of hundred yards under the precipitous rock, we came to that part which receded; in the recess of which, some thorny acacias, and some other trees, were growing. As we stopped to look in among them, the dog made his way through the thicket, and in a minute or two he began barking; when, to our startling surprise, we presently heard him answered, we thought, by some other dog, accompanied by strange and loud noises from the same quarter; but as they appeared rather at a distance, we took courage, and called Fidele to us. We repeated our call over and over again, yet he did not come, but continued to bark. I then, by the still corresponding sound, guessed it to be an echo, and exclaimed to my wife, "O! he has got another iguana, I suppose." I then observed to her, "There must be a passage through the thicket to some distance, for his barking seems a great way off." While

we were talking, his uproarious little voice drew nearer, and immediately out brushed an iguana, with his mane erect, dragging his long tail after him like a great snake attached to his posteriors; looking more ugly, if not more horrible, than any other creature in the world. Fidele was soon after him, and killed him, without any fight, after a run of twenty or thirty yards. I praised our little dog, and patted him; and left the iguana where he lay, for the present. "I should like to penetrate through this thicket," I exclaimed; "there may be some issue to the other side of the promontory." I returned instantly on board, for a table knife, which I sharpened on a stone; and with it and the hatchet, I cleared a narrow path forward; throwing the small trunks and branches, I had occasion to cut away, out upon the sand. After working about two hours, I advanced through the opening I had made, and found myself close to the mouth of a cavern, into which I looked; but instead of being a dark recess, as such places generally are, I saw a light shining into it, as if from above, with considerable brilliancy. While cutting away the trees, my wife had remained without the thicket, and kept Fidele by her side: I now called to her to come forward; and with some difficulty (owing to the inconvenience of her English dress) she got through the thorn-beset avenue. I took her hand, and we stepped into the cavern together: the mouth appeared as large as a small gateway; and thence we saw the sun's rays coming in from an opening opposite, about three or four feet in diameter, and, perhaps, thirty feet above us. By this opening at the back of the cave, it was clear that the further end of the cavern was close to the further side of the promontory, at least at this point. We now gazed around us, and saw we were in an extensive natural excavation; the floor of which

was covered by the dung of birds; the summit thickly hung with pendulous stalactites; and the sides incrustated with shelving masses and nodules of the same. We were now sure the noises we had heard, when our dog barked, was that bark reverberated, and, perhaps, the flight of birds making their escape through the natural window above. We lingered and looked about a little, but without being able to make any further observations worth notice; and so we squeezed our way back through the slender avenue I had made in the brushwood, being a distance of nearly thirty yards.

We now proceeded round the west end of the promontory to the spring, and crossed over its little run of water, by stepping on some small fragments of rock in its bed, without even wetting our shoes. The ground was clear of wood for a few yards, but beyond were large trees, free from underwood. We walked under this umbrageous foliage, towards the lake, for the space of a hundred yards, which brought us out on the south side of the rock's point, that separated this wooded region from the sandy isthmus: we observed that this point, which extended a considerable distance into the lake, was a bare rock; and that there was nothing but sand, mixed with a little earth, between it and the foot of the promontory whence the spring gushed. Having ascertained these objects, we retraced our steps: and I fixed upon a piece of ground between the spring and the southern part of the rock, clear of the shade of trees, for putting in the seeds. On this spot there were reeds, and grasses, and some other slender plants growing; and, from the late rain, and contiguity to the little brook, they were somewhat rank — I should say, with more propriety of diction, luxuriant. I fell to work with my spade, and turned up the earth here and there in patches of about a yard square; and put a couple of melon

seeds into some, and as many pumpkin seeds into others. As my sowing finished, the sun was setting, which warned us to return; but just at this moment our attention was arrested by the leaping of fish all round the point. Some appeared so near us, I could see they were mullet, such as we had eaten in Jamaica at Mr. Dickinson's table, who then told us a curious fact,—that these fish are often enticed to spring into the fisherman's boats, attracted by his carrying a lighted torch, during his night-work. We now saw them leaping, probably towards the last rays of the sun. That we had no boat to attempt catching any of them, caused me a little regret, and I expressed it to Eliza. "Are we not fed from heaven?" she replied; "my Edward, why would you tempt God? Remember the Israelites and the quails." I deserved the reproof. "Thank you, my own better part," said I; "the heart is ever ready to turn against heaven with impious ingratitude." As we talked, we moved homeward, for as yet our vessel was our home. We took a look at the thicket, and passed a reflection or two on the cavern in our way. While we stopped for a minute there, Fidele put us in mind of the iguana, by running to the spot where it lay; and kept guard over his prize until I came and took it up. I confess I was outrageously hungry after the exertions of the day; and as soon as we got on board, I demolished all the stew that had been left at dinner, while my wife prepared our little board for tea. Gentlefolk often wonder how servants and other working people can eat so much; if I had ever entertained such a wonder, it was now no longer to me a mystery. While at tea, among other subjects become of high concern to us, that of some unsuitable parts of our dress came under consideration; the most pressing occasion for remedy was the sand filling our shoes. After some deliberation, it was resolved to make canvass gaiters, to reach half way up the

leg, and be sewed on to our shoes; of which we had a good stock, besides there being a great supply on board, part of the investment of the cargo. I was to substitute a sailor's jacket for my flapping coat: and Eliza a short bedgown for her long wide dress. We finished the day by putting the cabin in order; and, having said our prayers, retired to rest.

Tuesday, 1st January, 1734.—Early in the morning I set about cutting away pieces of the torn sails, some of which were hanging about the fore-rigging. I foresaw there would be much use for all the pieces of canvass I could collect; but my present object was a slip for our boots; and, in getting that, I improved the opportunity to obtain some very large pieces, indeed as much as I could carry at three times, which I brought all aft, and laid on the quarter-deck. After breakfast, we shaped out our boot legs; I say we, because it required our united ingenuity to accomplish it. I got some sewing twine from the sailmaker's box, also a couple of his needles, and his palm (a sort of thimble that fits by a strap to the palm of the hand, and which, by that way, gives more power to push the huge needle through the canvass). With this palm I undertook to sew the canvass gaiters on to the shoes, if my wife would previously run them up stoutly behind with one of her largest needles and some strong thread. She immediately set about her part of the task; and, after sitting by her a little while to see the work fairly begun, I proposed taking the goats on shore, and placing them in the cavern, with a few plantains and some Indian corn, to use them to the spot. As they were very tame, I did not think it probable they would stray away; and as there was a good deal of herbage about the thicket, they would soon learn to subsist themselves, without drawing

further on our little imported stock of grain. We now thought my pistols security enough; I put them in my belt, leaving the guns on board; and having but a short distance to go, I concluded my dear companion would remain on board; but she preferred accompanying me, and taking her station with her work under the shadow of the rock, while I was bringing the goats from the brig to the cavern. I took the lame animal up in my arms, and brought her on shore: the other jumped after me; I then led the lame one along by the horns; and when we arrived at the spot where my wife and her little dog had disposed themselves, they got up and joined the party.

As soon as we entered the avenue of the thicket, the goats began to browse: however, I drove them forward into the cave, where their bleating gave us an opportunity of seeing a great many pigeons take wing from the sides of the cavern, and fly out at its aperture on the opposite side. Although the dung of the birds was thickly spread on the floor, particularly towards the sides, yet the floor of the cave, and every part of it, appeared quite dry. We found it cool and airy, and pronounced it no bad lodgings for shipwrecked persons in such a climate.

When we left the cave, the goats followed us out of it, but they stayed behind in the thicket to browse: observing this, and seeing there was plenty of herbage, we did not think it necessary to bring them any more provisions from the ship. Having thus begun to move our live stock, our next essay was to transplant the cock and hens to the same place; and put food and water for them in the cave, it being clear they would never breed in the coop: with respect to the ducks, we determined to keep them where they were for the present, lest they might take to the water, and swim away. Having decided

on these weighty matters in our little commonwealth, we retrod our steps to the vessel; and putting the four fowls into a bag, and some bruised corn into another, returned to the cave, where, after throwing some of the corn on the floor, we let them out, and were glad to see them picking up the corn without any signs of fear, or even disturbance. This was a bold measure, and of so much importance to us in its consequences, that we were not ashamed to ask of God his blessing upon this, as well as on every other thing we undertook. I then brought some water in a bucket, that they might not be induced to stray away to seek for drink. Our goats were enjoying themselves among the bushes: and we left this little colony with some little anxiety, notwithstanding the security of their situation.

We returned on board, and refreshed ourselves with a couple of the oranges; which we found fully ripe, and delicious, but now took care of the seeds; which we had neglected to do, when we ate them before, at a time when we were less collected in mind. My wife then set to work in earnest on the gaiters; and I made up the fire on shore, to prepare our dinner. When the provisions were cooked, I brought them on board. By that time she had completed one pair of our sand defences; we therefore sat down comfortably to our fare, and she now made no scruple of eating the iguana, but acknowledged it to be a great delicacy. On this occasion, it being New-year's day, we treated ourselves to a glass of wine; having discovered not a few bottles, perfectly safe, in one of the after-lockers. This little feast being finished, we sat down to resume our work together, with great delight. She begun upon the other pair of legs; while I, with the sailmaker's palm and some of his twine, got on cleverly, closing in the tops of her shoes with the canvass gaiters

she had prepared. "Edward," said she, after a short pause between us, "as you have frequent occasion to go to and fro from the vessel to the other side of the isthmus, and you know I am never happy when you are out of my sight, could you not contrive a temporary tent on the ridge of the isthmus, whence I could always see you when on these excursions? And besides, it would be a place to keep an eye over our goats and poultry: and the cave being near, which we thought so pleasant, we might take some useful things there, and occasionally make our fire, and dine. We should not then be far from the spring; and if you were at work either at the vessel or by the spring, we should always be sufficiently near both, and you would not have far to come to rest yourself." I thought the arrangement good; and we decided to put it in execution on the morrow.

Thus by degrees we felt our wants, and had reason to be thankful that it was within our power gradually to provide for them: we were not insensible to the mercy and bounty of our heavenly Father: how could we be so? for it was but one week to that day, since we hung in awful jeopardy on the reef, amidst thunder and lightning, and a fierce tempest of wind, with an overwhelming sea. All these things were commented on during our work: and one reflection occurred to both, which seemed very unaccountable; viz. that those seven days appeared, on retrospection, like so many months; while some weeks in our lives had passed away, which on looking back to the day week, for instance, from one Sunday to another, had seemed but a point in time. But this last week, although the minutes and hours sped quickly by, yet from the multitude of the objects, and the important events it had produced, appeared to have embraced even a year's duration.

We sat close at our work until nearly sunset, and then went ashore to visit our live stock at the cave. We found them all within: the goats lying on the floor, at some little distance from its mouth; the poultry perched up on one of the stalactitic ledges about three feet above them. The interior of the cave was still quite light, which allowed us to see some bluish-coloured pigeons on the lower ledge of the window aperture. They did not fly on our coming in, and we took care not to make any noise to scare them. I had brought the kettles with me for a supply from the spring, and proceeded there, for the water on board was a very unpleasant beverage. We deposited our vessels at the fountain: and now, having little apprehension of wild beasts or savages, arm in arm, penetrated a little further into the wooded region: we proceeded about half a mile, passing several palm trees, which I was glad to see, and at last came to an immense silk-cotton tree,—a tree such as we had seen in Jamaica, at Mr. Dickinson's penn; and which, in magnitude, reminded us of our native elm, bringing back recollections dear to our minds. At this place the ground appeared clear for a quarter of a mile, with the exception of some Indian figs and aloes here and there: beyond which, the trees spread again in great luxuriance: the mountain cabbage palm being among them. The clear ground seemed to be rocky, the cause, no doubt, that large trees did not grow on it. We stood awhile under the cotton tree, and looked upon the open space, having the lake before us, with some notions of its eligibility for a permanent dwelling. Pleased with this discovery we returned, and on our way again saw the mullet leaping about the point. We filled our kettles with the cool and clear water, and soon found ourselves safe on board, to close the evening as usual with a light repast, prayers, and rest.

Wednesday, 2d.—In the morning I was cheered by the crowing of the cock on shore, to whom I soon made a visit, by carrying some of the planks up to the intended site of the tent, to lay over the sand for a floor. While thus employed, it struck me, that having plenty of them, it would be as well, and better, to construct the tent of planks entirely, rather than to erect uprights, and cover them with the ship's awning; which I had first intended, reflecting that we might yet have more storms of wind and rain at this season of the year. I repeated my idea to my Eliza at breakfast, who approved it, but with this observation, that she feared my plan would be too laborious for my strength. During the hot noon I resumed my task at the boots, and by dinner-time had closed in the second pair; then, after a new ablution of our feet from the sand (of which, hitherto, we never had been free), we put on the guards; and, our cold dinner being dispatched, I set to my carrying labour again. My anxious wife wanted to assist me; but I told her, that was far beyond the power of her tender frame; and desired her to go and sit under the shade of the promontory, upon the boards I had already carried there, and cheer me with her presence. She took a couple of plantains for the goats, and some more corn for the fowls; and I was pleased to see the goats, who were browsing round the exterior of the thicket, come to her and eat the plantains from her hand.

I marked out a spot for the tent, about forty feet clear of the steep side of the promontory, and twelve or fourteen feet beyond the cave and its avenue. I wished to erect the shed in the simplest way possible, and with as few nails or carpentry as might be practicable, intending it for only a temporary purpose; but as the timber must be carried from the beach, and placed somewhere in a

mass, it might as well be disposed of in this form as in any other. The planks I used were twelve feet long, and twelve inches broad, and two inches thick. I levelled rather more than twelve feet square of the ridge, and laid on twelve planks side by side; which, being done, formed a square of twelve feet. I then crossed the ends of these planks with others; which were again crossed, and so on, after the manner of making the log-houses in America. I contrived the door, which was made opposite to the rock, by sawing some of the planks in two, cutting a bit off from each, the use for which will instantly appear, and placing these half planks instead of whole ones on either side, supported by upright planks for door-posts, the little cut-off pieces were placed between the ends of the half planks, to keep them duly asunder; and in this way I made the windows also. As the planks were two inches thick, the building at the sides (independent of the door and of the windows, which were small,) was an alternation of two inches of plank and two inches of air; but the corners were solid; and the walls, being a foot thick, had the appearance of a solid mass, unless when you looked in a straight line between the planks. The structure, when finished, was ten feet square within the walls, and eight feet high. The roof was flat, made by a covering of the planks. It took nearly two hundred planks to construct this small building; and it cost me the labour of four hours every day for a week. I have found some difficulty in describing this wooden palace, for such it was to us; and, to avoid greater obscurity in the picture, I have departed from my diary way of writing, as far as regards it: but perhaps, after all, the description I have given may not convey a correct notion of what is intended to be portrayed; but they who have seen a log-house in America, will easily comprehend my

meaning. I shall now return to the details of the day on which I began our plank palace, or shed, or tent, or whatever you would like to call it. After having cleared the spot, and laid the foundation planks, the evening closed in, and we retired to our vessel, and to rest.

Thursday, 3d.—I took the dawn of the morning for two hours' work at the plank-house; and, being now in sight, my wife contentedly remained on board: she employed herself in getting up the shaddocks, and oranges, and limes, and pine-apples, with the vegetable roots, to air upon deck: they were yet all in good preservation, excepting one pine-apple, which was beginning to decay, from having been bruised and over-ripe. The whole store, I found spread upon deck when I returned from my morning's work. The sight was glorious: I saw future trees, bearing delicious fruit, hid in the precious heap. I blessed God for his providence, in the provision he had thus made for man—"the herb bearing seed," to be perpetuated for his use. We did not keep the ripe pine-apple for dessert, as great people do, but we ate it for breakfast with our tea and biscuit: however, before it was cut, I twisted the top out of it very gradually, so as to bring with it a deep cone of fibres; having learned at Jamaica that the top of the pine-apple so taken out, would grow, and become prolific. After breakfast we trudged over the isthmus to the spring, to plant the pine-top near to the melons; and I took a hoe in my hand as well as the spade, and hoed up the ground all round the seeds I had sown, so that the grass and weeds might be scorched, if not destroyed, by the sun. I then chose a spot, far from any shade, in which to plant the pine-top; and, having done so, placed some split shingles round it for security. The day was then at the hottest, and we therefore determined to make another excursion

into the wooded region; but we could not pass the fountain without stopping to drink; and our little faithful companion seemed to take equal pleasure in lapping the clear water, nay, even lying down in the stream, to enjoy its coolness in every limb. We delighted in seeing his delight; yet rather envied him a luxury, which hitherto fear of the sharks had compelled us to deny to ourselves. "How much I should like to bathe," exclaimed Eliza, as Fidele rolled and gladdened in the water: "I wish there were no sharks," continued she; "how comfortable it would be to us, could we refresh ourselves every morning in the sea."—"I think, my love," said I, "that I could stoccado in a place from the sea with staves, large enough to afford you that enjoyment without danger. When your wooden tent is finished, I will attempt the bath."—"My dear Edward," she sweetly replied, "you never lose an opportunity of showing me the immeasurable kindness of my husband." I took her by the hand, and pressed it to my lips, but my heart was too full to speak. I gently raised her from the stone on which we had sat down, near the stream-head, and turned together into the wood. We proceeded through the welcome shade, till we arrived at the head of the dell, close under the silk-cotton tree. During our walk we saw several birds, but observed that none of them sung. There was, however, a dove in the cotton tree, which attracted our attention by her plaintive note; and, on looking down on the ground before us, we perceived several other doves pecking happily about, but they fled at our approach. We also heard the screams of paroquets in the woods beyond; but they were indistinct, therefore must be distant. We now again surveyed this place with a wistful kind of inspection; and the more we contemplated it, the more we became satisfied that it

might be made an eligible spot for our permanent residence. We thought we discovered ground enough, in a little dell between the great tree and the lake, for our cultivation, though there were parts beyond us, barren of soil and rocky. The situation would be near enough to the spring and to the ship, for the supplies we should require from those sources: and withal, it seemed to be secure and sequestered.

On our return, I lodged the spade and hoe in the cave; and we were pleased to see our goats and fowls well and contented. We threw out some more bruised corn from the bag that we had lodged there; and could not help remarking, that either the fowls had acquired extraordinary appetites, or that the goats had helped them off with the corn thrown out yesterday. We got on board about two o'clock, and made a cold dinner on salt beef and roasted yams.

As we had now given up all hope of ever seeing our captain and his crew again, I thought there would be no indelicacy in rumaging the captain's cabin, if not his chest; and there I found his quadrant, a spare compass, (the one on deck had been demolished, with the binnacle, by the hurricane) a case of hollands, a little empty keg called a canteen, made to contain about two quarts, with a string to sling it over the shoulder, and a mouth-piece, with a cork, so that a person could drink out of the keg, when the cork was withdrawn. I also found several other desireable things, among which was a large box of Havannah cigars. Of all these acquisitions, the keg-canteen presented itself as most immediately important. "This will be a little fountain in the wilderness to us, my Eliza," said I, "when we go to visit the cocoa-nut grove; or, perhaps, when we venture to explore beyond the northern extremity of the sandy isthmus." She smiled in the way

she always did when she saw anything particularly pleased me; and then assisted me in transporting the lighter parts of our bedding upon deck to air. I then left her to arrange our several just discovered comforts; and, stepping on shore again, employed myself for two hours at the plank-house. Before evening closed, I had resumed my seat by her dear side; and night found us, as usual, grateful and happy.

Friday, 4th.—On going upon deck at daylight, I saw a large turtle, apparently asleep, close under the stern of the brig. This was the first turtle I had seen, excepting at the turtle-market in Jamaica. I looked earnestly at the creature, feeling a strong desire to attempt taking such a prize; but I could not swim, and I had no boat, nor any means of getting at it. I was cogitating on the possibility of bestriding a plank, and, with a shingle for a paddle, making an essay, with a coil of very small rope, to secure it by one of the fins; but while I thus planned, it began to move, and come in towards the beach. I then went down, and brought Eliza on deck to see it; but first shut in Fidele below, for fear he might bark and frighten the turtle. We watched it approach the beach, on which it clambered up a little way with some difficulty; and after it had rested awhile, we perceived it begin to scrape a hole with one of its fore fins. I suspected it was going to deposit eggs there, and I was right: my intended prize had not got above a couple of yards beyond the water, and I feared it might yet escape me. I looked well about to see if there were any sharks in sight; and finding the coast clear, after some remonstrance from my dear wife, manfully set about the achievement. I landed on the rocks, taking a piece of small rope in my hand, with a noose at one end, and crouching down under the bank and the vessel's bows,

came round on the other side unobserved, and got between the turtle and the water. It allowed me to draw near, without its making any movement, it being at that moment in the act of depositing its eggs. I slipped the noose over one of its fore fins, and then it instantly started back, and soon made a violent effort, by which it would have dragged me, with itself, into the sea, had I not fortunately leaped to the side opposite to the fin round which the noose was drawn, and just as the creature reached the water's edge, by strongly jerking the rope, I turned it over on its back. I was then its master; but it struggled resolutely to recover its position. I then sat down deliberately on its belly, and in spite of all its flapping, kept it on its back. My wife, who is ever my helpmate, was quickly at my side to give every assistance in her power. I despatched her to bring a longer and stronger rope from the vessel, which she did; and having secured it to the other fin, I desired her to take it and fasten it round as many of the planks and pieces of timber which lay on the beach as she could. She accomplished this very well; and I recommenced my exploit by trying to haul our captive up the bank: but it proved too heavy; and in my making the attempt, it recovered its position from the back, and succeeded in dragging down the planks a few feet. It was now close to the water. I left it, and ran up to the planks, heaping one upon another over the rope, until I opposed a force sufficient to again hold the turtle. I thought it would be best now to kill it; but I no sooner decided so, than it drew in its head (the neck of which is the only vulnerable part), and I could not venture a stroke. The idea of wounding or maiming the creature, without killing it, was revolting to my feelings. I knew it was now safe, and I therefore had

time to go systematically to work. I got a double-block purchase from the ship, and making a rope fast round all the timber on shore, I fixed one end of the purchase on the bight of that rope, and the other to the rope fixed to the fin; and, although the turtle seemed to be quite two hundred weight, I boused it up high and dry some yards upon the beach, in less than half an hour. I had now secured my prize; but what was to be done with it? We surveyed it some time silently: "I do not like that you should kill the poor animal," said my kind-hearted Eliza; "we have provision enough, and we can subsist very well without taking its life."—"We will discuss that, dearest," said I, "by and by; now, let us go on board and get some breakfast, for I am heartily fatigued." At breakfast we talked the matter over. She pleaded sweetly for the poor thing, and I could not but respect the sentiment; yet although we had indeed plenty of food, it was not of the kind most wholesome to subsist entirely upon; our health required fresh provisions; and we could not expect Fidele would bring us an iguana every day; nor durst we think of deriving any help from the live stock for some time to come—they must breed, and the young ones grow. I urged all these practical arguments against her tender persuasions; and, at last, after a few moments' silence, she said, "Well, then, I suppose it ought to be killed; but, Edward, I have my doubts about your doing it."—"O yes," answered I, "I will see to that presently." I went to find a large dinner knife; and having sharpened it well, for the purpose of cutting off its head, left my wife on board, and proceeded resolutely to the place where the turtle lay. When I tucked up my shirt sleeves, to prevent the blood from staining them, and brandished the knive, as the creature's head lay stretched forth from its shell, I felt so

like an assassin about to commit his first crime, that nature recoiled within me: my hand trembled, my blood crept, and a cold dampness came out on my forehead, and in the palms of my hands. I could not have cut off the poor animal's head, at that moment, for the universe: a guilty shame seemed to hang over me; and, after a little contention with it, I retraced my steps to the vessel. Eliza never saw me look as I then did—no doubt like a thief taken in the fact; or perhaps not unlike a condemned criminal. "You repent then, Edward, I see," said she, "having killed the poor beast?"—"No, my blessed angel," I replied, putting down the knife, "I could not do it! I never took the life of any thing in such a way: the best feelings of my nature interposed, and thy kind spirit! We will let the creature go." She took me at my word; and, with Fidele, we hastened to the beach, unbound the noose, and gladly watched the poor turtle make its way, though with fear and precipitation, into the sea. "Now, my honoured husband," said she, "you are doubly dear to me! God will bless you for this act of forbearance."—"Indeed, indeed," I replied, "I feel equally guilty as if I had killed it: I had every inclination to do so."—"Yes," she replied, "it was reason that prompted you to kill it, but feeling forbade you: it is well, for once, that feeling has been right; for most frequently reason is the just judge, and feeling the offender." We contemplated our released prisoner, until it was nearly out of sight; and then returned on board, with a delight at heart which could not have been imparted by the finest turtle feast in the universe.

Although fatigued, I resolved to do penance for my iniquity, and fell to my task of carrying the planks as usual. By our dining time, I was fairly done up, but, happily, had not worked away my appetite: so, after

making a good salt-beef dinner, sat down quietly for a couple of hours to rest myself. Meanwhile, my Eliza wished to make me a little amends for all my lost trouble about the turtle (for she secretly believed I had spared it on her account), and while I was reposing on the lockers abaft, she prepared me a dessert, with some wine; and with a blissful look, and the kindest accent, she woke me from a slight slumber into which I had fallen, to come and partake of the treat she had provided. I was charmed by the messenger and the message; and we sat down, enjoying the delicious fruit, and refreshing beverage, with feelings that might be envied by the richest in dear old England. In the cool of the evening, I proposed that we should transfer a few more of our creatures from our ark, to the shore; and begin with a duck and a drake, to locate them (though at a risk) with our fowls. They were speedily put from the coop into a bag, for the purpose, which my Eliza undertook to execute. And while I was pursuing my afternoon's task at the plank-house, she came occasionally out of the thicket, to tell me all our little colony were safe, and that when she threw corn on the floor of the cave, four or five pigeons flew down, and fed with the poultry. This explained the mystery of the fowls' great appetites. She had taken the rind of a shaddock with her, to give to the goats, which, although very bitter, they eat greedily from her hand outside the thicket: they had followed her from the interior. I was pleased to see she was delighted in her occupation, surveying her dumb companions with so much satisfaction and complacency. As evening closed in, I was too tired to propose a walk: we therefore retired on board, and, at the usual hour, betook ourselves to rest.

Saturday, 5th.—In the morning early I went down

to the beach, where the scene with the turtle had taken place, to look for some of the eggs. They had all been crushed in the conflict, except four, and these I brought on board: they seemed filled with yolk, covered by a semitransparent skin. I presented them to my wife, who immediately decided on making a pudding for dinner; there being plenty of flour and raisins in our ship's store. I liked her proposal, and did justice to the dear old English dish, when it was set before us. Meanwhile, I had employed myself in some necessary arrangements on board, until the afternoon again called me forth to my building labours: when she and Fidele, as before, amused themselves at the thicket, while I worked. After I had done for the day, we went with our kettles to the spring for water, the morrow being the Sabbath; and observing something near the shore, to the northward of the black rock, where the receding beach makes a little inlet, we walked down, and perceived a large fish, about the size of a cod, close in, pursuing some small fry. I instantly caught the boarding pike from my wife's hand (which she always carried when on our rambles), and, in the same instant, transfixed the fish with it between the shoulders, and turned it out of the water upon the sand in a moment: we both rejoiced at our good fortune; and, pushing the pike through the gills, I carried it over my shoulder in triumph. We took up the kettles of water, in our delighted march back to the vessel, Fidele leaping gaily after us, and laid our prize down on the deck. It seemed something like a cod-fish, yet was certainly a different fish; however, I had no doubt of its being good for food. While thus examining it, I could not help observing to my wife, "How is it, dear Eliza, that we have killed this fish without any compunction? nay, on the contrary, rejoice in the achievement? and yet we

could not find in our hearts to take the life of the turtle!" —"I do not know," replied she; "but surely there are nice points of feeling, which regulate our conduct in a way we cannot always detect or explain. I think the one looked so like a deliberate murder, that our hearts recoiled at the contemplation of the act."—"I believe," rejoined I, "you have solved the difficulty; for really, as far as the fish and the turtle are concerned, the last had as much right to his life, and liberty, as the first." Now arose a little hesitation about cooking our prize on the morrow, it being Sunday; but, as fish would not keep in this climate for two days, and as our dear friends in England did not demur about preparing their roast beef on that day, we thought we should not do very wrong to boil our dinner on the Sabbath, under existing circumstances.

Sunday, 6th.—We performed our ablutions with the rising sun, and went to prayer. It was the Lord's-day, and we desired to dedicate it to him as perfectly as creatures in the body could prevail on themselves to do: we also liked to honour it a little in our appearance, by putting on better apparel, which we did; but our canvass legged boots could not, without inconvenience to our comfort, yield place again to shoes and large buckles. I, however, put on a coat; and Eliza gave a graceful appearance to the short dimity bed-gown she wore, by throwing a long shawl scarf over one shoulder, which was passed round the waist, with the ends hanging down a little before. She remarked, it were in vain to endeavour at saving her complexion in this climate; and, finding the sides of the hat in her way among the trees and bushes, she had made up a turban, with some muslin and a strip of red bunting, which gave her quite an Asiatic cast. Thus habited, after breakfast we visited

our colony at the cave, and returned to our Sabbath-morning devotions, by reading the service of the church. In the second lesson, we were struck with the truth and simplicity of our blessed Saviour's words:—"The kingdom of heaven cometh not by observation; it is in every man's breast."—"Yes, my dear Edward," said she, "that is when our spirit bears witness with his Spirit, that we are the children of God." Our devotions being finished, I proceeded to boil our fish, my scruples of conscience having been laid at rest on the subject. Our prize was large enough to dine a dozen; and I believe a dozen eat of it; Fidele played his part; and the remainder was given to the ducks in the coop, who eat it greedily. Seeing the ducks gobble up the fish, reminded me of having heard that poultry on shipboard often become sick and die for want of a little animal food; it being true that both ducks and fowls devour snails and worms, and all pieces of any animal substance they can find, when at their liberty.

In the afternoon, we proposed a long walk to the southern extremity of the isthmus, if we could accomplish it; so, slinging the captain's canteen over my shoulder, and placing my pistols in my belt, with my pike in my hand, and my wife with hers, followed by Fidele, we first proceeded to the fountain to fill the canteen with water, and then shaped our course along the western side of the isthmus by the side of the lake. Thanks to the security of our canvass gaiters, we got on without being incommoded by sand in our shoes; and, as we did not here see any shells to arrest our attention, we went forward without interruption. Finding ourselves soon parallel with the cocao-nut grove, we turned up from the beach, to take a second view of it. The trees were lofty, and many thickly hung with fruit. Some of the nuts lay among the

sand, a few of which had burst in the outer shell, and showed a vigorous shoot coming forth from a small aperture at one end of the solid nut. "I will collect some of these another day," said I, "to plant at our end of the isthmus; and then I shall endeavour to get you a few of the young nuts from the tree; for we must not eat any of the old ones, their kernels being hard and indigestible." Looking round me, I observed that, by the process of time on the wild vegetation, the soil had become pretty good about the cocao-nut grove; so we decided on putting in some of our seeds there, in a day or two. We again descended to the beach, and bent our course observingly along to the northward, skirting the sandy isthmus on the west. Not far from its termination we arrived at a low sandy point, to the right of which, as we stood on it, with our faces to the lake, was a small bay; at the bottom of which rose a steep rock, projecting into the water, with a bold front directly opposite to us. The west side of this bay curved out also into a rocky point at the extremity; while its gradual slope, beautifully wooded down to the water's edge, rose somewhat abruptly at a little distance from the shore; exhibiting from thence a thick forest, covering the lofty hills that formed the remote background. We stood awhile admiring this new scenery, rendered more interesting by the evolutions of a flock of sea-gulls (those inhabitants of every sea!) in pursuit of the small fish, leaping and sparkling in the bay even close to the beach. It was but a short walk to the bold rock in the bosom of the bay; and we proceeded to it, much amused with Fidele trying to catch the sprats or anchovies, or whatever they were, that swarmed upon the coast. We soon reached the rock, which appeared to be forty or fifty feet high; but, as it projected perpendicularly into deep water, there was no passing it; so we sat down upon a large

stone near its base, glad to rest ourselves. When a little cooled from our exercise, we took a draught of water from our canteen, which we found grateful and refreshing. Our eyes now were instantly arrested by our own noble promontory, which stood right over against us, distant about three miles to the south. We both exclaimed at once, "What a magnificent object it is!" The loftiest summit, immediately over our vessel, appeared to be at least three hundred or four hundred feet high; while the lower part, to the westward, where the cave is situated, looked like a rugged chasm. Beyond that, further again to the west, the cliff rose, in a conical form, to at least two hundred and fifty feet. The highest summit seemed entirely naked of trees. But this hill was wooded to the top; and, by its figure and verdure, associated with the image of the cool spring at its foot, and the commanding aspect of its more barren neighbour, altogether presented a picture of great grandeur and beauty.

After resting a reasonable time, we determined to cross the isthmus (and return by the eastern beach), which extended about half a mile to a projecting low rocky point —the very point on which the brig nearly struck, soon after her release from the reef! We recognised it by its relative situation to the reef beyond it; and then called to mind that we had seen a rivulet on what was then its further side. When recommencing our walk, we observed that the sand in our immediate direction produced some vegetation; and that, further back to the northward, there were bushes, and then trees. We kept on the edge of the fertile ground, having found our steps impeded by shrubs and other plants; and in about a quarter of an hour, we were on the eastern side of the isthmus, having had a beautiful sylvan bank all the way

on our left. On surveying the spot, I could not but reflect how fit a place it was for such seeds as required a full tropical sun, free from all shade; and made the remark to my wife. "That may be, dear Edward!" replied she, anxiously; "but you have only one pair of hands, and have already chalked out so much work for yourself, that I really am afraid you will fall sick from fatigue. I wish," added she, tenderly pressing my arm, "I had never thought of the tent on the ridge! Making it is so very laborious, and takes up so much time, which might be employed with the seeds, that I think you had better desist from finishing it for the present." I thanked her affectionately for her solicitude; but told her I did not like vacillating, and that I would not delay completing my work, as it was already in far progress. Thus we talked; and, in full enjoyment of peace, youth, and health, we proceeded homewards, only stopping now and then to pick up a beautiful shell, which lay in our way; till we arrived at the vessel, a little after sunset. Too tired to make tea, we regaled ourselves with a little wine and water, and some biscuit; and then, kneeling down in the presence of God, rendered to him that which is justly due—the sacrifice of praise and prayer; and retired to rest.

Monday, 7th.—I set to work hard upon the plank-house; and, having before carried all the materials to the spot, was now occupied entirely in its construction. I kept at my task nearly the whole day, with my wife and Fidele beside me; and, as the promontory threw us into shadow, the air was by no means unpleasantly hot, at any part of the time.

Tuesday, 8th.—We kept close at our work upon the ridge, and both were delighted to see it drawing to a close. On Wednesday the 9th, I got the roof on; and,

before sunset, had the satisfaction to see the tent completed. My dear wife had brought a bottle of wine from the vessel; and, with beef and biscuit for our dinner, and our canteen replenished from the spring, we sat down on the floor of our wooden palace, and regaled ourselves cheerily. Fidele and the goats were of the party; he eating of our general fare: the goats coming in now and then for a piece of biscuit, which they took kindly from the hand. We, however, kept them on the outside of our palace-door, not wishing to give them the habit of coming in. I was overjoyed at the achievement of my task, which I had found much more laborious than we had first expected. My dear wife thanked me over and over again for what I had done, as it had been undertaken at her suggestion; and thus well repaid for all my labour, although much fatigued, I retired with even a jocund step to our ship; and, after our constant custom of kneeling to prayer, retired to enjoy the sweets of well-earned sleep.

CHAPTER V.

Thursday, 10th January.—I employed the early part of this morning in arranging matters on board; but before I secured the main hatchway, I got up some half-inch board and a plank, to make a table, at my leisure, for the tent. We talked over our intended operations, at breakfast; and it was resolved to put some seeds and roots into the ground without loss of time, by which we hoped to be able to propagate every vegetable we had, excepting the plantain; for in it we found no seeds. As a preliminary step, we looked over our store of fruit and roots, and saw all sound, save one musk-melon, which had been a little bruised, and was beginning to spoil. Having stowed all away again, after airing them on the deck, I proposed going on shore; and taking a couple of chairs from the cabin, and our musk-melon, we marched up to the plank-house. I felt myself not a little important, I believe, when the two chairs were placed in the new building. There was a manifest exultation felt by us both at the moment; gratulatory and smiling, we sat ourselves down, for the first time, in our chairs, under the roof of a building made with my own hands. After a brief period in our new situation, Eliza went to the cave to feed the poultry, and I to get thence the spade and hoe. The fowls were there; but we could not see either ducks or goats: I confess we were agitated, if not alarmed; and I more especially, thinking they were lost. "Don't fear, dear Edward," said she; "we shall find them; the poor things are only gone to seek something to drink; you perceive there is no water in the bucket." I approved her suggestion, and hastened with her to the spring,

where we found the stragglers, and were thus relieved from our anxiety. We first thought of driving them directly back to the thicket; but as I was to be gardening near, during the best part of the day, they were allowed to remain and feed where they were. My wife, meanwhile, supplied the fowls in the cave with water; but as we did not undertake to provide for all the wild pigeons in the place, she strewed her corn on the path leading from the cavern to the outside of the thicket, and thus drew the fowls out after her. When I came up from my work, to take my dinner at the plank-house, which she had spread there, I saw them feeding near the door; and as we sat at our meal, we threw them small pieces of biscuit, which they picked up piece by piece, the cock generally getting hold of each crumb first, then calling the hens to receive it from him.

By sunset, I had put in several melon-seeds of both sorts, and also seeds of the pumpkin, and had turned up and hoed a nice spot of ground in the neighbourhood of the spring; but I could not but perceive that this place was too shady for anything but pumpkins and Indian corn: however, as we had plenty of seeds, I remarked, "Little could be lost but the labour." We were glad to see the pine-top look well; and I gave it water, after putting some more good earth round it. We now drove the goats and ducks up to the cave; and in this operation Fidele took a conspicuous part, which pleased us much, as we foresaw the use our little friend and companion might be to us, in bringing "our flocks and herds home at even-tide."

The sun did not set with its usual beauty, this evening; the western horizon was overcast, and there had been little sea-breeze all day. We loitered some time in the vicinity of our new habitation, treating the goats with

the rind of our musk-melon, and in other domestic trifling. The sky, in the meanwhile, became completely overcast: the goats suddenly deserted us, uttering an unusual cry, and ran into the thicket: we looked up, and, apprehending rain, hastened towards our vessel: but we had scarcely set forth, before it came on, pouring down on us in torrents, so that we were wet to the skin in two minutes. At this time, there was not a breath of wind, and it had suddenly become quite dark. We got on board with difficulty, not only drenched, but fatigued, and with poor Fidele, like a drowned rat, following us. As we descended into the cabin, I pulled the top of the companion over; but there was already much water below in the steerage passage. It was quite dark in the cabin; and from our being very wet, the want of light made us doubly uncomfortable. I drew the charge from one of my pistols, and struck fire in the pan, so as to ignite some paper I placed on a plate upon the table; and keeping the flame up with a few torn pieces, for a minute or two, my wife brought a candle from the locker, which we lighted, and then joyfully proceeded to change ourselves: the rain, meanwhile, continued to fall in a deluge over our heads upon the deck, as if the very sky was coming down. We took off our dripping clothes, and put on our light night things. It was not cold; yet we felt chilly after our wetting. I now thought of the captain's case of hollands, and, without saying a word to Eliza, I brought out a bottle, and set her an example by taking a sup of it, and made her do the same. Having done this, we only said "God preserve us!" and went to bed, leaving the candle burning in a candlestick, standing on the plate. We could not sleep, the falling of the rain beat so heavily on the deck: but there was no wind. "Edward," said

she, "we shall have another hurricane! let us put in the dead-lights."—"There can be no occasion for them, my love," I replied; "we have no sea to encounter here; we are in a secure and protected harbour."—"Oh! I know," resumed she, tremblingly, "that it will soon begin to thunder and lighten, and blow a tempest; and it will be dreadful!"—"Well, but my own!" replied I, "we are safe; and you express more fear than when we really were in danger!" She sobbed. "You weep, Eliza," cried I; "what is the matter?"—"We have gone to bed, Edward," exclaimed she, "when most called upon, without praying to that God who hitherto has been to us a father." I felt the justice of the remark, and, embracing her with respondent tears, we rose upon our knees, and implored forgiveness and protection. We then lay down in peace: the rain continued to pour in torrents; and soon we heard the howling of the wind; but as it did not come in at the cabin windows, I concluded it was from the westward. Still, as the companion doors were open, and the cabin windows open, there was a thorough draft; and the rain beat through the cabin with the wind, and the candle was blown out. I got up and drew down all the windows in the cabin, and shut its door; and struck a light again with some difficulty, and, having relit our candle, I placed it on the floor, near to the cabin bulkhead, out of the way of any draft. I then lay down, but could not sleep: the wind howled tremendously; and I now feared every moment that the brig would break adrift, as it blew right ahead, and the ropes by which she was fastened to the rocks were very slender. At last, I could no longer continue in bed; therefore got up, and went forth to look out at the companion doors; but the wind and rain drove so furiously in my face, and, besides, it was so dark withal,

that I could see nothing. In this attempt, however, I was completely wet; and as I could not be more so, I determined to keep my station at the top of the companion ladder, until I had shut both the half-doors. That done, on coming down, I perceived we were all afloat in the steerage passage: still I gained by having closed the doors; for by excluding some of the noise from the storm above, our situation became more comfortable. I lost no time in putting on a dry garment, and sat down on a chair beside my wife's bed, in the state-room, the door of which opened into the cabin; and by its position with respect to the companion door, we had not felt either the wind or the rain, excepting in their terrific sounds. "Edward," said she, "you have again been sadly wet; take a little more hollands." I did not reject her advice, but took a second small dose of the captain's cordial, which I found very comforting. At length the rain ceased; but the wind, if we could judge by its roaring noise, blew more violently. I listened attentively to every sound, to distinguish, if possible, whether the ropes were giving way; and I got up from my seat several times, to endeavour to see from the cabin windows whether we were yet close in our harbour. I threw one of them open, to enable me the better to discover our situation; but I could discern nothing but the water, covered with a sort of phosphorescent light; it could not be from anything else, for the heavens were all darkness above. No rest visited our eyelids; and during this suspense, I may say agony, we remained till daylight, the dawn of which was indeed gladness to our hearts; it released us from all dark apprehensions of jeopardy; and our ease was completed, by discovering that we remained unmoved from our safe situation. The wind lulled; but the rain continued to pour down unceas-

ingly: I was glad, however, to throw open the cabin windows, for it had become very close and oppressive. On looking out, I could see little change in the usual scene around us: the wind had blown from the northward and westward; and as we lay under the lee of the sand-banks, the water was quite smooth beyond us, and nothing seen floating on it. My first business was to get a swab and an empty bucket, and swab up into it all the wet in the steerage passage and cabin. The rain had now ceased; I therefore set open the companion doors; and the windows of the cabin being already so, the thorough draft soon dried all below. When I went into the state-room to my wife, to tell her it was comfortable again, I found her sound asleep; and happy I was to see her so sweetly rest, after our anxious night. I watched by her; but she soon opened her fine mild eyes, and smiled on me. I kissed her serene forehead, and then both those sweet eyes, one after the other; and taking her by the hand, said, "Rise, my love, and let us pour out our gratitude to heaven."

The weather continued unsettled; and as we foresaw more squalls of wind, with rain, my Eliza remained in the vessel to prepare us a cold breakfast, and I set forth to see the state of our live stock on shore; and with much apprehension for its fate, to reconnoitre the plank-house that had cost me so much labour. I took some corn with me, and was glad to find the goats and fowls in the cave, and the ducks safe on its outside; there being a sort of ledge before it, which they could not ascend. I scattered some of the corn about, and in an instant a whole flock of pigeons flew down from the interior of the cave, and began to feed among the goats and poultry, the fowls now and then startling them from their feast by pecking them; but as no hostile hand had

ever been raised against them, they evinced no more fear of me than of the animals; and as they were older possessors of the island, I did not grudge them, on this occasion, a little share of what was going. I then turned my steps, to examine the plank-house: I was rejoiced to find it standing unmoved, excepting only two of the planks on the eastern part of the roof, which had been blown off, and were lying on the sand near to it. I did not stop to walk over to the western shore of the isthmus, on which the wind had blown with violence during the night; but hastened back to the vessel, lest my dear wife should be uneasy. I told her that all was well, but that it looked black around, so that we might expect more bad weather. She was feeding the ducks in the coop, when I came on board; and Fidele, her faithful squire, was helping her in the best way he could, by eating the bigger pieces of biscuit, such as he thought might choke the poultry. We now went down to our own breakfast; after which, we considered how to employ our time to the best purpose on board, as the weather would preclude our doing anything on shore; however, I thought it right to inspect the ropes, fastened from the brig to the rocks, and gladly found they had not been stranded in any part; the fact being, that the vessel was hard and fast in the sand, fore and aft, and was therefore immoveable. I next thought it well to take a spell at the pumps, and it was an hour before the pump sucked; so that I perceived I must not neglect this operation, but now and then pump as a duty. I then took the boards into the cabin; and having the carpenter's chest at my command, I resolved on employing myself in making the small table for the plank-house, while my wife occupied herself with her needle on a new pair of boot-legs.

During these home labours, the rain came on again in

torrents, sometimes with squalls of wind, and at other times with thunder; after which the water fell like a cascade from the heavens: but we now felt our security, so that we worked and talked cheerfully: we discussed our prospects, and all we planned to do; and it seemed as if our minds at this time were altogether engrossed with "bettering ourselves in life,"—that principle of action which follows man even into solitude. To dig, and to plant, and to sow, was the object now most prominent in our view, the ground being well soaked with rain. This induced me to talk over how and where I would put in the yams and coccos, sow the Indian corn, plant the fruit-seeds, and so forth; but, alas! one individual could accomplish but little of all this; yet resolution, and a good heart for my work, enabled me to perform more than could have been expected. My table needed not to be very elegant; so I got on apace with it, while Eliza worked as briskly at the boot-legs; and being only interrupted by our short refreshment, and now and then in listening to the storm, we kept on industriously till night; and finished our tasks together.

I took a look upon deck, before it was dark, between the rains, and saw the sky still more threatening. I shut the companion close, and returned below. We knelt down to prayer, and retired to our state-room to a sweet rest, we were so happy as to find, notwithstanding the increasing of the storm; during which we slept soundly, and arose at dawn perfectly refreshed.

Saturday, 12th.—This morning I again visited our stock, and plank-house; and found all well. We employed ourselves during the greater part of this day, the weather continuing bad, in various useful operations. Of necessity we had become our own bootmakers, tailors, sempstresses; but another occupation was now forced on

our consideration, the contemplation of which was certainly not quite so agreeable; viz. washing our linen! Eliza had never washed even a lawn cap, though some young gentlewomen, more dainty about their head-dress without, than what they put within it, consume no small time with starch and pinners; but my little wife had left all that to the maids; and, indeed, her delicate hands were quite unfit for the employment. I offered to manage the whole for her; but she said, "It was women's work, and therefore her duty." — "Nay," answered I, "we may here make customs for ourselves! We will then superintend together; and I will make two washerwomen, which you and I shall cause to do all the labour." — "Indeed!" said she, smiling, "if you accomplish this, I shall tell it as a real tale of the tub!" I laughed at her allusion to the Dean's allegory; and instantly, without explaining myself farther, set about planning my two wooden domestics. I kept in my mind's eye a battledore; and cutting one of board, then shaped another of the same material, rather less. When finished, I put the small one into her hand, holding the other in my own. "I will show you," said I, "how, on a smooth stone in the run of the spring, we can cause these wooden-headed damsels to beat our clothes as clean and cleverly as if they were the best laundresses in Bristol; and we shall then bleach and dry them in the sun."— "Excellent, dear Edward!" cried she; "I never should have thought on such an expedient."—"Nor I, perhaps," I replied, "if I had not heard that the people, in most hot countries, wash in this manner."

Towards evening it cleared up, and we were delighted to see a bright and tranquil sky. I hastened to make a fire on shore, that we might boil our tea-kettle. Eliza set the tea things on my newly-made table, as a compli-

ment to me; and I felt the attention kind, trifle as it may appear; but such are the pivots on which the happiness of married life depend. She saw I was pleased with what she had done; and with this little additional excitement to an habitual happy feeling, we sat down to our refreshing meal; and when over, disembarked, with Fidele.

The sand was firm everywhere, from the rain, so that we could have walked pleasantly without our boots. We looked at the stock, and passed over to the other side of the isthmus. The fountain was gushing impetuously into the brook it formed, whence it now ran like a small river into the lake. The ground I had turned up, and sown, appeared as I had left it; but, like all around, was quite soaked with the rain. The pine-apple top had been a little disturbed by the wind; but that I soon rectified. There was a good deal of sea-weed, such as sailors call gulf-weed, thrown on the beach, together with sea-fans, coarse sponges, reeds, and some shells; but we did not stop to gather any of them. I filled the canteen with fresh water from the spring; and taking a look at the cave, and its inmates, and also at the plank-house, we returned on board the vessel to rest.

CHAPTER VI.

Sunday, 13th January.—The dawn of day was auspicious; and we hastened on deck to greet the rising sun, whose glowing chariot rested on the wave, in all the gorgeous vision of diffusive radiance: his spreading rays lighting up the sky around; his bright beams, but newly born, gleaming on the waters; his cheering warmth, of which we had been some days bereft, gladdening our hearts. We watched him, slowly emerging from the sea, with joy and admiration: then raising our thoughts from this sublime image, to the mighty God who had created it, we gave praise and thanksgiving to the only object of worship, for all the wonderful bounties of his providence.

We dressed ourselves as usual for the Sabbath, and read the Morning service. When we went out to walk, we were amused with the various deposits on the beach, which the waves had thrown up during the tempest. Fidele, also, was busy at the water's edge, knocking about among the drift weed, and other things; and we observed him attempt to lay hold of something stirring there, but quickly jump away, and bark, and then return to the assault again. I took the pike from Eliza's hand, and, moving some of the weed, descried an immense crayfish; perhaps I should call it a lobster. It was in the act of devouring a fish that had been stranded by the storm. I thrust the end of my pike into the claw, which the creature held up as if in defence, no doubt against the menaces of the dog; and happy for him the crayfish did not catch him by the nose; for it instantly clutched the iron point of my weapon, and kept hold so firmly,

that by it I dragged my prize out of the water, safe upon the beach. This creature was well defended with spinous projections from its back and sides, and two large horns growing from its head; besides having two great claws, like those of a lobster, which crayfish ordinarily want. Fidele would have attacked this formidable enemy again, but my wife wisely caught the little Nimrod by the ear, and held him fast, while I secured our captive, by tying its claws with my handkerchief. We then returned to our ship, not a little pleased with our good fortune; and passed the remainder of the day in devotional exercises, and innocent amusements.

Monday, 14th.—The morning proved fine, and the weather appeared settled. We agreed now to land all the ducks; so we took them, eight in number, male and female, in two bags, up to the cave, where they were greeted by their two-feathered kindred, with loud and continued quacking. I left my wife there, to throw some corn to the stock, while I went back to the vessel for the table I had made for our wooden palace; and taking advantage of it to stand on, I replaced the two planks that had been blown from the roof by the storm. We then returned to the vessel; and while my wife got breakfast, I selected half-a-dozen yams, and two dozen coccos, which I put into a sack, and with my spade and an axe, set out to the cocoa-nut grove; my dear helpmate carrying a little basket with provisions, and her boarding-pike; Fidele following. The sand was firm, and the walking good all the way; so that we reached the spot in about half an hour, notwithstanding the burdens we carried, and the heat of the day, which, out of the shade, was rather too great to be agreeable. We set down our things under the shade of three cocoa-nut trees, that stood close together under the rocky part of the

ridge; and on a ledge of it we found a nice convenient seat. My first operation was to select, for cutting down, one of the trees on the south side of the grove, which were all laden with fruit of different sizes; and I chose the one that seemed most in the way of my plantation, for the quantity of fit ground at this place was very small. My axe being new, I soon felled the tree; and as soon as it drooped, Eliza was at my side. I cut off the cocoa-nuts, twenty-eight in number, which she undertook to carry one by one to the ledge, where our basket had been deposited. I now put off my jacket, and went to work with the spade, and was glad to find the soil tolerably good. I dug along the south side of the grove, the ground being best there, and clear of shade. In the course of my labour, I had to take up several young trees, from two to six feet high; and was pretty well fatigued by a couple of such hours' work. My poor dear wife had not carried above half the cocoa-nuts, before she was heartily tired too; and seating herself down on the ledge, under shadow of the rock, she spread out our frugal meal, and called me to it. I joined her at her summons; and after eating a little of what she had prepared, I split the husk off a couple of young cocoa-nuts; then piercing the nuts at the top, emptied their delicious milk into a tin cup she had brought in the basket. I tasted it, and handed it to her. As she drank, she every now and then exclaimed, "How nice! how cool! how delicious!" But she did not drink quite half, being anxious that I also should taste it, which I did, and quickly finished the remainder. I now cut the tops off the nuts, and found a soft agreeable substance adhering to the sides, which we scooped out and eat.

After these dainties, we had no desire for more of our salt beef and yam; so, being content for the present with

what we had taken, I proposed lying down on the rock, to repose for a while during the hottest part of the day. Eliza turned the yams and coccos out of the sack, and placing it under my head, I soon fell asleep, while she and Fidele kept sentry over me. I awoke much refreshed, and looked up with delight on the sweet eyes that were watching me as I slept. It was not time yet to go to work, the sun continued too intense; but the yams were to be slit in pieces, as we cut potatoes for planting; and while I was employed in doing this, my dear guardian angel and Fidele took their comfortable nap beside me. After the heat of the day had passed, I went to my spade again; and before evening, had turned up a long narrow strip of tolerable ground, on the southern margin of the grove, and had put in the cuttings of the yams at one part, and the coccos whole in the other. My wife, also, had brought melon and pumpkin seeds with her, and diligently sowed them wherever I directed as a fit spot. We thus finished the task we had appointed to be done, and were glad. But grateful satisfaction gave a further stimulus to exertion; and I set to cleaving the outer husks of half-a-dozen cocoa-nuts, putting the nuts into our sack. I emptied the canteen, on the spots where the musk-melon seeds were put in; and not choosing to lose any of our labour, bundled up some of the young cocoa-nut trees I had uprooted, and also gathering together the fragments of our provisions, trudged back to the plank-house, where we arrived a little before sunset. I was certainly very tired; but I would not go on board, until I had planted four of the trees round our palace—one at each end, to the east and west; and two behind, viz. to the north. The stars were out, when this last achievement was completed; and so wearied were we, that, without looking at our stock, we crawled on board, leav-

ing all our burdens in the plank-house. We took a cup of wine and water each, when snugly housed in our cabin; and, with a short but fervent prayer, retired to rest.

Tuesday, 15th.—I was very stiff in the morning, and my dear wife also acknowledged the effects of her fatigue; but we got up, and went upon deck, and with only as much covering as modesty required, underwent a good sluicing with sea-water, drawn up by a bucket; by which operation we were greatly refreshed, and instantly relieved from the stiffness produced by the labour of the preceding day. I dried myself, and dressed on deck; while she went below, and did the same. We walked up to the plank-house before breakfast, and intended visiting our stock, but we found it chiefly outside of the thicket, ready to greet us; and as there was neither door nor windows to close the house from their entrance, the goats and fowls had made free with the yams and biscuit left there in the basket last night. I could not now feel that my building was perfected, until I remedied this evil; therefore, when we returned on board to breakfast, and while my wife prepared it, I opened the main hatchway, and got up some laths; then taking the door off the captain's state-room, laid all in order for carrying them on shore, which we did soon after; neither Eliza nor myself making long meals. I nailed the laths outside the plank-house across the windows, at the distance of about four inches asunder, which piece of work I completed in less than an hour; and I then endeavoured to fit in the door, but it was neither high enough nor broad enough; so I was obliged to place a board erect, joined to one of the side-posts, by which means I narrowed the before open portal to exactly the size of the door. The hinges I nailed to the post, and then filled up the vacant

space above the door, with another slip of wood. This was all done by two o'clock; and my wife was as much surprised as she was pleased to see our palace, now a castle, into which nothing could intrude. Having so greatly improved our land residence, I felt disposed to do still more; and after dinner I put up a couple of boards for shelves within the house, on the side opposite the door; and I was myself surprised to find that this was effected in a few minutes; for I had only to push their ends between two of the planks that formed the eastern and western walls, and there was the shelf projecting twelve inches, firm and steady. I placed the two shelves eighteen inches one above the other, the lowest, four feet from the ground, which made the upper one five feet and a half in height. I was more pleased with this unexpected facility, than I can describe; and I now proceeded to make what would prove a seat, a settee, a bed, or a dresser; and this was accomplished as quickly as the shelves. I chose the west end of the building as best suited for the purpose, because the sea-breeze blew in at the opposite quarter; so, taking three planks, I thrust them through between the planks, from north to south, in a parallel direction, side by side; and thus formed a seat, or whatever else it might be used for, under the western window, in less time than I take to record it. The point upon which this great facility turned, was the planks being all of the same length, width, and thickness. I still went on, and laid six of similar dimensions, alongside, across the front of the building, which gave us a boarded platform the whole width of the house. I fastened these planks in their place, by driving wooden wedges into the sand at their extremities, and along the side of the outer plank. I had finished all this before sunset, and was quite triumphant at what

I had accomplished. My wife, meanwhile, made several trips to the vessel, and brought up many things from the lockers for kitchen and table use; and in her rummage, she fortunately found the tinderbox, with steel and flint, together with some matches and a roll of brimstone, all in a small canvass bag. This was a great acquisition indeed. She had stumbled over the crayfish in the steerage passage, where I had put it on bringing it on board; and which both she and I had forgot, in the hurry and bustle of yesterday and to-day's operations; but she placed it in the basket on discovering it, and brought it on shore, where it was soon consigned to the pot, to be in readiness for our supper. We next mustered the stock, and found them all present. After closing our palace, we returned to the vessel, taking out the crayfish from the pot on our way down: we eat but a small portion of it at supper, finding it rather strong while hot; however, we were otherwise well supplied, at least to our satisfaction; so, after returning thanks, we retired to rest.

Wednesday, 16th.—I employed the early part of the morning in placing some fragments of rock together, resting them against the foot of the promontory, so as to make a cooking place a little to leeward of the plank-house. Having accomplished it, I cut up some of the sticks and branches taken from the thicket, when clearing an avenue to the cave, struck a light with the tinderbox, and kindled a fire. My burning-glass and gunpowder were henceforth released from that duty; I therefore replaced the large lens in the spy-glass, and hung it up in the plank-house. The goats and poultry were moving about between our habitation and the thicket; and my wife threw them some corn: it was very pleasing to us, as we sat at breakfast, to see them thus domes-

ticated; enjoying themselves close to our door. The lamed goat seemed quite recovered from her accident; which induced me to undo the bandage, and take off the splints, by which we had secured the broken bone. They had been nothing but two bits of flat stick, we picked up on the cabin floor. Her ladyship appeared very big; and as goats go only five months with kid, we might soon expect an increase to our family.

I now put my pistols into my belt, and, with spade and hatchet, accompanied by my Eliza and her dog, set out for the clear land beyond the silk-cotton tree, to make a plantation there; for as none of the situations near to our abode were very good, I thought it advisable not to confine our roots and seeds to one place. My dear wife, as usual, took a basket with provisions, and with her pike for a pilgrim's staff, we proceeded on our way. While filling our canteen at the fountain, our always momentary halting spot, Fidele started an iguana, and presently killed it. This was an acceptable feat on the part of our little friend, for a fresh meal was a fresh spring of health. I deposited the creature under a fragment of the rock, and went on through the wood. On our way we observed several sorts of trees, all strangers to me; many of which were magnificent; others, less stately, but whose wide-spreading branches cast a delightful shade over our path. There were also many shrubs in flower; and we were delighted by the appearance of a beautiful little bird on vibratory wing, sucking the nectar from the bottom of one of them. As we approached the silk-cotton-tree grounds, the Indian fig, or prickly pear as it is called in Jamaica, grew in great abundance; the fruit of which appeared quite ripe, some being yellow, and some of a bright crimson colour. I was much disposed to taste them, but on attempting to

peel, or even to pull them, the spines or prickles with which they are thickly beset, forced me to desist. These figs grow round a projecting point of the promontory, that partially separates the woodland region from the silk-cotton-tree grounds.

From this spot we soon arrived at the great tree, and laid down our burdens at its foot, betwixt two of the large spurs; which extend from the trunk in such a way as to divide the space round it into compartments, separated by these spurs; some of which may rise four or five feet on the stem; gradually sloping down, as they diverge from it. Each was a snug corner, if I may so express it, for us to haven in: and we chose that for the present, which faced the open ground to the south. I stripped off my jacket, and fell to digging where I found the ground good, and not very shallow. Thus I continued for a couple of hours; but the sun by that time having full power, I ceased awhile, to rest and cool myself. I now became aware that all my work here, must be done early in the morning; seeing that the sun would shine upon the place until he set. I therefore gave up the idea of any more spade husbandry this day, and contented myself with putting in some pumpkin and melon seeds, where I had dug; and also the pips of oranges and limes, in spots here and there, on the skirts of the wooded region.

About one o'clock, we shifted our position to the north side of the cotton-tree; the shade there being complete: then, spreading forth the contents of our basket, we did great justice to the crayfish, by the help of a lime and a few capsicums. After we had dined, I felt unusually indisposed for exertion; and was not quite pleased with myself for the bad arrangements I had made for the day. My dear wife consoled me, by saying a thousand

agreeable things; and reminded me of my great exploit yesterday, and hard toil the day before; then she sung me my favourite little air, "Oh! how sweet the shady bower." The words were few, but the air and voice spoke of paradise; and in a moment I was cheerful and alert. "Thank you, beloved!" I said, "we will now return to the plank-house, and pick up the iguana on our way." But spying a couple of oranges she had brought in her basket, I proposed eating them then, feeling very thirsty. The fruit was grateful to us both; and not to lose time, I put in the seeds we had just acquired, on the north-east corner of the open space, at some distance to the eastward. I worked an hour; hoping one day to see the spot an orange grove. This done, we returned to the silk-cotton tree, to gather together our implements, and returned by the fountain to the plank-house; not forgetting to take up the iguana by the way. We found the goats and ducks near the spring; but they were not in the least disturbed by our approach.

Although I had actually laboured but little to-day, I was glad to throw myself down on the settee of boards with which I had enriched our wooden palace. The sea-breeze was blowing pleasantly through the interstices of the planks that formed the walls, and I felt much enjoyment in the position I had taken. My wife and her little dog were soon beside me; there was plenty of room for us all. She, poor child, complained of a weight at her stomach; and I also now began to think we had both eaten too much of the crayfish; so, under this impression, I got up, and made a visit to the captain's state-room on board, and brought a case-bottle of his hollands on shore. I prevailed on my wife to take a couple of tablespoonsful of it; and I doubled the dose for myself; after which medicine we felt better. As I

did not intend to make a custom of this sort of cure, I set the case-bottle on the top shelf. "There, Eliza," said I, jocosely, "neither you nor Fidele can reach so high, therefore it is safe." She looked archly at Fidele, and smiled.

Towards the afternoon we went on board, but I was not idle; I nearly filled a large bag with yams and coccos for planting, which I took on shore, and deposited under the plank settee. On my return to the ship, she had got all the fruit upon deck; and in two or three more trips, that also was transferred to the house; my dear wife carrying what she could. "I will now show you," said she, "how safe your cordial is;" so moving a chair, she stood on it, and taking up the bottle, pushed it quite into a corner, and smiled, saying, "Now hand me up the fruits, that I may place them all along the shelf, to keep guard over the prisoner." This was immediately done; and the pine-apples, the shaddocks, the musk and water melons, together with a great store of oranges and limes, made a goodly show above our heads; and, generally, they were yet in very fair condition.

I employed the remainder of the evening in preparing more yams for planting. Tea was our great refreshment at this hour; besides, it reminded us of our English home; and we did not hesitate to use it freely, as there was a good store of it in the cargo; as well as an abundance of sugar and coffee, nothing being required but a little labour to possess myself of these agreeable delicacies. After this reviving and consolatory beverage, the sun being set, we fastened up the house, and retired to our cabin on board, to finish the day in prayer, and the night in repose.

Thursday, 17th.—We set out at daylight in the morning from the vessel, and, calling at the plank-house, I

accoutred myself as on the day before, for my work. The goats and poultry were up, and out as early as ourselves, the cock crowing manfully at our approach: we threw them corn, and proceeded to the woodland plantation. On the way we were surprised and delighted by the cooing of doves, and the sweet notes of a bird like those of a nightingale: hitherto we had never been beyond the fountain so early in the morning, therefore could not have heard such before; but now we anticipated the pleasure we should derive from this lovely concert, could we ever be able to erect a residence near the silk-cotton tree. Our burdens were deposited at the foot of that gigantic tree, and I went to work heartily. The air was cool and pleasant, the birds continued singing, and the doves cooing, all around us: at a distance, beyond the open ground, the intervening part of which is somewhat elevated, we heard paroquets making a less melodious noise. My dear wife, now bold in enterprise, set out with Fidele to the summit of the rising ground, in hopes of seeing some of them; and when there, she could discern several, with green plumage, busily pecking the fruit which hung clustering from the tops of the palm trees far beyond her. I remained at my labour without interruption, for a couple of hours; during which Eliza and her dog skirted the wood opposite, and returned by the margin of the lake, without accident or adventure. She described it to me as clear and smooth, and altogether beautiful: she saw several fish close to the shore, swimming to and fro, and a few water-fowl, sea-gulls, cormorants, and divers. On her return, we were both ready for breakfast; after which I dug between the cotton tree and the lake, in a little dell, for another hour; and then, seeing I had ground enough prepared for my yam cuttings, put them in by eleven o'clock. Fatigue and the heat of the day then admonished me to desist.

We now sat down under the shade of the noble tree to rest. I had by this time learned from experience, and observation, that in the mornings at this season of the year, the silk-cotton-tree plantation was thrown into shade during three or four hours after sunrise; and that from eight o'clock A. M. until nearly five in the afternoon we were in shade at the plank-house; and between it and the vessel, close under the precipice, it was all shade nearly from sunrise to sunset. But the shadows were gradually shortening; and it was obvious that, as the summer advanced, these cool situations would become less and less so. The sun, by the middle of May, would be in the zenith at noon, casting no shadow all day, excepting to the west or to the east, as he passed through the heavens. Since our arrival on the island, the sun had not risen before seven o'clock, and had set between five and six in the afternoon: he would then rise between five and six, and not set until seven, which would be a long and hot summer's day. These were my reflections then, and they proved, as the seasons rolled over my head, to be nearly correct. I therefore had resolved to make the best use of my time, when almost every place to which I had occasion to direct my labour was shaded from the sun at some period of the day; and as this was the propitious season for agricultural operations, I was the more induced to profit by my experience and reflections: but my dear wife perceived I was working beyond my strength, and often pleaded with me to economise it, and take more care of my health, by avoiding such over-exertion. She now talked to me on the subject, and said I had already planted enough for future supplies; that we yet had a good stock of vegetable roots and fruits, and that the vessel contained flour and biscuit in abundance. I began to feel the necessity of yielding to her

wishes, for I had already become thin and rather weak, so that I at last resolved to take my labour easy, and make a pleasure rather than a toil of my occupations. Indeed, we both had become sensible that two or three hours of absolute rest in the middle of the day, would be necessary for the preservation of health in this climate; for although we were tolerably well, yet she as well as I had lost plumpness; and we were often languid (what I called "done up") from over-exertion. In this frame of mind, we were quite disposed to stay where we were awhile, and repose a few hours after our return to the plank-house.

After this indulgence, we visited the thicket and the cave. It was on this occasion that I discovered a few curious trees, about ten or twelve feet high, growing among the acacias. Large dry pods of a dark colour, not less than a full grown cucumber, adhering to their branches, attracted my attention: some of these had burst, the seeds of which were scattered on the ground. I picked up one of them, and, having bruised it with my teeth, was surprised to perceive that it was the cacao or chocolate nut. I collected as many as I could obtain, which might altogether amount to a quart. They were much smaller than any I had seen either in England or Jamaica; and I concluded this must arise either from their being uncultivated, or from the close shaded situation in which they grew. I, however, hoped to find some in more perfection in the woodland region. Our live stock were outside, so we had the cave to ourselves: it was quite light within, but we could not see any pigeons. "I will go and fetch the spade," said I, "and dig up some of the good soil which the birds have deposited; it will dress the roots of our young cocoa-nut trees. The sand in which they are planted round our

palace, is too poor for even their hardy nature to thrive in." Eliza sat down in the cave, while I soon filled and carried out a couple of basketsful for each tree; but in clearing away the manure near to the mouth of the cave, I dug up part of a soldier's belt, with a brass plate on it. This surprised us; I rubbed the plate with some sand, and thought I made it out to be Spanish. The discovery induced me to dig for an hour or two longer; but I found nothing more. However, I had collected a good deal of rich soil, which I shovelled into a corner, and we left the place. When returned to the plank-house, I put the belt carefully away, for some future examination; but meanwhile my wife and I ventured various conjectures about how it might have got into the secluded spot, where we found it: many were extravagant enough, and all, perhaps, wide from the fact; but one thing was evident, from its state, that it must have lain there a long time; perhaps a century. We now turned our thoughts to the more valuable discovery of chocolate nuts, which my Eliza proposed trying for our breakfast on the ensuing morning; and she accordingly employed herself in pounding the nuts on a stone with the back of a hatchet, laying a piece of canvass beneath, to catch the fragments. My occupation the while, was applying my pigeon-soil to my plantation at our palace. My young trees had drooped very little, the sand being yet damp at the depth they were planted. I exulted in giving them this excellent manure; and added a thorough watering, when I had so bedded them. It was now time for our evening repast; and we sat down on the wooden platform between the plank-house and the rock, with our table between us, each on a commodious chair, and our dear little dog in front of us, to our comfortable tea, in peace and quietness; perhaps experiencing more real en-

joyment, than the world's society, with all its blandishments, could bestow! If we were deprived of its pleasures, we were exempted from its vexations also; for is it not true, that nine-tenths of the evils of this life proceed from the conduct of the various persons with whom we are brought in contact? We reasoned thus on this subject, and felt the importance of the proposition I have stated: yet we had a sigh and a tear for those we loved, and had left behind in our native village: but there was no poignancy in our regrets; we still hoped some day to meet and embrace them again, through the mercy of that God whom we desired to serve in spirit and in truth. In this way we communed with each other, till the time for retiring drew near; when fastening up our palace, and seeing our dumb companions repair to their retreat, we too, serenely and happily, bent our steps towards the brig.

Friday, 18th.—All alert for our husbandry, we set off by day-break for the silk-cotton-tree plantation; our implements, bags of yams, coccos, and seeds, being my burden. My wife brought some of the pounded chocolate, to prepare for our morning's meal, while I dug up a rich piece of ground, I had discovered in the dell between the cotton tree and the lake. Having performed this part of my task, we sat down to our breakfast, which we much enjoyed: and therefore felt some little regret that we had not been able to find any cacao trees in our way through the woodland, though our eyes had sought them in every direction. "Edward," observed my Eliza, "there seems much confusion in this name of *cocoa!* For the great nuts with the milk are called cocoa-nuts; and the roots here, so like a potatoe, which you are going to plant, are also called coccos; and the nut from which we made this chocolate yesterday, is in England called

cocoa. I cannot comprehend how it should happen, that so many dissimilar things should receive the same name!" —"I can perhaps solve the difficulty, dear Eliza," replied I; "for I know the chocolate nut is not spelt cocoa, but cacao; and the root is spelt cocco. I suppose them to be all Spanish appellations, and if properly pronounced might be sufficiently distinctive." But being more intent on my planting, than the discussion of philological questions, "Tell me, dear," said I, giving a practical turn to the conversation, "did not we bring two large sugar-canes from Jamaica? what has become of them? They are not lost, I hope! for they would grow well where I have been just digging; and although there is plenty of sugar on board, yet I should like to make two or three cuttings from the canes, and put them into this ground. They might prove useful to others, if not to ourselves." She approved my intention; and, after our talk, I again went to work with my spade; during which, she cut the yams: and before noontide, we had planted a good space with both yams and coccos; and not a few pumpkin and melon seeds were put in, in various directions.

On our return home, I stopped at the fountain to wash the basket, that had been soiled by its employment last evening; and, as it was our only one, I was sorry to perceive it rather worn by the hard duty I had made it perform. "Never mind, dear Edward," cried my wife: "I am neither a king nor a queen, but I think I shall be able to show you that I can be a basketmaker; and I will soon replace it."—"Heaven's best gift!" I exclaimed: then taking her arm in mine, we proceeded to our deeply-shaded wooden palace; and there we reposed in the Spanish style for an hour or two, during the heat of the day; after which we amused ourselves, while sitting on the platform, with observing the happy liberty of our

dumb companions; the cock and hens dusting themselves opposite to us, almost burying themselves as they knocked up the sand with their feet and wings. At length I roused myself from this pleasant trifling. In truth, the mind as well as body becomes gradually subject to lassitude, and can only entertain itself then by what gives it least trouble. I, however, got up, and Eliza with me. Fidele was always on the alert, when we moved. And now reminding ourselves about the sugar-canes, we repaired to the vessel to search for them. After no small patience and investigation, we at last found them in the steerage. I also took thence a piece of rope, which I unlaid, and then re-made into a sort of plait, which sailors call gasket. With this I constructed two articles, to be used something in the way of a step-ladder. A fathom of this gasket-work, being fastened end to end, made one; and the other was like it. When both were finished, I told my wife, by the help of these facilities, I thought I could get down the cocoa-nuts without felling the trees for that purpose; and that on the morrow afternoon we would put them to the trial. She was quite delighted with the invention and idea; for, of all things, her kindly spirit disliked destruction of any sort, and especially when it was to be the price for only some personal gratification. For this, she regaled me with a pine-apple, that was becoming over ripe; the top of which we twisted out, with great care, for planting. It was now time to retire to our marine lodgings.

Saturday, 19th.—The early dawn found us on our way to our little garden of Eden, "to dress and to keep it;" and, besides our usual articles for the purpose, we did not neglect to take our pine-apple top, and three cuttings of sugar-cane (with two joints in each), to put into the rich ground I had discovered between the cotton tree

and the lake. Before ten o'clock, I had disposed of all these stocks of future progeny; and having so far succeeded to our satisfaction, we cheerfully retrod our steps, to recruit ourselves at the spring. My wife took her station on the fragment of rock on which we had first sat, with our faithful little dog beside us, and tasted that pleasant water with thankfulness to the good God who had brought us into such a haven. Fidele, too, seemed pleased in contemplating the scene of his first exploit with the iguana: and in this agreeable fellowship of past recollections, I left my two dear companions for a while; trudging away myself towards the rocky point that projects into the lake, to visit my earliest beds of melon and pumpkin seeds, which had now been more than a fortnight planted. I was delighted to see them all above ground; and called to my Eliza, to come and partake of my glad surprise. The sight of them, was like that of the first teeth of the first child to its fond parents—a subject of joy and exultation. I cleared the earth round them with the hoe; and then took a look at the first pine-top, to which I gave a little water, and secured the tops of the split shingles, which I had placed round in the form of a cone, to preserve it from the goats. This was necessary, for they, together with the ducks, were now almost always about the spring.

Before noon we adjourned to the plank-house, and were agreeably saluted there by the cackling of one of the hens, just strutting out from the thicket. "Thank you, madam," said I; "you have begun a good work: I understand you, and will soon endeavour to find the treasure you have deposited." My dear wife was much amused by my address to dame Partlet, and joined with me in the pleasantry. I lost no time in making the search; and after some time found the welcome egg, a

little on one side of the cave's mouth, in a convenient retreat, made by the fortuitous arrangement of some small fragments of rock. There was no reason for removing thence what we must yet consider as the nest egg, but the fear of one we never had occasion to doubt before—our useful and faithful little dog. We knew that dogs have as keen a relish for the delicacies of the hen-roost, as the best of us; and we did not like to leave open a possible cause for temptation, and therefore of displeasure towards our dumb and unwitting friend and companion. It was therefore resolved to bring the egg into the house, and place it in safety on a shelf, while I went to work with some shingles, and a few pieces of plank, to construct a house for our fowls to lay, and ultimately to hatch in. Eliza had gradually acquired courage in our situation; and she proposed going the while, with Fidele, to the margin of the lake, to gather some of the large reeds or canes which the late storm had driven on shore, and then try to make baskets of them. I did not oppose her, for there was no apparent danger, and she would not be far from me. She took her pike in her hand; and followed, or rather preceded, by Fidele, set off on her expedition. I had conceived the plan of my depository for our fowls, which I regulated in size according to the length of the shingles (about two feet long each): and with these, and a few pieces of plank, I erected a place on four props, about the size of one of the large chests of tea from China, in about a couple of hours. But before I had half finished, Eliza rejoined me, with nearly two dozen capital canes, or large reeds, which she laid down beside me in the cave, while she brought forth some beautiful shells she had picked up, that had been cast up by the late storm, and which she now arranged on a piece of board that lay near us. They were indeed

very perfect, and highly polished; and as she displayed them before me, she delightedly expatiated on the perfections of Him whose least works are so transcendently beyond all that man can do. "There is great vanity in human beings, Edward," continued she, "to suppose that all things were made merely to please and gratify them. O no! Think not, though man were not, the earth would want spectators—God want praise!"—"My darling Eliza!" I exclaimed, laying down the piece of plank I held in my hands, and embracing her; "O thou blessed angel! such were the beams of celestial light, which often thy much-loved father was wont to shed around him! May that God, whom thou dost so adore, spare thee, my love, long to comfort thy Edward, and once more to bless the eyes of thy revered parent!" We wept.

I completed my task more than an hour before sunset: but was too tired to fulfil my promise of trying my gaskets that evening at the cocoa-nut grove; so, after making up a nest in my hen-house with some dried grass, and fixing a piece of slanting board for the fowls to walk up to its entrance, my wife placed the egg within, and finished the operation by strewing some corn upon the board, to induce the hens to find their new retreat. We regaled ourselves with tea and roasted plantains, this evening; and felt peculiar delight in the retrospect of the day. Before we concluded our meal (which by the way we were in no hurry to finish, it being so pleasant in the open air upon the platform) our colony gathered round us: some corn was thrown to the poultry; and the goats received for their treat the thick rind of a water-melon we had eaten at dinner with our salted food. Poor Fidele had nothing but a bit of biscuit for his repast: we indeed, often wished for a little fresh provi-

sions, if it were only for his sake. I have known persons who would laugh at this feeling for the comfort and health of a dog; but I would not choose such persons for my friends. The sun set; and we all retired respectively to our resting places.

CHAPTER VII.

Sunday, 20th January.—Although it was the Sabbath, we arose with the dawn, and enjoyed our ablutions of sea-water; and after dressing ourselves, at least in clean attire, but observing our amended costume of conveniency, we left the vessel early for our residence on shore; there to breakfast, and perform our church service in the forenoon. It was the first Sabbath we had observed with prayer, upon the shores of that land on which we now stood; and we could not but be impressed with the merciful providence of God, who had preserved us from a watery grave, which now we firmly believed to have been the lot of our captain and all his crew. After reading divine service, we conversed on this awful subject; charging ourselves with great coldness of heart towards our heavenly Father; and also with something like indifference to the fate of our companions, as hitherto we had made no effort to gain the summit of the promontory, whence, by the aid of the ship's spy-glass, we might, perhaps, discover some trace of them; even the melancholy wreck of their boat, lying on some neighbouring shore.

These reflections stimulated us to undertake the ascent of the promontory, which was very steep; seeming, in truth, an absolute precipice. We, however, were presently accoutred for the expedition. I put the pistols into my belt on one side, and a hatchet in the other; slinging the spy-glass over one shoulder, and our canteen over the other. In my hand I took a boarding-pike, at once for defence, if needed, and for a walking-staff to help me on my way. My dear partner tied up a couple of oranges

in a handkerchief, and with her pilgrim's staff also, and Fidele running by her side, we set forward a little before noon, only stopping at the spring to fill the canteen; and as soon as the low rocks and brushwood would allow, we turned round upon the base of the hill, and there found the ascent not near so steep as we had supposed; but the shrubs, and small trees, and spine-pointed aloes, retarded my poor Eliza's progress so much, that I was obliged to pioneer at almost every step with the hatchet, and remove the lopped branches, as well as I could, with the end of my pike; for the thorns and prickles of some of the plants cannot be encountered with the naked hand: so that I soon found I wanted a bill-hook instead of a hatchet; and I was glad in remembering there were plenty on board: they are made for the purpose of penetrating thickets; cutting first, and by their hooked bill they then lay hold of the lopped branch, and pull it aside. We, however, contrived to struggle forward, though advancing but slowly. At one time, quite fatigued, we were about to return, when we were suddenly encouraged to proceed, by descrying at some little distance the opening in the back of our cave. After an hour's hard perseverance, we gained the spot; and were surprised at being able, with very small difficulty, to climb on some projections of rock, and look through the aperture, which became a somewhat long passage, directly into the cavern. I hallooed, expecting some pigeons would fly out; but we did not see one. "I doubt not they pass the noon in the woods," cried I. We now determined to return back into that shaded region ourselves, and seek another way of ascent in that direction; but by the time we descended the present side of the acclivity, we were so heartily tired; I with cutting and clearing away, and my poor wife, with scrambling and disentangling her

petticoats (which, although made short for the occasion, were still petticoats), we gladly sat down under the shade of a tree, when we got to the foot of the promontory, and there partook of an orange for refreshment. During our ascent, I was in constant apprehension of coming upon serpents, but I did not communicate my fear to my companion; and the fate of our little dog was also much in my thoughts, if such a rencontre should take place: happily we met none; and as nothing of the kind had been seen by us heretofore, I now ventured to hope (which proved true) that there were not any on the island.

We found ourselves refreshed, after resting awhile; and then proceeded, with a view of taking the height on this side of the hill; which stands forth as a boundary between the woodland region and the silk-cotton-tree plantation. Our goats, which had come round from the cave thicket, and to whom we had given the rind of our orange, seemed disposed to follow us as well as Fidele; but we drove them back, and caused the dog to pursue them for a few minutes, towards the spring. We now resumed our excursion, and made considerable progress up a wild ravine beset with the Indian fig, till it brought us to a very steep and rocky ascent, on which we observed shrubs bearing leaves like those of the palm tree, but much shorter and more erect. I could have managed to have clambered up this formidable pass, but it was not possible for my wife. Full of courage, however, she made the attempt; and not until she had severely hurt herself, by falling several times, could she be persuaded to give it up. We at length agreed to again measure back our steps, which we did leisurely; and as we rested here and there in descending, I put in the pips of our orange into various spots on the side of the ravine.

Having been out above four hours, and quite fatigued, we returned slowly to the plank-house, and lay down on the wooden settee to rest our wearied limbs. After a while, my dear Eliza, and her little dog beside her, fell fast asleep; and I, feeling myself sufficiently renovated, stole away to prepare her some substantial aliment. When all was laid out, and the table placed upon the platform, I awoke her with a gentle kiss upon her forehead, and led her forth to my little banquet. "How kind this is, dear Edward," said she, smiling sweetly on me: "it was my duty, not yours."—"You were too much fatigued, beloved," I replied; "I was only afraid of disturbing you before I had accomplished it." Fidele was not waked by a caress; but perhaps dreaming what was going forward, quickly joined his mistress, wagging his tail for a piece of beef, which he greedily devoured; it was not necessary to offer him drink, for he knew his way to the spring, and always scampered thither when thirsty. We were too tired to talk much, yet I could not but express my regret at our discomfiture. "Never mind, Edward; you made a resolute beginning," was her ready reply; "and by some other route we may succeed better." She always had a word of hope for me; and such to man is the great cheerer of life. Although extremely weary, we read a chapter from St. John, a divine companion in our transatlantic Patmos; and after closing our little land-house door, retired at an earlier hour than usual to our marine lodgings for the night.

Monday, 21st.—In the morning, finding our limbs very stiff, I proposed a good sousing with sea-water to remove it: it was instantly adopted, and it acted like a charm, perfectly refreshing us. After dressing ourselves, we walked the deck, enjoying the cool-air of that early

time of the day, and watching the sun rise above the eastern rock in glorious array.

On retiring below, we talked over our disappointment in not being able to ascend the promontory; not only that we might look around for our companions, but that we might acquire some knowledge, by the view, of our exact situation; for, as yet, we could not be certain whether we were on an island or the main. I therefore urged my affectionate wife to allow me to climb the height alone, but to this her fears for me would not consent. On this decision, I felt I had no resource but to make a path, little by little, so as to admit us to ascend together at some future time. A bill-hook being necessary to the undertaking, I opened the main hatchway, and soon found the case in which they were kept. I drew from it a couple; and as it occurred to me a plurality of spades and hoes would save me the trouble of carrying my instruments of husbandry from one plantation to another, I took out pairs of them also; and as the Indian corn which had been deposited in the steerage was now expended, I at this time got up a large bag of that article, by means of the winch; whose power enabled me to hoist it easily out of the hold. My next object was a bag of biscuit, which I also got on deck. We were glad to have this supply: our biscuit had been done for some days; and our poultry having begun to lay, we were desirous to feed them well; also to have some whole corn to put into the ground;—that which we had been using, having been all bruised, on purpose for feeding. We sat down in the cabin after my toil, and most thankfully breakfasted on some biscuit and Irish butter; in which Fidele heartily joined, for the poor animal had eaten nothing but salt beef and pork, for many days; and we finished this our morning repast, with some wine and water, which we found a very agreeable change.

As I had been sufficiently industrious to plant and sow as many roots and seeds as would produce as much provision as we could require of this kind for the season, and as there was no great hurry about putting in the Indian corn (there being so great a supply of it on board), I felt I might direct my attention and labour to some other matters that waited my exertions. We had felt the want of fresh provisions, and been tantalized almost every evening by seeing the mullet leaping almost within our reach about the point below the spring. This set me on my inventions how to contrive a small punt (a sort of flat bottomed-boat), and which, with the planks I had at hand, I thought might be easily constructed. My Eliza, however, evinced some scruples about its safety: — it might prove my coffin! I smiled, and soon succeeded in calming her fears: after which she amused, and employed herself, during that day, and in the two following likewise, by collecting and conveying on shore several things applicable to our comfort and conveniency. Meanwhile I got out some suitable plank, and other boards from the hold, and carried them, together with nails and other requisites from the carpenter's chest, to land also; and then set heartily to work to construct my punt—my dockyard being the slope of the beach, to the northward of the rocky point, and close to the water's edge. My little bark was thus made: — five of the planks, each being twelve feet in length and one foot in breadth, were laid side by side; and pieces of plank, four feet ten inches in length, were nailed across them, allowing one inch clear on each side; and in nailing them across, care was taken to leave an interval of two inches between each third and fourth cross-piece. Into each of these intervals, of which there were three, a cross-piece of the same dimensions was insinuated edgeways; which

necessarily fitted in tight, the planks being two inches in thickness. To the ends of these upright cross-pieces, the side-boarding was nailed, which was of elm; and being one inch in thickness, its edge just filled up the space beyond the extreme ends of the cross-pieces, and rested on the flooring of the punt: these boards were two feet in breadth, which I considered a sufficient height for the sides of my vessel: the stern part was formed by a five-feet cut of the elm board, placed nearly perpendicular to the floor of the punt; and the bow was made by cutting the side boards with a greater projecting slope, from below, upwards; beneath which another five-feet cut of an elm-board was firmly nailed across, and secured both here and abaft by inside cross-pieces and uprights. On the evening of the 23d my punt was put together; but it required to be caulked, before it could be launched.

Thursday, 24th.—I made a fruitless rummage in the ship for its deposit of oakum, to caulk the punt with; and, as a last resource, was about to set to, with my dear helpmate, to pick some large rope to pieces, and so make oakum of it, when I bethought myself of a place in the brig I had not yet explored, and in which it might probably be. This was the fore-cuddy, a sort of store-room for sails and other things, under the forecastle, and secured by a small hatch. I instantly repaired thither, and getting off the hatch, went down. A welcome sight greeted me, for I found not only oakum in a large bag, but a pitch-kettle, and half a barrel of pitch! I saw a bale of canvass, some spare sails, and a good deal of cordage; all this was a most useful discovery. I hauled up the bag with the oakum, and took it on shore; and then returning for a large and small caulking-iron, the mallet, and grease-box, I was set up, and intended to proceed to business instantly. Here my zeal had run a little before

the order of things; for I found the bottom must be caulked first; so I had to return, and get a couple of handspikes, to raise and turn my punt; for although it was only twelve feet long, and five feet broad, and two feet high, I could not lift it into the proper position by strength of arm alone; but with the handspikes, and the help of my dear wife, I soon succeeded in turning it bottom up. When this was accomplished, I then perceived that I must not only caulk, but pay the bottom with pitch, before I could proceed to work on the interior of the vessel; so back I trudged for the pitch-kettle, which was a large heavy iron porridge-pot: and in the getting this on shore, and a sufficient quantity of pitch for all the purposes, nearly the whole day was consumed; so that it was not till the following I could fairly commence.

Friday, 25th.—As early as possible I set about the caulking. I first made a fire, and put on the pitch-pot with its contents, close to the rock where I was to work; but for fear of setting my pitch in a blaze, I kept the embers low; and while it was preparing, laboured away blithely with my large caulking-iron; driving the oakum in, between the insterstices of the five planks that formed the bottom. I completed this part of the business before I was summoned to breakfast, and even payed the seams over with a good coat of hot pitch. After I had eaten this refreshing meal, by the side of my happy Eliza in the plank-house, she walked down with me to the punt, and manfully wielding one of the handspikes, while I lifted by hand, we turned our boat again over on her bottom. She was delighted with the idea of having rendered me an assistance, without which, I told her, I really could not have succeeded in this important object. I continued to work all day, but my progress became comparatively slow. I perceived I had some other carpentry

jobs to execute, which I had forgotten; like the man that built his house without a staircase. I had to place a thwart, for the rower to sit on, and pins for the oars, besides a seat towards the stern: so I extinguished the fire beneath the pitch-pot; not being able to pay the seams, till all the above was done. However, I completed the whole of the wood-work by evening, entirely to my satisfaction.

Saturday, 26th.—I finished the caulking before breakfast: and having put the fire again under the pitch-kettle, payed all the seams, inside and out, by two o'clock; and while the pitch was yet soft on the interior, I threw handsful of sand in every direction within the punt, so that the sand might mix and adhere to the pitch, which would in a great measure prevent it sticking to our clothes, I now went up to dinner; and after our usual repose during the heat, I walked my dear wife down in triumph, to see our work completed. I brought with me a piece of rope for a paynter to our punt, which I made fast to the bow. I then took a plank for a lever, and raising the end of the little vessel next the water, requested my helpmate to shove one of the handspikes under it for a roller. That done, I elevated the other end in the same manner, pretty high; and placing the other handspike beneath it, with a necessary force applied by the plank lever, the punt went off the handspikes cheerily into the water; and we felt great joy in seeing our little ship afloat. I wound the extremity of the paynter rope securely round a fragment of rock, and thus left our future fishing smack, exulting in our work.

"Now, Edward," said my dear wife, "you deserve a glass of good wine, and you shall have it." Indeed she had prepared me a treat, for on our return to our wooden palace, she set before me a shaddock, with biscuit, and a

bottle of wine; and I enjoyed it much, until nearly the close of day, which her agreeable conversation quickly beguiled away. I never can forget this well-timed and agreeable feast! the recollection of which, even now, gives me more delight than, perhaps, comes to the lot of some men to enjoy from their most elaborate pleasures. Enjoyment presupposes a capability; and there are many requisites to constitute that capability. Our dear Mr. Goldsmith often said, that "Satan can grant possessions; but enjoyment is the gift of God; and most especially the enjoyment of retrospection." The shaddock we had cut, was as large as the best melon that grows in England; its interior was a bright salmon colour, and its flavour was that of the orange, with the addition of an aromatic bitter, which rendered it highly grateful to the palate. We preserved its seeds in a little paper bag; several of which my Eliza had made during the last week, for such a purpose. In the course of conversation, my dear wife told me she had got quite a store of eggs, during the week; that all her hens were laying: but that they still continued to make their deposits in the original nest between the fragments of rock, though as soon as she found an egg, she removed it to the hen-house above. Her store consisted of ten. "Very well," I replied; "when you have secured a dozen, let the nest below take its chance: remove no more; perhaps Fidele wont touch them: and if he should, we have some to spare!"

The week being so well finished;—having, indeed, earned the promised rest, by "the sweat of our brow,"—we looked forward with thankfulness to the "day of rest," which the goodness of God had appointed; and without which, little as we may sometimes think of its importance, even the most diligent would become weary of the occupations of life; while a worse evil would be

the consequence,—such continued operation, naturally separating us, by estranging our thoughts, from that future state of spiritual existence for which man originally was created; and to secure which, our heavenly Father has never ceased to bring forward dispensations of righteousness and mercy.

Sunday, 27th.—We kept this Sabbath without intermixing with it any temporal anxieties. In sweet tranquillity of mind, we performed the service of the church in the morning; and in the evening read many chapters in Isaiah and St. John; recreating ourselves in the intermediate time by walking the ship's deck, where we had beneath us the ark of our deliverance. When night drew on, we retired to our cabin with unusual comfort; and awoke at the dawn, quite refreshed by an undisturbed sleep, and the rest of the Sabbath-day.

Monday, 28th.—Some laundry work was to be done to-day; so my wife, and I her helpmate on this occasion, repaired early to the spring, with the clothes for ablution: and pulling off our boots and stockings, and with our battledores in hand, whose virtue we were now going to try, we fixed on two smooth large stones in the stream, and went to our task. The running water, cleared the linen at every stroke; and by breakfast time we had prepared a good quantity for drying; each having taken an end of the heaviest articles, by twisting them contrariwise wrung them well. "There, my dame," said I; "as your lord and husband could not have turned the punt without you, so you could not have rinsed these sheets without him: our situation shows how much is to be effected by mutual assistance; and that, when it is rejected or refused, many useful things must remain unaccomplished. To such a lesson, at least, is the tendency of God's providence in the order of his creation."—"God is good, and perfect

in all his ways, my dear Edward," she replied; "but man is too often wise in his own conceit, and therefore proud and ruinous of his own comforts." This dialogue was worthy of the pupil and the daughter of William Goldsmith: we did not find that the tone of our minds was lowered by the menial occupation of washing in a brook. We spread out the clean linen on the sands to dry; and then walked up to the plank-house, to take our usual morning repast. That over, we returned briskly to work again, and, in a couple of hours more, finished our labour. My Eliza was then very tired: I took her arm in mine, and led her back to the plank-house, and made her lie down on our friendly settee, to repose. I repaired, meanwhile, to watch the clothes, lest the sea-breeze should blow any of them into the lake; but I also employed myself in reconnoitring the punt, which I found afloat, without having leaked one drop of water. It was my next business to make a couple of schulls, or small oars; and having previously provided two pieces of lancewood, about six feet long each, I fell to work with my hatchet, and an adze, and contrived to give them a right shape by two o'clock. The linen by this time was dry; so I bundled it all up in a table-cloth, and carried it to the plank-house, where I found my Eliza, with her constant attendant Fidele, fast asleep. I would not disturb her; and, as she had not had anything but cold salt beef for some time past, I thought of surprising her with something like a pepper-pot, a favourite dish in Jamaica; and putting on a stewpan, with a due quantity of meat, and a few of our vegetables, with capsicums, and other seasoning at hand, I produced what I hoped might prove a savoury mess. When it was done, and placed upon the table, I waked my dear wife in my accustomed way, and led her smiling to the repast I had

provided. "Dear, kind Edward!" exclaimed she, surprised, and pleased as she sat down. She praised my pepper-pot highly: and much as I might be disposed to think well of my own work, I fancied every mouthful better and better, after every word of her commendation.

We enjoyed ourselves in the cool shade of our position, for an hour after our meal, conversing on various subjects; which I shall pass over without special notice, although there might be some remarks to chronicle, not altogether unworthy of attention: but as most people become tired in listening to other people's talk (though they seldom do in attending more scrupulously to other people's actions), I think it may be more acceptable, even to our nearest kindred, should they ever see this diary, to note down rather what we did than what we said in the extraordinary situation in which we found ourselves placed; and I will endeavour in future, though I fear hopelessly, to adhere to this good resolution. However, I shall stand excused, I suppose, in the present instance, for detailing a few last words, just as we rose from table; as thereby envy may be propitiated, and cease to regard us with an evil eye, seeing that the happy pair could quarrel, or at least make a beginning to do so. As the evening drew to a close—"Now for some mullet, my love!" cried I, rising from my chair. My wife smiled. I knew it was doubtingly; for I could ever read her mind in her look. "Well, we will try," continued I. "That is wisely said," she replied; "but you are always ardent, dear Edward; and such a feeling can only be reined in by experience."—Now, dear Eliza!" I rejoined, more pettishly than I ever before or since remember, "what can you know about experience, at least in catching mullet?" I saw the tear come into her eye: I felt what I had done; and I lost not a moment to throw

myself on her neck, and kiss from her cheek that hallowed drop which I had caused to fall there. The cloud passed away, and the sun of peace smiled forth on us again. We walked to the cave, to see our poultry; and sauntered about until after sunset, feeding our stock as they came home, and amusing ourselves in various ways, until the soft twilight vanished; which in this country, at any season, is very short. We then went to the beach, where I struck a light, and kindled some fuel. I next drew up the punt, and placed a tin baking-pan on the bow, with some oakum and rotten wood in it, to which I set fire. I took the two rough-made oars, and was about to shove off, saying, "Now for the attempt!"—"Nay, dearest," she cried, "you shall not go without me; for I do hope you will be very successful." She stepped in, and sat on the seat astern. I rowed out well and pleasantly for twenty or thirty yards, and the mullet began to leap at the light soon after we had shoved off. They came down literally a shower, and many fell into the boat, on me and on her; and one of them fairly dropped into the baking-pan, beating about till we landed; so that in five minutes we returned to shore, and found nine fine fish in the punt, beside the more adventurous fellow close to our torch in the pan. "I prayed for your success, my honoured husband," said my wife, as we landed; "I should have been very unhappy, if it had fallen out otherwise, after my unkind behaviour to you on the occasion."—"No, my love," I replied, "you were not unkind; your admonitions are always conceived in kindness and in wisdom; it was I that betrayed an unbecoming peevishness: but all is well again, and the demon of discord is disappointed in his aim." We sealed our affection with a tender embrace: and knowing there were no thieves to purloin our fish, we left them in

the punt; and, repairing to our palace, fastened its door, and retired to our ship, and to sleep.

Tuesday, 29th.—We arose as usual with the day, and went to our abode on shore. My dear wife's object was to "get up our linen." She had taken out flat-irons with her for our household at Belise; and our wooden settee, with a blanket thrown over it, making a good ironing-board, she soon set to work like an experienced laundress. While she was so employed, I brought up the fish, and displayed them before her: some were much larger than others, and are called calipeavar in Jamaica. We were gratified by the sight of fresh, and therefore more wholesome, food; but she more especially, since it was procured by my exertions: yet it was evident, in this hot country, we could not eat them all before some would spoil; and though it was but yesterday we regretted not having any, now we lamented having so many, being a useless waste of life. I, however, took them to the spring; and after preparing a couple for dressing, replaced the rest in the basket, leaving them under the shade of the rock, in the cool water at the spring head, but putting a few stones on them, to prevent their being floated away. I roasted the two for our breakfast, which we relished much; and Fidele, too, partook joyfully of our repast: indeed all the family, with the exception of the goats; so that there was not a fragment left. When the meal was over, and I had returned thanks, as was our usual custom and duty so to do, my dear wife came round behind me, and, leaning on my shoulder, kissed my forehead. I looked up, and blessed her, for the tear stood in her eye: it was the heart that shed it. "Sweet angel," I whispered, in a subdued voice, and pressed her to my bosom; "more dear to me than ever; we can never be unhappy: thou art all goodness, all gen-

tleness; and I the most favoured of men." We wiped the tears from our eyes, which, unwittingly to ourselves, had escaped them, and rose, I taking her arm in mine. We walked towards the beach, to bring back our feelings to their ordinary tone. The remainder of the day was passed by her in ironing, while myself made employment near her by constructing some necessary carpentry additions to our wooden palace. Our dinner, like our breakfast, was fish,—the excellent calipeavar boiled, and eat with lime-juice and bird-pepper. God's bounties were always like a sacrament to my Eliza; for she found in them all something more than food,—indeed, a verification in her own bosom, that His children "do not live by bread alone!" When we had finished our repast, "My dear Edward," said she, gathering up the small seeds of the bird-peppers, which were red ripe, "we must plant these, and also the seeds of the capsicum; we ought not to waste anything."—"True," I replied; "and they are of great use to the stomach in this relaxing climate."—"Indeed, it seems," returned she, "that in every country there are found fruits and spices most appropriate. Mustard and horse-radish are the natural spices of England; so bounteous is Providence to the peculiar wants of his creatures: and I confess, that here I give the preference to the capsicum and small peppers."—"We will sow some of them this very evening," I replied, "and at the cocoa-nut grove. There I shall also try our gaskets; my success with the fishing having put me in high hope for that exploit."

While we were talking, Fidele had run off to the spring to quench his thirst, after his share of our feast, and came back, frisking about in an unusual way; which we observed, being amused for some time, till we perceived he wanted us to go with him. Eliza rose; and

on my doing the same, he ran before us, then came back, and then went on, playing gently forward, till we arrived at the fountain, and there we saw the object of his attention,—our lame goat, with two young kids at her foot. We were delighted at the sight, and almost as much so with the sagacity, nay, something like sympathy, of our dear little dog. While we gazed on the new-born creatures, he fell to lapping the stream; so that we really were induced to believe he had not even stopped to drink, when he descried the goat with her young progeny, till he had run back to bring us the tidings. My dear wife hastened to our house for some plantains to give the mother; and as the goat and her kids were on the further side of the brook, I took up the little ones, and brought them across. When my Eliza returned, she fed the old goat from her hand, while I held the kids; and then we proceeded with them up to the cave; the poor animal following, and eating all the way. I deposited them within, leaving plenty of food near the mother for her sustenance. We were highly gratified by this expected event having terminated so propitiously; and, mutually congratulating each other, left our old lady to her nursery.

I then took a spade, a hatchet, a sack, and my gaskets; and my dear wife being armed with her pike, and with her loins girded to make her petticoats the shorter, we set off for the cocoa-nut grove, distant about a mile and a quarter. On our arrival, we were glad to see the melon and pumpkin seeds we had planted a fortnight ago, well above ground; but there was yet nothing appearing from the yams or cocco. I found little or no weedy herbage to clear away from around the plants; but what there was, I removed with the spade; which, however, I thought might be more conveniently done by a hoe. That finished,

I deposited the spade under a shelvy rock, that stood about twelve or fourteen feet high, to the eastward of the grove. "Now, my love," said I, "we will try what we can do with the gaskets." She owned afterwards she was afraid I should fall in attempting to climb the tree; but she waited patiently to see whether there was any real danger, before she expressed herself by more than a look of solicitude. In perfect silence she watched me take one the gaskets, and pass one bight through the other round the tree, so that the depending bight made a stirrup at about three feet from the ground; into which I put one foot, and stood steadily, having one arm round the trunk of the tree above; and then placed the other gasket in the same way, a little higher, into the stirrup of which I set the other foot; then loosing the lower gasket, moved it above, making a third step upwards; then again loosing the other, and placing it uppermost; and so on. I ascended easily, and without danger, to the great thankfulness and rapture of my dear Eliza. Having gained the top, I took my hatchet from my belt, and, desiring my wife to keep out of the way, I lopped off the foot-stalks of the cocoa-nuts with little difficulty, and in a few minutes detached twenty-three of them. This being done, I quickly descended, and felt quite disposed to exalt myself on my prowess; but my too partial wife left me no occasion to do so; she now, as ever, said all that self-love could most earnestly desire. We now threw the cocoa-nuts towards the rocky ledge (our accustomed spot of refreshment here), where we sat down, and I proceeded to cleave off the husks with my hatchet. The first I detached, I opened, and gave her the milk to drink, which she pronounced delicious: I regaled myself with the second: but we did not eat the soft pulp, although it was highly inviting; for recollecting we had taken a fish

dinner, we were afraid of disordering our stomachs. While I was clearing the husks from the other nuts, she engaged herself in sowing the pepper-seeds in various little patches of good soil found amongst the rocky fragments of the ledge, and I saw with pleasure that the spots were well chosen. Having detached twenty-one young cocoa-nuts, besides the two we had used, I put them in my sack, with four old ones that had fallen from the trees, still in their husks, and which were beginning to germinate; then throwing my sack on my shoulder, we turned homewards, full of satisfaction with the success of our expedition.

The sun had set before we left the cocoa-nut grove, and the stars were out by the time we arrived at the plank-house, where our simple supper was set on the table. We lingered over it, enjoying the tranquil hour, as we had nothing to dread, and well knew our way on board; and, as not a breath of wind was stirring at the time, I lighted a candle, to enable my dear wife to read a small portion of Scripture, which she desired to do. This pious exercise, however, was soon interrupted by a swarm of sand-flies, which tormented us to such a degree by their bites, that we were forced to decamp, and retire to our ship; which we gained without any accident, and found in our cabin a night of happy and uninterrupted repose.

Wednesday, 30th.—We paid our compliments early this morning to the two young strangers, and their mother; we met her bleating at the mouth of the cavern, appearing rather distressed; for the kids could not follow her down the rocky step, which formed a natural threshold. Notwithstanding the noise she made, the wild pigeons, unscared, were pecking away, along with the fowls, at the corn scattered on the floor of the cave;

neither did any of the party move a wing at our approach, and we were not disposed to disturb them. It was rather a mystery to us that they were sometimes to be seen, and sometimes not; we therefore supposed they only took up their night's lodging in this spacious cavern; but whether they built their nests there, or in the woods, we could not yet determine. I guided the kids down to their mother, and she immediately led them amongst the thicket. My dear wife stopped me here, to look at her collection of eggs. She had completed the deposit above, to twelve; besides two more, freshly laid ones, in another corner; and there were eight in the nest below, which we were glad to see, as it proved that at least more of the pullets had begun paying us this welcome tribute. Trifling as these things would be at our English home, in our solitude they were objects of the first importance.

I now proposed our losing no more time, wishing to proceed immediately to our plantation business at the silk-cotton tree. All my requisites were bagged, and at hand for conveyance; and she had only to take up her basket with refreshments, and a small bundle of her reedy canes, to try her skill in constructing another like it. The sea looked so placid, and the air was so sweetly fresh, I expressed a wish that she would venture along shore in the punt. She consented with alacrity, and first stowing our separate burdens safely in its bottom, I then seated her securely; and our little dog, without any hesitation, leaped in after his mistress. The water was perfectly smooth, and the punt rowed lightly on its surface. From the point, to the sandy beach below the silk-cotton tree, the distance was about the same by water as by land, taking into the account the rounding of the rocky point just after starting; and I suppose we got to the cotton-tree beach, in about the same time we should

have done had we walked. Fidele was first on shore. I then handed out my wife; and, having put out our things, I drew the punt a little further along, to where the beach becomes rather elevated and rocky; and so it extends to the south-west, for nearly a quarter of a mile; which constitutes the range of cliff that, towards the sea, is the border of the open space to the southward of the silk-cotton tree;—the situation where we hoped at some future time to fix our residence. We did not go up to the great tree, but made our head-quarters under a shelving rock on the beach, now in shade; and while I went to work in the dell, my wife commenced her basket. I laboured for about a couple of hours. Having first marked out points, at about a yard distant from each other, by placing a stone on each, where I dug deep and well round, in the diameter of about a foot; in each of these places I deposited two grains of Indian corn, until I had planted twenty-four points. I then walked down to the beach, and found my dear wife rather perplexed in shaping her basket; but I encouraged her, as she had often done me on former occasions; and with smiling faces we sat down to a breakfast of biscuit and the milk of cocoa-nuts. That over, our next task was to sow some shaddock-seeds, for which we chose the ground above the silk-cotton tree, and not far from the spot where we had put in the orange pips, to form a future grove. We were thus busily employed, when Fidele ran barking into the brushwood behind us (above which towers the promontory that separates this place from the woodland region), and in a few minutes he killed an iguana. We could not see the feat; but as he ceased to bark, and yet remained in the bushes, I concluded he had slain his game; and therefore endeavoured to make my way to him; but the thicket was so dense I could

not. So I took my hatchet from my belt, and began to clear away the obstructing branches. His mistress, meanwhile, called him, and he came out; but he immediately ran back again, and kept watch within, until I had reached the place where the iguana lay. There I found my gentleman standing crowingly, and wagging his tail. The prize was welcome; but it led to a discovery much more so: a small spring streamed, as from a ewer, down the rock, out of a little cavity in its side, about four feet beyond where I stood, and near to the foot of a fine cabbage-palm. I cut a passage to it through the underwood; and my dear wife, malgré her petticoats, gladly worked her way to the spot: by my assistance she got up to the little basin in the rock, over the edge of which the water ran in a clear slender rill. We tasted it, and found it sweet, cool, and pleasant; and we rejoiced at the discovery; for we had now a fountain at each of our places of most sojourn. Much time had been thus unexpectedly consumed; and the day having become too hot for labour, I picked up the iguana, and leaving my spade between the spurs of the great tree, we returned to the beach. Although the sea-breeze had set in with much force, yet the sea itself being there under the lee of the land, the water was perfectly smooth; so that we journeyed back in the punt as comfortably as we came. On landing, my dear helpmate would assist me to moor our boat; after which, we walked to our old friendly fountain, where the mullet lay, and brought away a couple; which we carried with the iguana to our plank-residence. We thought it a pity to dress so much for our dinner; but we did not like to waste the fish, which was barely tolerably fresh; and as no animal substance will keep well twenty-four hours in this climate, it appeared to be compulsory on us to make a grand feast to-day.

The iguana was stewed in our usual way, and the mullet roasted: we eat them, with yams for our vegetable, and wished for more mouths to partake of this rich bounty to us! We gave a sigh to our poor shipmates, who, if alive, might at this moment be dying of hunger. The fish was yet eatable, from the cool situation in which it had been deposited; but as the rest in our little dépôt would not be fit to-morrow, I determined to bury the remainder as a manure, and to that end I dug four holes at different distances, half way between our palace and the lake, into which I threw the remaining mullet, with a little sand over them; and there I planted the four germinating cocoa-nuts we had brought the evening before from the grove. I defended the spots from our browsing companions, by circles of split shingles.

All this accomplished, I sat down to assist my dear wife in her first essay at the basket; and, as we had agreed to be content with a rude fabric, there was no great disappointment in finding that even our united efforts made but a bad job of it. I now began to think a good basket-maker no despicable personage in society. However, the old basket was yet serviceable, and, besides, would be, if carefully preserved, a model to work by. We regaled ourselves this evening with a melon instead of tea, and enjoyed ourselves till sunset, talking over the occurrences of the day; among which our aquatic expedition gave occasion to speculation of more extended voyages; and the discovery of the little spring near the silk-cotton tree, led us to build our airy castle with great magnificence, on the rising ground beyond it; and, as the punt could convey the materials, the probability of realising our vision, became somewhat more apparent; but the execution, was necessarily put off sine die, as it is expressed; that is, without fixing a time; or perhaps as

it sometimes honestly means, to the end of time. Which of these occult imports were in the meaning of destiny to us, time only can develope. We now finished the day by seeing our live stock safe in their retreat; and, not choosing again to encounter the sand-flies, we fastened our door, and bent our course to the vessel, and to rest.

Thursday, 31st.—Every day seemed to bring its work; and when that is not too laborious, employment is the happiest condition of man. It is told of a religious recluse, who, in the early ages of Christianity, betook himself to a cave in Upper Egypt, which, in the times of the Pharaohs, had been a depository for mummies, that he prayed there, morning, noon, and night; eating only of the dates which some neighbouring trees afforded, and drinking of the water of the Nile. At length the hermit became weary of life, and then he prayed still more earnestly. After this duty, one day he fell asleep, and the vision of an angel appeared to him in a dream, commanding him to arise, and cut down a neighbouring palm-tree and make a rope of its fibres, and, after it was done, the angel would appear to him again. The hermit awoke, and instantly applied himself to obey the vision. He travelled about from place to place many days before he could procure an axe, and during this journey he felt happier than he had been for many years. His prayers were now short and few; but what they wanted in length and number, they outmeasured in fervency. Having returned with the axe, he cut down the tree; and, with much labour and assiduity during several days, prepared the fibres to make the rope; and, after a continuance of daily occupation for some weeks, completed the command. The angel that night appeared to him as promised. "Dominico," said the celestial visiter, "you are now no longer weary of life, but happy. Know then,

that man was made for labour; and prayer also is his duty: the one as well as the other is essential to his well-being. Arise in the morning, take the cord, and with it gird up thy loins, and go forth into the world; and let it be a memorial to thee, of what God expects from man, if he would be blessed with happiness on earth." We arose as usual with the day, and made an early voyage in the punt to the beach below the great tree; and there I dug the ground, and put in twenty-five double plantings of Indian corn, contiguous to the former. After I had finished my work, we scrambled into the brush-wood, where I cut several lengths of a sort of withy or bamboo, to assist us in making our baskets; the reedy canes thrown on the beach by the storm, having proved rather brittle when too much bent. This little extra task finished, we returned by water. When arrived at our palace, we were glad to rest ourselves on our couch of plank, which to us was softer than down, for we were tired.

After reposing an hour, my dear Eliza spread our table with the residue of the iguana, which she warmed, adding a few coccos roasted. Meanwhile I employed myself in reconnoitring our stock; which I brought all round the door, with the assistance of our little dog. During our dinner we gave them food also, for it was my kind-hearted wife's wish to accustom them to expect something at our hands at our usual meal-times: and it was quite cheering to us, to see them happy around us: and the two innocent little kids, particularly interested her. In the midst of our enjoyment, she discovered that one duck was missing; and I proposed an immediate search; but the wise woman thought it probable the truant might have made a nest somewhere, and if so, it were better not to disturb her ladyship, by hunting about

after her; therefore I let the matter rest. Having finished dinner, my industrious Eliza, with the old basket for a pattern, made the framework of a new one; and I, never so happy as when employed near her, began to plan a fish-pot, to be made with some of the cane-reeds and bamboos. It was to be constructed like two wire mouse-traps, with their broad nether extremity joined, but without any division between them. A wicker-door was to be in the middle, to put in the bait, and to hand out the captive fish; the trap-holes at the smaller extremities being made large enough for a good sized fish to enter; and the whole machine was to be about three feet and a half long. We wrought emulously on until sunset; and, as we worked, we talked over our discomfiture in attempting to gain the summit of the promontory, and finally resolved to dare it again to-morrow, commencing at the very dawn of day. Our work being now put aside, we packed the basket ready for to-morrow's expedition, and then retired on board for the night.

Friday, 1st February.—Our meditated enterprise was the awakening dream of the morning. Before the day broke, we were planning our ascent over all difficulties; and perhaps our having failed in the preceding attempt added a circumspection to our present zeal, without which nothing of importance can be accomplished. We arose with the gray of the morning. My wife accommodated her dress to the occasion: the former essay having taught her that petticoats were incompatible with such achievements, she dressed herself à la Turque; that is, adding to her canvass boots a pair of trousers, and a dimity bedgown, that came half way to her knees; girding her waist with a sash, composed of two or three yards of red bunting, of the narrow breadth of which the ensigns of ships are made. With this well-contrived raiment, and

a small turban of muslin, and red bunting, on her head, to save it from the sun,—thus attired, with her pike in her hand, and her little dog at her foot, we landed, and walked up from the vessel. I brought a musket on shore, with half a dozen rounds of ball-cartridge; and, calling at the plank-house, took with us the spy-glass, an axe, and a bill-hook, some seeds, and the basket which we had packed last night with refreshments. I also swung my canteen over my neck, which we filled at our spring, and then embarked in the punt just at sunrise. After rounding the rocky point, I rowed along shore; and passing our place of landing below the silk-cotton tree, kept on, under the cliffs, for about a quarter of a mile: the beach, then unobstructed by rocks, reappeared, which continued for about another quarter of a mile, running out into high rocks. Just where the fine beach terminated, we concluded to go on shore, and attempt the ascent, a break appearing in the side of the mountain. We here drew up the bow of the punt, and secured it by the paynter to a tree, and landed our things, removing our basket to a shady place further from the beach, on our way through the trees to the foot of the acclivity. We then set forward, harnessed, as I have before described, in my own necessary accoutrements, not forgetting my bill-hook in my belt. I gave the axe to my wife to place in her sash, having her pike for her staff, and Fidele her constant follower. We began the ascent. To make so much parade about surmounting a hill not six hundred feet high, may appear ridiculous; but there were some real obstacles to remove, and many imaginary difficulties and perils to encounter. We were in the dark as to our way, and the dark always magnifies danger.

We found paroquets numerous in the trees, feeding on the yellow fruit of a species of palm. I would not kil

any of them: we had not taken life from any creature unnecessarily, since we set foot in the island, neither had a shot been fired, to awaken alarm in any of the feathered tribe. We pursued a tolerable path for a short time with little interruption through the wood, which brought us to a very steep acclivity, overgrown with dwarf palms: we were encouraged to cut our way up this height, as the hill above it seemed to split, showing a rocky face on the north. My wife sat down under a tree near the commencement of the ascent, where I deposited the musket, and went to work with the bill-hook, clearing a narrow passage through the dwarf palms; among which there was here and there an aloe, with its extended leaves pointed by a strong thorny spike. It cost me two hours' hard labour to cleave my way, and cast the cuttings aside, through a space not exceeding thirty yards. My kind Eliza often showed her sympathy in my exertions, by calling out, "My dear Edward, I wish I could help you." At length she started up, saying, "I shall be with you again presently;" and, after a while returned with the basket of our provisions, which had been deposited between our present station and the beach. I was not insensible to this act of consideration; and, thanking her as I ought, desisted from my work, and joined her under the tree, where she was spreading out our cold collation. We eat heartily, and with thankfulness; and, being satisfied, replaced what was left in our basket, to await our return: then proceeding in Indian file, that is, one after the other, to ascend the steep, we clambered to the summit: from hence I had to cut a path through its thickly-wooded brow, rather downwards and slanting, into the ravine; the bottom of which was covered with fragments of rock, fallen from the precipice above. At about eleven o'clock we got fairly into the ravine, with

high cliffs to our left, and a steep hill, covered with dwarf palms, to the right. We had now only to take care not to fall nor stumble among the stones and fragments of rocks, that were scattered everywhere. We were proceeding slowly and cautiously, when Fidele ran aside, and began to bark: I anticipated an iguana, and stood still, expecting to see him turn it out and kill it. A living beast, but not an iguana, certainly came forth from between the broken masses, which the dog endeavoured to seize, but could not; he, however, soon turned the creature over, for it was not much larger than the iguana. I would not fire at it, although we did not know what it was. It made a noise when the dog approached it, something between a grunt and a squeak: I thought it time, however, to succour our little friend, who had commenced a second attack on the animal; so I scrambled up to the scene of contest with my bill-hook, and found the poor nondescript rolled up like a hedgehog, but having the appearance of a tortoise. I could not strike a creature in such a passive attitude; and, waiting until my dear wife could make her way to us, I asked her what I should do with it. "Don't hurt it, Edward," she exclaimed; "it is a poor harmless armadillo: I have seen its picture in a book." We then agreed to tie it up in a handkerchief, and take it home. I accordingly made it safe, but found it very troublesome to carry, it being about twelve pounds' weight; I therefore hung the handkerchief on the branch of a tree, that I snubbed off short for the purpose, meaning to stop for it as we came back. We then pursued our scrambling way up the ravine. After ascending through this cleft for about a quarter of a mile, we came out on a smooth barren surface, a considerable height, being on both sides of us, and before us; and in half an hour more, by a

turn to the left, we gained the highest summit of the promontory, to our great joy. My dear Eliza placed her arm in mine, while we stood and looked around with wonder. A thousand questions, that had perplexed us for so many weeks, were here answered at once. We saw the sea separating two islands, and this arm of separation we had taken for a lake; but we observed that this expanse of water was land-locked on every side, so that it was, in effect, a lake as to smoothness and harbour security. We saw the extended reef to the eastward, terminating with rocks on each end, with small islands to the northward of the place where our vessel had struck; and we discovered the promontory on which we stood to be a peninsula.

The sun was in the meridian, and we had no shade here; but the sea-breeze blew around us with healing on its wings, and we did not complain of the heat. I now took the spy-glass, and looked around in every direction, —on beach, and rock, and sea,—for any sign of our shipmates or the boat; but nothing was to be seen. I then endeavoured to discover any huts, or other sign of natives, or any wild animals; and, last of all, swept the horizon, to look for other land, or perchance espy some passing vessel in the distance; but I could discern nothing. We now, having cooled a little, sat down; and, after resting our limbs a few minutes, took each a reviving mouthful or two of water from the canteen: we then rose, and proceeded along the smooth crest of the promontory towards its northern extremity, but kept as close as we could, in our walk, to its eastern side. As we advanced we saw breakers below us, and as far as the eye could see; also a great black rock, as if part of the promontory, to the northward and eastward of us. It was the same rock, a part of which we had observed

from the cabin windows of the brig as she lay in the creek. Further on, we remarked a clear channel between those breakers and great rock, and the promontory. After going perseveringly forward, even in the heat of the sun, for nearly two miles, we arrived at the northern extremity, and there had the satisfaction of looking down on our vessel, which we found immediately below us: it appeared like a boat; and our wooden palace, on the sandy ridge, like a bandbox.

To return by the way we came would be a serious labour for my Eliza, after the fatigue she already had undergone: I therefore proposed to cut a path for her down to the light hole of the cave; from which there already was a way sufficiently opened to descend. We debated the subject as we edged down towards it; but she was averse to the proposal; she could not bear the idea of leaving the armadillo suspended in the handkerchief till to-morrow, or the alternative of my going alone to release it. "The truth is," said she, "we had no right to make a prisoner of the poor thing for our amusement; and we are justly served, to be placed in this dilemma, by having done so." She certainly appeared a little vexed at the matter. We therefore determined to rest a little, and then returned to our prisoner. So sitting down under a dwarf palm that stood near us, and soon after stretching ourselves on a rocky ledge below its shade, in a short time we all fell asleep; she with her head and arm on my lap, and her little dog by her side.

It appeared by the position of the sun when we awoke, that we had slept at least two hours; we then arose, and taking some water from the canteen, to apply to our faces and hands, we felt refreshed, and resumed our journey by the crest of the hill; keeping now on the western side of the ridge. After proceeding about half way in this,

our backward pilgrimage, we could see the silk-cotton tree below us, and some part of the open ground contiguous to it; the locality of which made it an object of peculiar interest. About an hour before sunset we began to descend the ravine; stopping now and then to put in some seeds of the shaddock, the orange, and the lime, in such places as appeared most promising. We found the poor captive as we left him, perfectly quiet in his hammock; but he must have made an effort to escape, for we found a hole in the handkerchief; and probably it was the swinging movement he occasioned by the attempt, that most likely frightened him into resignation to his fate. I took the handkerchief down; and my dear wife thought I had best let him go; but I said, we could feed him, and use him well; and if he would not pet, we could at any time give him his liberty. "At any rate," I added, "I should like to see his head, and tail, and feet, which, hitherto, he has kept close within his coat of mail." It well might be called so, for his body appeared scale over scale; not like the continuous covering of the tortoise. I therefore bore him along with us; and heartily glad we were to arrive at the foot of the tree, where our basket was deposited. The sun was sinking low in the horizon, and we sat down eagerly to devour the fragments of our morning repast. Poor Fidele was not the least hungry of the party, eating his share greedily; after which, his kind mistress poured water into my hand for him to drink. There were no fragments to gather, so we put the armadillo, tied up as he was, into the basket; and made a rapid march through the trees to the punt.

This little boat was now a great accommodation to our weary limbs; and I rowed it along shore with great delight, seeing my dear wife so comfortably seated, while

I thus made a finish of our fatiguing expedition. We relanded a little after sunset, and literally dragged ourselves up to the plank-house; where being so very tired, we indulged ourselves with a glass of wine; after which, I cut a piece of melon, and put it on the floor, hoping the armadillo might eat some of it next morning: we then untied the handkerchief, and laid him down beside his intended breakfast. The sand-flies began to bite: so hastily fastening the door, we made our escape to our marine dormitory; where, without rocking, we slept soundly.

Saturday, 2d.—In the morning we found ourselves very stiff from the efforts of the preceding day; and had recourse to a copious ablution of sea-water upon the deck, immediately after getting up; which was succeeded, as on former occasions, by a perfect renovation. My wife had experienced so much utility in her change of costume, that with my permission she would henceforth dispense with the petticoats, and dress à la Turque: I was quite agreeable; the new dress was sufficiently modest, and more appropriate to her present situation; and in truth, it was very becoming, being not a little graceful. We were early at the plank-house, excited by curiosity to see the armadillo; we peeped through the lath lattices of the eastern window, and found him parading about, at a slow pace: his head appeared small, his tail scaly, and by no means short, and his fore feet were armed with long strong claws: we could perceive that he had eaten a great portion of the piece of melon; and this pleased us both. "Now, my love," I said, "you go and take a look at our stock; and I will palisado in a castle for Signior Armadillo, at the west end here of our own palace; I have plenty of shingles at hand, which I shall drive into the sand, and do the thing presently." I executed my project with

about forty; first giving them a pointed shape at the nether end; then struck them severally into the sand with the hammer head of my hatchet; making an area of twelve feet by six; and placing them with an interval of about three inches: when they were driven in, they were not more than a foot high; but the armadillo was no jumper, and so the rampart was high enough. I completed my erection in a couple of hours; before which time, my wife was at my elbow, followed by goats and kids, and the gallant cock, with only one of his hens. The ducks would not be tempted to-day from the brook; but my helpmate had pleasing intelligence to bring me: two of the hens were sitting; one in the hatch, the other on the original nest among the fragments of rock near the cave. I thanked her for the good news; and my little stoccado being finished, I opened the door of the plank-house, when the poor armadillo, being alarmed, made the best of his way out of our sight under the friendly settee. I took him out, however, by the back, and, carrying him forth, laid him down within his castle. I there placed the bit of melon he had left, beside him; though he was then rolled up in his case again—head, feet, and tail being invisible. We left him in this situation; but Eliza took her station on the plank-seat, to watch his movements through the lattice-work of the western window. In a few minutes she called to me to come to her. He had unfolded himself, and was trying to get out between the shingles; but finding that impracticable, he fell to digging the sand, and in less than a minute had buried himself beneath it. We looked awhile for his reappearance, but as he did not choose to come out again, we gave him up for the day, and sat down to a tea-breakfast, which to us was always a luxury.

After this, as to-morrow would be the Sabbath, and

as we had some arrangements to make, to prevent our breaking in upon its sanctity by domestic employments, we returned on board together, to collect and set in order what we might want for the next day's provision. My wife had heard me describe a pumpkin-pie, as being little inferior to an apple-pie, when the juice of limes was squeezed into it. She asked me if she might venture to try her skill at one: I smiled my assent; and we took on shore with us (where our cooking preparations could be managed best) a brown baking-dish, some flour, Cork butter, and her other ingredients. She set nimbly to work on our settee, by way of a dresser, while I turned my care to build up a good oven of hot embers in the proper place, for baking. She suddenly called out to me, she had forgot to seek in our Bristol store-chest for some cloves, to complete the necessary seasoning: "You can easily get at it, Edward," said she, "for I remember it was put in the steerage passage; and it is full of all manner of spices, and such like things."—"Yes, love," I replied, "I perfectly recollect where it was put, and will bring you some of its contents in a few minutes." Accordingly I hurried away, and found it as mentioned. She thanked me, when I put the cloves into her hand. "Edward," said she, "when these things were given to us by your kind aunt at Bristol, little did she imagine for what necessities she was providing! How gracious has the Almighty been to us, to prepare us such a table in the wilderness!" I replied to her with the same feeling of wondering gratitude: and she added, "My dear Edward, if we are to spend our lives on this island, and if it be God's will, I shall be content to do so; for perhaps I never could be happier than I am! And if we remain so long as to make a nice dwelling for ourselves at the silk-cotton-tree plantation, I know there are plenty

of crockery wares, and every other necessary for household comfort, in the vessel, if they have escaped destruction from the storm."—"That is true, dear Eliza," I replied; "and I hope some day to, indeed, put that plan in execution."

When she had finished making the pie, I fitted a spare brown dish upside down over it, and having made a bed for them thus placed together, in the embers, drew more hot embers over the whole. She was highly pleased with my contrivance; and, while the oven part was going on, set our palace to rights again. After our frugal dinner (for our pie was for to-morrow), I proposed trying my fish-pot, which I had just finished. Eliza rose with alacrity, and Fidele wagged his tail and barked, as if he snuffed some new sport in the wind. I then proceeded to fit up my fish-pot: a flat stone was selected, which I fastened by a small rope to the bottom, to sink it; and another piece of good rope, about three fathoms long, was made fast to the rope-fastening of the stone; the other end of it was passed through the body of the fish-pot, to come out above, right in the centre; so that as it was raised by the rope, it hung evenly on either side of the aperture; whence the rope issued, was a wider hatch for the fisher's hand. To this, on the present occasion, I suspended a bit of fat pork on a slip of twine, to hang loosely in the centre, directly opposite to the two holes at the machine's extremities (which, as I before stated, were hollow cones, with the narrow ends towards each other), so that the fish might be tempted in towards the bait, but when in could not get out. I took a shingle for a buoy, to float the end of the rope; and all being ready we proceeded to the punt, and pushed out a little beyond the extremity of the rocky point. I let down the fish-pot, in nearly three fathoms water, and took the pre-

caution to bring a bucket to keep the fish alive, should we take any.

It was not yet near sunset; so, on relanding, we strolled about visiting our melons and the pumpkins, which we had planted between the rivulet and the southern part of the base of the rocky point: those that were sown earliest, had spread their shoots to a great distance; some of them having run upwards of twenty feet from the stem; and these were all in flower—fine large golden blossoms; while those planted ten or twelve days after them, were nearly as luxuriant, but not yet in flower. The pine-apple top looked well, and seemed to grow a little. It was no small pleasure to us to see this fine promise before us, and to perceive that none of them had been touched by the goats. The ducks were here, waddling alongside the water; but we could count only eight; two were then missing. The goats were browsing on the opposite bank, near the spring head, and the kids playing about like kittens. We threw them a little corn; and at the same time took some which had been bruised, to the sitting hens in their roost.

As soon as the stars appeared, I took my tar-rope torch to the beach, to be a bait for the mullet, in case my fish-pot should fail. I rowed out, and took up the pot, but to my disappointment there was nothing in it. However, I found a large horse-shoe crab, with great spikes all over him, sticking fast to the outside. Without touching him, I let down my trap again into the sea. The mullet had been jumping before the sun went down; and as soon as I lighted the torch, which my dear wife held in her hand, they began to leap at the boat. We did not want a cargo; therefore I soon began to put for the shore; but ere I reached it, five fine fish had made themselves our prisoners; and having filled the bucket with

salt water, as they fell into the boat I popped them into it. This was a bright thought. I placed a couple of shingles over the bucket, to prevent their getting out; and, having drawn the punt to the shore, returned, well pleased with our success, to the plank-house.

After adjusting ourselves a little, we lighted a candle, and sat down to enjoy some fruit; for we had now a twofold reason for not sparing the melons: most of them in our store were on the spoil, and the seeds we had sown gave us an early earnest of plenty. During the day we had seen nothing of the armadillo, for he had continued under the sand; but we now threw a piece of melon into his inclosure, which we thought might, in the morning, tell us something about him. In the midst of this, the sand-flies became very troublesome; which vexed us not a little, at the prospect of being thus constantly annoyed by their nightly visits. I first proposed making a smoky fire; but we feared the combustibility of our mansion: I then thought, if my wife had no objection, of trying to smoke a cigar the next time we encountered them, although I owned I was no adept at such an operation. She said that, so far from objecting, she had liked the smell of the cigars in Jamaica; and she now supposed the people had used them at first to keep off the muschetos and sand-flies there; therefore she would be very glad of my resource, if it would not make me sick. This dialogue being ended, while the little wretches seemed to be taking vengeance on us beforehand for plotting their discomfiture, we hastily put out the candle, and, fastening the door, made our way to our vessel, and to bed.

Sunday, 3d.—We dressed ourselves in clean clothes, with more than an every-day neatness, and so prepared for the quiet enjoyment of the day, laying aside all worldly care; for even in this solitude we were beset

by it; and as we walked the deck in the cool of the morning, our hearts expanded with the contemplation of the glorious scene before us, and with a deep recollection of all the mercies of that God who had dedicated this day to his peculiar service. We landed to our breakfast, and took the earliest opportunity to reconnoitre the armadillo: he had eaten part of the melon we had left, but was again burrowed out of sight.

After our repast (during which all our colony were rejoicing in the shade near us), I read the Morning service. But it was not reading only: our hearts were in every sentence and word. After this our divine duty, we strolled forth under the rocks, and visited our preserve of fish, which were moving about lively in the bucket. We then proceeded forward, arm in arm, along the base of the point, which was here peculiarly pleasant, from the green herbage below, and the delightful shadow of the cliff; and in about fifty yards onwards, just where the reedy grass begins to thicken, Fidele stopped, and poked his nose in among some high tufts of the same, mingled with fragments of rock. We observed him attentively; but as he did not bark, we did not know what to make of it. Soon we heard a hissing noise, which I instantly concluded to come from a snake, and in an instant caught the dear little dog up in my arms; then peeping into the brake myself, to see for the reptile, had the agreeable surprise of perceiving one of the lost ducks, sitting. My dear Eliza was quite pleased with the discovery: it was important in itself; and it honoured her sagacious surmise on the subject, when the first duck was missing. "Every thing goes well with us, dear Edward," she said; "thanks to kind Providence!" We now proceeded a little further, to our melon and pumpkin plantation, where their golden flowers and large green

leaves already spread a gorgeous carpet over the surface of the ground. We followed the rivulet that ran behind this luxuriant little plot, towards the lake, and found some of our ducks busily feeding amongst the reeds on its sides, which at some places were growing tall and strong. This gave me an idea they might be of the species whose roots are esculent; and I proposed to my wife trying them ourselves. "Most probably you are right in your supposition, dear Edward," she replied; "but we have abundance; and perhaps it would be most prudent, if you please, not to make any doubtful experiments in eating things, of the salubrity of which we can have no certainty." I applauded her caution, and agreed with her entirely on the principle.

We returned to our palace, and thankfully dined on our cold pumpkin pie, which sprinkled with a little sugar and lime-juice, turned out to be excellent; and that excellence was not a little enhanced to me by its being the handiwork of my beloved helpmate. The afternoon was passed in conversing on subjects of eternal import, and in reading from the New Testament: we then proposed a walk to the cocoa-nut grove; and returned, more refreshed than fatigued, to our ship; where we finished the day by prayer, and praises to our almighty Protector.

Monday, 4th.—We awoke long before daylight, and talked over the business of the ensuing day. I pointed out the necessity of speedily putting into the ground whatever more we intended to plant, as the moistening effects of the late rains were quickly disappearing under the daily increasing heat of the weather. Thus impressed, we arose with the dawn, and had arrived at the plank-house before the goats and poultry came out from the thicket. I carried Fidele in my arms, that, by cautiously advancing, we might possibly get a sight of the armadillo:

he was visible; but as soon as he perceived us, he burrowed, and was gone. We then proceeded to business. I put some more corn in our bag, and screwed off the tops of four pine-apples for planting. My dear wife, too, filled her basket with many requisites; and, followed by our dog, we marched towards the punt, with all our proper accoutrements besides. We found the fish still all alive in the bucket; and giving them a fresh supply of sea-water, I moved it out of the punt, to a recess in the rocks, and then pushed out to the point. On the way, I raised the fish-pot, in which there was a fine grouper (a fish much esteemed in Jamaica): as it could not escape, I let the pot down again into the water, and rowed off for our destination.

We landed our implements on this side of the rocks which occupy the middle part of the plantation beach: here Eliza took up a position, to go on with her wicker work, the materials for which we had brought with us. I set to, to put in Indian corn; which I was anxious to sow (although we had a large supply on board), that we might have the young cobs to roast when our plantains should be exhausted. On walking up to the ground to commence my labour, I gladly saw the melons and pumpkins beyond me, flourishing luxuriantly; but what gave me most pleasure was our sugar-canes, which had not been planted much more than a fortnight, now nearly a foot above the soil; so that I could not refrain from calling my dear wife to come and look on them. There were six shoots, two and two, four feet distant. In them, perhaps, we beheld the progenitors of a future large sugar plantation, in this as yet unpeopled island. "Now, beloved," said I, "bring up the four pine-tops; I will dig their places, and you shall set them here." She was pleased with my request, because we were to be partners

in the work; for to identify us in every thought and every act was her greatest delight. While she went for the pine-apple tops, I prepared their places, in a line with the sugar-canes. When she had planted them, I earthed them up; and, after gazing on them a while with much complacency, she leaning on me with her arm, we separated to our different avocations. I worked this morning about three hours; putting in about fifty plantings of Indian corn, two grains in each hole. This accomplished, I joined my wife under the rocks by the beach: she had our breakfast spread forth,—cold salt beef, biscuit, and cocoa-nut milk; not omitting a good slice of water-melon, a most delicious and thirst-quenching fruit in a tropical climate. The wonderful rapidity with which we had seen how the plants grew, excited our remarks and gratitude; for we clearly saw that before our stock of this cooling fruit, and our pumpkins, could be expended, we should have an abundant supply from our plantations; and it became the wish of our hearts that our friends in England could partake of our delightful melons.

We now re-embarked for our return, taking up the fish-pot, with the grouper, by the way: I did not, however, haul it on board, but kept it in the water, and left it within a few yards of the beach, throwing the buoy on the rock, so as to enable me to get it when wanted, without the trouble of launching the punt. On reaching the plank-house, we sat down to cool and rest ourselves. During our conversation I observed, that, as we had now made all our great plantings, I should like to put in some of the nuts from the chocolate trees, here and there, in the woodland region; and, when they grew up a little, I would thin the wood in their immediate vicinity, to give them room. Indeed, it seemed very remarkable that we had not seen any of those trees, excepting near

the mouth of the cave: and when I took that circumstance into consideration, in connexion with the military belt I found there, it did not appear improbable that those trees had sprung from some nuts accidentally scattered by those to whom the belt had belonged, when they were preparing their chocolate meal: such being the chief refreshment of the Spaniards on the main. Next day we fixed on for setting some of the nuts we had already gathered. My dear wife wished to finish her basket, which now was nearly done; so I went on board, to hoist up an empty water-cask from the hold, a machine that I designed for a very useful purpose. I was not long in effecting my object; and, without much trouble, got it on shore. I proceeded to the plank-house, where I found the basket finished; and a very neat and perfect work it was, with a strong handle, like the pattern. I could not but applaud my Eliza, and she was highly gratified in having deserved and received my approbation. I now rolled up the empty cask to the door; and she repaid me with her commendation on my foresight, when I told her what I was going to do with it. The cask was to be a conservatory for our live fish. I cut a pretty large scuttle in one of the ends, intended for the head; and with a proper carpenter's tool, bored half-a-dozen holes in the other end, which was to be the bottom, and a few also in the sides: the thing was then done. I rolled it down to the beach where the punt lay, and let the cask down into the water at about three feet deep. I then gathered a few stones the size of bricks, and, throwing them into the scuttle, the cask soon sunk, the water rising in it through the holes made in the bottom and sides: being thus securely placed, its top stood about six inches above the water's edge; the water within, of course, reaching to within six inches of its being full;

and, by means of the side holes, there would be a constant flux and reflux. The repository being ready, I drew up the fish-pot; and taking out the grouper safe and sound, popped it in. My dear wife was quite amused in seeing the fish plunge in the cask, as if it enjoyed its new quarters. I requested her to take a walk with Fidele, while I got the pot ready to lay out again: in truth, I intended to bait it in a way I knew she would object to, did she see the preparation; therefore, as soon as she was a little way off, I took one of the live mullet out of the bucket, and laid it on the sand until it was dead: I then baited with it, and called to her to ascend the rock, so that she might have me and my apparatus in sight. She clambered up, and stood near enough to talk with me, while I laid the fish-pot; and in a few minutes I was again on shore with the punt.

During the remainder of the afternoon, I employed myself in weeding our plantation near the cave-spring, and Eliza was occupied with her needle. As it approached sunset she prepared tea, to which I gladly joined her in our wooden palace. I found already there, before the door, our poultry and goats, to which we distributed the remains of the mullet we had left at dinner, and the rind of our melon. It was surprising to see how greedily the ducks devoured the fish; and we afterwards thought that its occasional mixture with their ordinary food greatly augmented the number of their eggs. Their chuckling enjoyment reminded us of the sitting absentees; and my wife instantly tripped away with some pounded corn to the matrons at the cave's mouth; while I ran down with a similar tribute to the covert where my lady duck was hatching her young brood.

By the time we returned, the sun had set, and the sand-flies began their annoyance. Our culinary fire under the

rock was still unextinguished, but it lay at too great a distance to affect our tormentors, for the wind generally went down with the sun; hence the fire's smoke seldom could be made to reach them. My Eliza therefore kindled a piece of stick at the embers, and brought it to me on a plate. I lighted a cigar immediately, and managed it pretty well for a beginner. As I smoked it, she drew close to me, so as to be quite within its protecting influence; and, to our great satisfaction, we found the expedient successful: but I could not accomplish more than half a cigar at this time, for I began to feel the tobacco affect my head with a slight giddiness. I therefore carefully put out our antidote; and, fastening the door, we retired to our vessel to sleep, not a little thankful that the sand-flies did not incommode us there.

Tuesday, 5th.—The early dawn found us on the alert, talking over the intended operations of the day, which, however, were not numerous. Of our old arrangements, we had only the cacao-nuts to plant; but it had occurred to me, that, as necessity had obliged me to become a cigar smoker, a future provision for that would be a prudent matter of thought. I had a large box of them, to be sure; yet if we should sojourn long on the island, its contents must gradually disappear; and then in what a strait we should be, banished in the evenings from our dear plank-house. But recollection furnished me with a remedy: the corn-cobs, the pumpkin-seed, and the tobacco-seed, still remained in my sea-chest, where I had deposited them in Virginia, for my dear old father. My Eliza was delighted with this good news: no time was lost in possessing ourselves of the precious seeds; and it was resolved to begin sowing them this very day, in our cotton-tree plantation.

But the morning's work commenced with a visit to

the fish-pot, in which I found three fine fish, of a species less than the grouper; they are called in Jamaica, snappers. I quickly popped them into the conservatory, and baited again with a mullet which lay dead in the bucket. On our arrival at the plank-house, not seeing the armadillo, I saw disposed to dig him up; but my wife persuaded me to let him alone, and starve him a little, by which she thought we might at last force him to come out for his food, and at length grow familiar. Acceding to her reasoning, nothing was to be thrown into his crib this day; and the shy gentleman being left to fast, we took our basket with our own refreshment, and, with Fidele trotting after us, hastened on foot through the woodland region to the plantation.

Eliza took her station for awhile at the foot of the silk cotton tree; and I, with a zeal that sweetens labour, went to work with my spade; and had put in the tobacco-seeds, at about eighteen inches apart, almost all before eleven o'clock: then it became too hot for further exertion; but I had made a sufficient tobacco-plot; and satisfied with my work, I could not but be so with myself. When I had nigh finished, my dear wife and Fidele, went up to the spring in the rock-basin, for some fresh cool water, and there, Diana-like, fell in upon the chase, and killed an iguana. I heard her dog give tongue, and I hallooed "Tally-ho!" at which she laughed aloud; and being now familiar with the sight of that ugly creature, she took it up, and brought it to me in triumph. We sat down together under the deep shade of the great tree, and enjoyed our cold collation of salt meat and fruit. "Dearest Edward," said she, "this is a delightful spot! How comfortable shall we find ourselves, should you ever be able to erect a dwelling for us on the rising ground here, as you propose! Besides, as there is no

sand near, I might hope we should not be tormented by those relentless little wretches which infest our plank-house."—"I trust, in the cool season of next year, my own Eliza," I replied, "I may be able to accomplish it; and meanwhile, when all our urgent present labours are done, I will begin to gradually bring materials to the spot."—"Oh, my kind husband!" she rejoined, "how happy am I with you even in this solitude: I would not change my lot with a queen!" After our repast I deposited the iguana in the basket, and we returned into the woodland region, where, under a protecting, though not deep shade, I commenced putting in the cacao-seeds; and by two o'clock had planted about forty. I marked each spot with a bit of stick, for the purpose of fixing a little guard of stakes round each, on a future day.

I was rather tired by the labours of this part of the day, and gladly adjourned for our hours of repose and refreshment to the plank-house. When these aids of wearied nature had sufficiently recruited me, I began to talk alertly of the remainder of my day's avocations, and told my dear partner that I meant to close them with a grand fishing-match, and so stock our conservatory well. She smiled, and observed, that it had occurred to her "there would be some difficulty in getting the fish out of the conservatory, after they were once in."—"Not to you, sweet one!" I replied: "did I not say, you should be my fisher? I now intend to keep my promise; and it shall be your office, whenever you please, to take the fish out of the conservatory."—"I shall always be pleased with the task, dear Edward," she rejoined, "if you will show me how."—"You shall try it in a day or two," I replied; "and I will answer for your being as expert as Isaac Walton himself." With this our dialogue finished.

At sunset we repaired to the punt. On drawing up the fish-pot, I found a grouper and a snapper in it; and hauling it along under water, till I came to the conservatory, I took them out, and popped them into the cask. I then baited with the entrails of the iguana, and laid the pot out again. That done, by means of my bucket, I filled the centre compartment of the punt with sea-water, to the height of about three inches, and, it being water-tight between the cross-planks, none of the water ran either forward or aft. My dear wife then sat down on the stern seat, with a lighted torch in her hand, and Fidele at her feet. At this time the stars were appearing: I rowed out, but before I cleared the point, the mullet began to jump, and fall fast around us, even about our ears: at first it was good sport, and I laughed heartily at some hard knocks they gave me on my shoulders and hands. Those which did not drop into the middle of the punt, but either fore or aft, were picked up by one or other of us, and thrown into the part with the water. Fidele was the first to complain of being rather roughly dealt with, for a heavy fish or two struck him in their fall, which caused him to shake his ears, and, with a yell, draw near his mistress: he was more alarmed than hurt; but she, poor dear, received a too severe blow on the side of her face; and, although she said not a word, I perceived, by her heightened colour, it had given her pain: so wishing a truce to the game, I desired her to throw the torch overboard, which she did, and the shower of mullet ceased. I put back in haste: Fidele jumped on shore in an instant, and I leaped after him, handing out my best beloved most carefully, being anxious to see if she were seriously hurt; but she gaily declared in the negative, and I was satisfied. I therefore proceeded to convey the mullet and calipeavar out

of the well in the punt, into the conservatory; and, to my no small surprise, counted more than two dozen. "This is a great fishing indeed!" exclaimed my dear wife; "but my poor Fidele, it was sorry sport to thee! thou shalt have better shelter next time." And she patted him gently while she spoke: the grateful animal jumped to her knee, and seemed made quite himself again by the cheering voice of his mistress.

I left the water in the punt as it was; and we hastened up to the plank-house, taking some of the fire we had lit near the rock with us. A candle was lighted, and my tender Eliza observing I was wet, took down the hollands, and mixed me some with water; on the whole, I was much fatigued, and received it thankfully. The sand-flies, however, did not forget giving us their unwelcome company; so I lighted a new cigar, and got on with it very well; my dear companion keeping close to me under the protecting influence of the smoke; the fragrance of which she said was very agreeable. I made her take a sip of my beverage, to sweeten the cup; and we sat for an hour, enjoying ourselves in spite of the little harpies; and then retired to our place of rest.

Wednesday, 6th.—On coming up to the plank-house this morning, we were greeted by the sight of our other goat standing with two little kids at her feet: she had kidded in the thicket during the night: this was a pleasing surprise at the moment, although not unexpected. I baled out the punt; and lifting the fish-pot found a fine fish in it, different from any we had yet taken; it was a snook: I put it down again, to keep it quite fresh; and proceeded to our plantation, to finish my work by planting some of the American maize, and a few of the pumpkin-seeds I had brought from Virginia. All our former sowings might be said to grow daily,

nay, hourly, almost visibly shooting up. Both of us exclaimed together, "How wonderful the rapidity of vegetation in this climate!"

As the day became hot, we reposed ourselves under the silk-cotton tree; feeling that listlessness for which the residents, and even natives, of this quarter of the world, are so remarkable; but hitherto our European energy had abided with us: and my dear wife now expressed a fear that I had exerted myself too much in such a climate: "For," added she, "it appears that where man should labour much, God hath given him the power; and therefore we must suppose that when that power is abridged under tropical suns, it is for wise purposes." Thus she was wont to view every thing with pious depth of thought; referring all things to the providence and direction of the Almighty.

While we were talking, Fidele was sleeping; and in a little time we also were covered with Sancho's cloak. It was nearly three o'clock when we awoke; and I think we were a little ashamed of the length of our siesta. We therefore hastily got our husbandry implements together, and returned by the punt to the plank-house. I had there many things to arrange for future employment; and, meanwhile, my Eliza prepared our dinner. It consisted of the snook, which we eat with lime-juice and capsicums, and found it excellent: fruit was not a good accompaniment to fish, so we substituted a glass of wine; which being more appropriate, and also a novelty, gave an agreeable finish to our feast. Fidele liked the snook, although he did not like punt-fishing; and he made a hearty meal, without wanting the juice of the grape to wash it down.

"Edward," said my wife, "what will you do with all the fish you have already caught? and we must feed them

that are in the conservatory."—"No, my love," I replied, "were we to feed them, you could not catch them as we want them; and after they have been another day without food, we will not take more from the sea for a time, but you shall supply us from the conservatory." My making a little mystery of this achievement, seemed to please her; and betraying no pettish curiosity to know all about it, before the time, she smiled, and declared her readiness to obey my orders. The sauce to the fish had reminded us of the value of our capsicums and bird-peppers; which induced us to amuse ourselves in the afternoon by planting a seed here and there about the foot of the rock beside the cave-spring, and in the shrubby ground opposite; and it was there Fidele discovered the other duck sitting on eggs.

When we returned for the remainder of the evening, we were agreeably surprised by seeing the armadillo crawling about in his stoccado; and he did not seem disposed to burrow, even at sight of ourselves. I brought out a musk-melon, and cut off a large piece, which I placed softly in his retreat: he soon discovered it, and in our presence began to eat it, but we drew away immediately for fear of alarming or disconcerting him. "My dear Eliza," I said, as she seated herself on our wooden settee, "your idea was correct; we shall tame the armadillo." As we had no desire to contend with the sand-flies to-night, we retired to the ship, just as the sun was setting; and took our humble, though happy station, on one of the hen-coops on the quarter-deck, where we enjoyed the cool of the evening without any annoyance, until it was time to go to sleep.

Thursday, 7th.—We breakfasted on board this morning; occupying ourselves in looking up various things for our use on shore: and my dear wife took this occa-

sion to observe, that now she must sit a little every day at her needle, as both her dress and mine required repair. While she was thus busied about her own concerns, I rummaged the sailors' chest in the steerage for fish-hooks, and was fortunate enough to find some pretty large ones, already fastened to lines: I selected a couple of different sizes; cutting the lines, so as to leave about four or five feet attached to each hook; and then put them in my pocket.

Towards mid-day, we went on shore; she taking some things with her for needle employment; and I, a bag with the last remains of our plantains. While she was cutting and contriving her work in the plank-house, I went down to the border of the woodland region, and lopped off two straight sticks about six feet long each, to the ends of which I fastened the lines with the hooks, and left them ready-baited at the rock. On my return to my wife, I said, "Now, Eliza, it is near dinner-time; I am very hungry; go and catch a fish for us." She looked up and smiled, but seemed a little confused; "Dear Edward!" cried she, "an Asiatic wife might tremble at such a command; but I have nothing to fear from my dear husband! I will go in faith, for I know you would not mock me!"—"Come, sweetest," I said, "and it will be done." She arose cheerfully, and we ran down together hand in hand to the beach. I took up one of the rods, and gave it to her: "O, you cunning fellow!" she exclaimed, "how agreeably you have teased me!" I now led her up on the rock, from whence she lowered down the line with the hook into the conservatory, and in an instant it was nearly pulled out of her hand; the strongest fish, most likely, had seized the bait. I stood by and encouraged her; and, after a few minutes, with a little help, she raised her finny prize out of the

cask, and landed it safely on the rock, to my great delight and to hers; but, on this occasion, Fidele wished to take a part in the exploit, endeavouring to seize the fish while it was tumbling about on the ground before us. We took it on shore, and Eliza received many compliments from her happy husband for her dexterity. Thus we amused ourselves, by turning common occurences into causes of pleasantry.

After dinner, I proposed a walk in the cool of the evening, to the cocoa-nut grove, and it was purely a little excursion of pleasure. My Eliza suggested our taking the eastern beach for our path; for she wished to handsel her new basket by collecting any pretty shells that might present themselves on our way. The breeze continued fresh, and our stroll was in shadow for nearly half a mile. We often stood to gaze on the reef, where the sea broke furiously, while all within it was smooth water. It was a scene of great interest to us: the one, our place of jeopardy; the other, the safe channel, through which our vessel passed to that secure creek in which she now lay, at once a storehouse and a home. The shells were abundant, but not many were perfect, or retained their polish: we, however, contrived to gather some worth having; and, as we arranged them before us on the sand, my dear wife said, "If we should ever return to England, those shells will be a cherished memorial of our present situation."

On arriving at the cocoa-nut grove, we were delighted to see the melons and pumpkins all in flower, stretching their shoots extensively around; and the yams and coccos beginning to point their germs through the ground. We sat down on the trunk of the tree I had formerly felled, and rested ourselves. The gaskets were under the ledge of the rock: I took them out, and, quickly climbing the

next tree, brought down a couple of young cocoa-nuts, the milk of which was very grateful to us. We then returned by the other shore, and collected some excellent cane-reeds for baskets, or any other use that might occur, and arrived at our palace a little before sunset. Tea was very acceptable after this long walk; after which we gratefully retired to our vessel, to prayer and repose.

Friday, 8th.—My dear wife kept closely at her needle-work, while I employed myself in cutting some small trees and brushwood. During my task, she got a little tired of being from me; and to my own glad greeting too, suddenly joined me with her fishing-rod ready-baited in her hand, and invited me to accompany her to the rock. "The day wears," said she, smiling, "and I come to my duty."—"Dearest," cried I, "no duty; only thy pastime; but I will now do it, for it is sometimes rather tugging work."—O, no, dear Edward; you allotted it to me, and I will not give up my office. So long as you replenish the conservatory, I will furnish you with its fish."—"Well, well, be it so," said I; and, instantly resolving on a bit of merriment, determined to leave the matter entirely to herself; so, walking up with her to the rock over the cask, she dropped in the bait, which was greedily seized by some strong fish, and the action pulled the rod by a jerk from her hand; but she quickly picked it up (for I did not), while I said, "You shall have fair play, and the fish too." Fidele would have helped her if he could; he seemed to understand what was going forward, for he jumped off the rock, on to the top of the cask, and I really thought he was going to take the line in his mouth. The fish, however, kept its station; and the delicate arm of my dear wife was unable to drag him forth. I now offered to assist her. "No, no; fair play, Edward," she cried; "no fish, no dinner."

She did indeed tug, and the fish tugged, and my poor love was almost tired out; at last by one great effort, she raised him out of the hatch, on to the top of the cask, where Fidele stood; but the fish made a bound, and carried line and rod into the open water; while Fidele, struck with terror, leaped back upon the rock; but as since our arrival here we had accustomed him to go into the smooth sea, and bring out pieces of stick, he now, with a little encouragement from his mistress, who ran round with him to the sandy beach of the inlet, immediately took the water; and, laying hold of the rod (the fish being almost spent by its preceding exertion), kept it fast in his mouth, and, after many fruitless efforts, managed to get footing with his cumbrous prize; and, to the great joy of my wife, placed the rod in her hand. She then drew up the fish with a triumph, which she declared was all their own. I gave the dear pair a cheer of applause, which Fidele returned with an extraordinary howl, that made us both laugh. Before we carried away her prize, as the rest of the fish in the conservatory had been some days without food, I threw some in to them, and then turned my steps homeward with my sweet helpmate.

Together, we prepared the calipeavar for dinner, which duly appeared, with all the etceteras, limes, and peppers. In honour of the contest, my wife set before me a bottle of our canary wine; and she placed a rich dessert also on the table, namely, an over-ripe pine and a fine shaddock. After so sumptuous a feast, I was not disposed to sink into the woodman again that day, but sat like a nabob, enjoying the fruit and beverage, drinking the health of my most excellent and courteous fisherman. My dear Eliza was quite happy in seeing me, for once since our landing, laying aside all care; and I believe,

on this occasion, I became a little exhilarated. We talked over the battle of the fish, which reminded us of Waller's battle of the Bermudians with the whale; and I laughed heartily again and again — an excess of mirth neither natural nor habitual to me. After our more than usually generous regale, we extended some of its indulgences to our crowding retainers without. We fed the armadillo from our fruit, played with the young kids, and treated their mothers with the parings of our shaddock and pine-apple. The poultry, too, were not forgotten. At sunset we retired to our marine abode.

Saturday, 9th.—I was very hot and uncomfortable all night; so that the excellency of temperance was brought practically to my mind. I could not eat my breakfast in the morning; neither did I feel any disposition for exertion. My anxious wife was much distressed, laying all the blame on herself, and urged me to take a dose of physic. "Dear Eliza," said I, "your honoured father used to quote a saying of Seneca:—'When I am sick,' said the Roman, 'I must either fast or take physic, and of the two alternatives, I choose the former.'—Now I am of the same mind my best love! and I will abstain from eating till my stomach recovers itself." This point settled, she resignedly went to her needlework, while I lounged about like a poor sick dog, refusing all food. In the evening I drank a little tea, but was no better, and my head ached. She now became very uneasy, and insisted on my taking a bolus of sweet mercury, some of which were in the medicine chest; and I did so, and retired at the usual hour to bed.

Sunday, 10th.—I felt far from well when I arose, having scarcely slept; and some other medicine being proposed to me, I chose rather to swallow half a pint of sea-water; and, before twelve o'clock, I was quite myself

again. We then went on shore, where my dear wife read the Church service, and then prepared some coffee for me, by way of dinner, which completely settled my stomach; and in the afternoon we enjoyed a pleasant walk together in the woodland region; closing the evening by reading the Scriptures, and with prayer.

Monday, 11th.—I arose pretty well: my kind nurse disposed herself to her needlework, and I to finish my wood-cutting operation beyond the rivulet. At breakfast, my wife told me the third hen was sitting; and that, as two more of the ducks were missing, she had no doubt they also were employed in hatching. The poor cock was stalking about, a solitary individual, before the platform; and as we threw him some fragments of biscuit, he called his hens, as he picked the bits up; but they did not come, and he left the pieces untouched, walking away, as melancholy as any disconsolate, into the thicket. The armadillo now kept out in open daylight, roaming about his stoccado; and being no longer under the influence of skulking fear, stood stoutly on his legs, with his head projecting to receive any donation we might throw to him; for he was not indisposed to taste meat, or biscuit, or roast yam, or whatever was put into his crib, but he liked the musk-melon the best.

While at a frugal cold meat dinner to-day, I could not help comparing our shower of fish to the rain of quails in the wilderness; and indeed I reminded my dear Eliza of a remark she made, as if in prophetic allusion, on the first evening we saw the mullet leaping from the water, when I expressed a desire to have some of them to vary our salt food. In the afternoon, while she returned to her needlework, I amused myself fitting up a place for the ducks, and their expected young broods when they

should come forth, in a snug recess of the rock, about twenty yards on this side of the cave-spring. For I foresaw that the ducklings must be some time before they could march up with their dams to the thicket; and if a rendezvous were not provided near the water, they might become wild, and we should lose them. In the evening we took our tea early, and soon after returned to the vessel, and to rest.

Tuesday 12th.—Early in the morning we embarked in the punt, with my usual husbandry accoutrements and a basket of provisions, with some seeds of the bird-peppers and capsicums to plant. It was a pleasant row to the beach of the plantation; and as soon as we landed, and had carried our refreshments up to the spurs of the silk-cotton tree, I repaired to my field of labour, and set about hoeing the ground about our previous plantings in every direction. I was fully repaid for all my toil, by seeing every thing pushing forward most luxuriantly. At noon, we lay down and took a nap under the tree; after which, being quite recruited, I did ample justice to the employment I had begun in the morning. When our tasks were finished, as my arms were more tired than my legs, we left the punt on the beach, and walked home through the woodland region; observing on our way the places in which I had planted the chocolate-nuts, a few of which, I gladly saw, were up.

CHAPTER VIII.

We retired early, to avoid the sand-flies, and rested ourselves on the quarter-deck of the vessel, enjoying the refreshing coolness of the evening. "Dear Eliza," said I, "my agricultural labours are completed for the present, and you have done all the needlework necessary; what do you say, then, to an excursion to-morrow to the other extremity of the isthmus? I wish to reconnoitre a little beyond the limits of our immediate residence."—"If you really wish it, my honoured husband," she replied, "we will go; but we are so happy and comfortable now, that I do not like seeking any change; and we know not whether we may not fall into some accident by the way."—"Dearest," I rejoined, "it is incumbent on us to know as much as we can of the island on which we are placed; therefore have courage, and I will go early in the morning and fetch the punt."—"No," said she, "*we* will go, if you please."—"Well, then, dear Eliza, *we* will go: it always has been *we*, and I am content that it shall be always *we*,—now and for ever, here and hereafter, my own best blessing!" This I said, embracing her tenderly.

Wednesday, 13th.—We arose with the dawn, and landed; then walked at a good pace round by the woodland region to the punt. The birds were on the alert, and we heard the sweet notes of one not unlike to those of our own nightingale. The doves were numerous, feeding on the ground; and, having come to the head of the dell, we heard and saw the paroquets among the palm-trees on the opposite side. The sun had not risen when we got into our boat; and in half an hour after sunrise, we had brought it back, and were again at the

plank-house. Eliza then quickly put up some provisions, with some cocoa-nuts, in our baskets, for now she had two: and arming myself completely, with a musket and pistols, axe and bill-hook, my wife not forgetting her pike and faithful dog, we re-embarked; and, putting off from the creek, rowed along shore towards the northern extremity of the isthmus. There we landed in its little bay, beneath the same rock on a ledge of which we had sat to rest when we had formerly visited the spot on foot, and delighted ourselves with admiring the while the grandeur of the superb headland under which we had been placed by the kind providence of God. This little bay appeared to be nearly a mile long, and half a mile broad; the land on the opposite bank being elevated more or less, and from which we were now separated by the huge high rock close to us, while the whole of the side on which we were, was formed by the sandy shore of the north-western extremity of the isthmus. After resting a short time here, I rowed round the rock towards the opposite bank. After advancing about a cable's length, nearly touching it with the oar all the way, I found it turn off suddenly to the north; forming, with the opposite bank, a narrow creek, about twenty yards in breadth, and nearly two hundred yards in length. I continued to row up the creek; the great rock standing high and rugged on my right, having a beautiful and finely-wooded slope on my left. On arriving at the head of the creek, I found a small stream of fresh water running into it; near to which I put the punt ashore, where we observed a number of crayfish, nearly the size of a lobster, in every part of the shallow water. We disembarked at this spot, and placed ourselves and our baskets under the shade of a large tree, about twelve or fourteen yards north of the punt: we here took up a delightful

position on a little mound by the foot of which the streamlet ran down into the creek. The lake lay wide before us on the south; and the view to the eastward was thrown open by the sudden termination of the great rock, which appeared perpendicular on all sides. My dear wife spread out her cold collation on this shaded spot; while I took care that the musket and all our other weapons were at hand, that we might not be surprised by we knew not what. However, caution is generally safety; and we eat our breakfast the more comfortably because we were provided with means of defence, and those means available in a moment.

After breakfast, we endeavoured to penetrate into the interior, by walking along the side of the streamlet; but we soon found we could not advance far, on account of the entangling underwood; we therefore retrod our steps, planting some shaddock, and orange, and lime-pips, here and there, by the way. On our return, we sat down under the same tree to repose, where we had taken our collation, and sheltered ourselves from the noonday sun. There was no bird nor other creature stirring, save the busy sea-gull, which, in numbers were pursuing shoals of small fishes in the bay before us; so that all things invited us to add to our repose, sleep; but being in a strange place, our eyelids were not disposed to take any rest. We said to each other, "Were we now under the shade of our own silk-cotton tree, how sweetly we might slumber in safety during the heat of the day!"

Towards the afternoon, I fished up half-a-dozen of the crayfish, after much trouble and perplexity. I had expected they were of the same species with the creature we had taken on the western beach of the isthmus after the storm, and if so, there would be nothing to do but push the end of the boarding-pike between the fangs of their

great claws, and drag them forth; but I soon discovered that these crayfish had no great claws, so that I was obliged to manœuvre, until I could get the end of the pike under them; which, at last, after many fruitless efforts, I contrived to do, and succeeded in jerking a few of them out upon the beach. When caught, I placed my booty in the forward division of the punt. We then re-embarked; and, rowing out of the narrow creek, kept along the western shore of the bay for about a quarter of a mile, where we landed again, on the beach of a fine gravelly slope. The ground was nearly open before us, having only a few fine trees thinly scattered over it, as we sometimes see in an English park. We walked leisurely up the slope for about three hundred yards; and, resting ourselves under the wide-spreading shade of one of the lofty trees, had not only an extensive view of the whole extent of the peninsular promontory, but, our eye stretching its view to the extremity of the lake, saw the boundless ocean between that noble headland and the corresponding high cliffs of the opposite island. This situation was most inviting for a residence; the position was excellent in every respect,—the ground open, the soil good, the exposure favourable to tropical trees and vegetables, there being no longer protracted shade as at the cotton-tree plantation; and, while we admired the view, we compared the two situations, in all their relations, for a dwelling.

But at the termination of this beautiful spot westward, the land becomes steep and rocky, thickly covered with palms, and a variety of other trees. While we stood contemplating the rich scenery around us, Fidele, in his usual way, hunting about, had got unto the skirting of the forest: he began to bark, which induced us to turn our steps towards the place, expecting to find him at his

old game with an iguana; but before we had advanced many yards, we heard him yelp, and saw him presently brush out of the wood, followed by what we considered a small pig. I quickened my pace, and when he perceived help at hand, he turned round on his pursuer, which he kept at bay. By this time my dear wife was at my side, with her pike in her hand; and almost at the same moment, a drove of perhaps twenty of these pig-looking animals rushed out of the brake to the assistance of their comrade. There was no time for parley with so large a body. I had at first spared the single one, who was still skirmishing with Fidele; but now, without more ceremony, I discharged the musket, loaded with ball, direct amongst them, and one of them fell. During the short minute in which I was observing this horde of little barbarians, the advanced combatant had wounded Fidele with its tusk, who was then close to his mistress; she, at the same moment I fired, had struck her pike with great energy into the assailant's side; but he still made fight. Fidele, however, was not so badly hurt but that he now mustered strength enough to pin the little beast by the nose. On discharging my musket, I saw things in the situation described, and in an instant I drew my bill-hook from my belt, and cut the struggling animal almost in twain. The herd had run, on receiving the fire; but they were rallying again, and seemed disposed to advance towards us. "My dear Eliza," cried I, "you must retire to our boat; you may be hurt. I will re-load the musket, and soon disperse these animals." —"Give me one of your pistols, Edward," said she, "and I will not fear: although a woman, I feel I have some courage when necessary. My poor Fidele!" continued she, looking down at her faithful little dog, bleeding. I loaded the musket, and handed her one

of the pistols; feeling assured that she would use it properly, if required. She well knew how to draw the trigger, having frequently done so to ignite our fire; and I felt that the present occasion did inspire her with courage sufficient to make an efficient use of the weapon. The herd, the while advancing on us, gathered round the one I had shot; but not seeming disposed to approach further, I, not wishing to kill any of them unnecessarily, took up the slain animal that lay close to me, and began to retreat to the boat. At this sight the whole troop set up a snort, and made towards us. I was struck with terror for the safety of my wife; whom I desired instantly to get behind me. I knelt, to give my fire more effect; and when the foremost of them were within ten or twelve yards, I drew the trigger, and killed and wounded no less than three. Some now fled; others stood still; but three, more bold than their fellows, closed on us: my dear Eliza moved from behind me, and gave me her pike, with which I transfixed the one nearest to me; and to my great surprise she fired the pistol, and shot another that had got in our rear. Poor Fidele, who had seemed overpowered with terror, skulked close by the side of his mistress, until that moment, when he made an attack upon the third, which instantly gave him an ugly scratch with its tusk, and certainly would have killed him, had I not shot the enemy with my remaining pistol. This had been a severe and unexpected conflict; but now the field of battle was entirely deserted by the survivors amongst the herd, and then our first care was to examine our little friend's wounds, which were about the throat and shoulder, a sort of ripping of the skin, one of which was nearly two inches long. I reloaded my piece, by way of caution; but, not seeing anything like a pursuit, I again took the slain enemy of

Fidele, by the leg, to the boat; leaving all the rest of the killed, to the number of seven, behind. We now recognised the animal for the peccary, although neither of us had ever seen one before, but as represented in books of Natural History. It was a dark grey, rough, ugly hog-like looking little beast; about the size of a year-old pig. One of them appeared to be as much as we three victors could eat in as many days; therefore, acceptable as fresh meat might be to us, we did not choose to encumber ourselves with more; and, indeed, my dear wife and myself sincerely regretted the accident and encounter that had introduced us to it at all.

We got down to the boat without further molestation from the herd, and then proceeded to wash our heroic little dog's wounds. I got a pin from his pitying mistress, and a little thread; I bodkined the sides of the long wound with the pin, securing it by twisting the thread round it, as farriers do, to stanch the vein after bleeding a horse. I then laid the patient little creature safe down by Eliza's side, in the stern of the punt; and pushing off from the beach, rowed over to the other side of the bay, and there landed with our baskets, to take some refreshment, and give a drink of cool water to poor Fidele. Our stay here was short; we quickly re-embarked, and I pushed along the beach homewards, with all possible expedition. My kind-hearted wife had emptied the old basket, which was the largest, and with the help of my jacket, which I had pulled off, made up a comfortable bed for our wounded companion, and placed him in it; where he lay during our voyage, with great composure, his dear mistress talking to him, and thus consoling him all the way. The sun was just setting when the punt reached its destination. My first care was to take up the basket with her poor little friend;

and accompanying her and it to the plank-house, I left them. I then returned to the beach, and with a knife cut out certain parts of the peccary, which might taint the meat, and then hung the carcass by a large wooden peg, which I drove into a crevice of the western face of the promontory, until a moment for more attention to it. I left the crayfish in the punt, giving them a few buckets of sea-water to reconcile them to their situation; then taking up the remainder of our chattels, joined my dear wife at our peaceful wooden palace.

Fidele had fallen asleep, by which the mind of his kind mistress was set somewhat at ease, but much more so when I assured her the wounds were not deeper than through the skin, they having been made by the tusks and not with the teeth, and therefore only a superficial tearing or ripping of the skin, the flesh and other parts below being untouched. By this she was quite satisfied; for her feelings could always be easily brought to yield to her reasoning faculties. "Poor Fidele!" said she, "thou wilt soon be well again; but I am sorry we were obliged to destroy so many of thy assailants: I fear thou wert the aggressor, not they." Then turning to me, "Edward," said she, "they made a noble defence: neither Greeks nor Trojans ever fought more valiantly for their dead than those poor animals; and I cannot but regret so many perished in the conflict." "But, dear Eliza," I replied, "if we had not succeeded in destroying so many of them, I think it probable they would have destroyed every one of us, before we could reach the boat; for they made up in numbers and courage, what they wanted in individual strength."—"Well, then," she rejoined, "as it did happen, it could not have ended better; and we have much reason to be thankful to God for our own preservation, even at the expense of their

lives; and I will think no more of it, but in that point of view." After this dialogue, I left her to watch her wounded little champion, while I made a fire and got tea, which was highly acceptable to us both, after so trying a day; and, having finished our repast, I took up our invalid, in his snug wicker-bed, and carried him to our ship, where, placing him near to us in the state-room, he passed the night in quiet.

Thursday, 14th.—In the morning, our first object was to bathe his wounds with spirits; and after binding his neck with a handkerchief, and giving him a little water, we took him on shore again in the basket, from whence I removed him to a little bed, made up for him on the plank-settee, on which his mistress also seated herself with her needlework beside her. I employed myself for an hour cleaning and re-loading the fire-arms, which, for security, I had always kept in readiness; after which I went down to the beach, and kindling a large fire, slung the peccary over it on a pole, by his feet tied together, that I might burn off all his porcupine bristles, and then scrape him clean as a Gloucestershire hog for bacon. I confess it was warm work; and during the process, I wished over and over again that I had skinned the animal, as most nations (excepting the English and their colonies) do all they kill of the hog kind; but, John Bull like I had gone to work, and like John Bull I persevered to the end. I then tied its feet again together, which had been untied for scraping, and carried it into the cave, where I suspended it on a peg that I drove into a crevice of the rock. I then returned to my dear wife to breakfast, and to report my morning's work. She praised my perseverance, but lamented my fatigue, sweetening every morsel I eat with her affectionate smile.

Fidele lapped a little flour and water with some sugar

in it, but had no stomach for more substantial fare; yet on the whole the poor animal seemed doing very well. I soon after left them, and went to secure the crayfish, by driving some shingles into the sand, in a semicircular form, just below water-mark, and on the other side of the rock, where they could enjoy the run of fresh water, to which element they had been accustomed. The shingles were placed close enough together to prevent the escape of the crayfish; and there was at least a foot in depth of water within some parts of the craal. On my return, I had the pleasure to see our two goats browsing, and their kids gamboling around them, close by the spring-head. During my absence, my dear Eliza had observed the armadillo through the window, prowling about his enclosure looking for food; and, when I rejoined her, she was feeding him with pieces of melon from her hand. I was quite pleased with this proof of its docility; and looked on, till he had enough, with increased satisfaction in the happy interest she took in all her dumb dependants. Towards noon I returned to the cave, to portion our peccary for store and immediate use. For this, I cut it into quarters, and put the two hinder ones into a bucket, with plenty of salt, on which I laid stones for a weight. I then reserved some pieces, to make broth for our wounded little hero; and building up a suitable fire, with a large flat fragment of rock placed before it, like a screen: when this stone was well heated, I laid down a fore-quarter of the peccary to roast, setting a brown dish under it; so that the meat had the fire in front, and the hot stone behind; and I basted it occasionally with some of our Irish butter. All this was completed without much trouble, or great exposure to heat from the fire, and none from the sun, for the place was still in shade, even at noon. About two o'clock I took it up, with a roasted yam, and some of the

broth, to the plank-house, and set it on the table, which my attentive helpmate had prepared for the expected dinner. When she saw it, she gently said, "I wish I did not know that this was part of the peccary; I really do not like to eat it; yet I owe it to you, my kind Edward, to your fatigue and trouble about it, to banish every other feeling than the desire of pleasing you: I will therefore dine on it with you, and I hope cheerfully." I thanked her for her sensible and gracious determination; and she smilingly received a plate of the broth from my hand, and gave it to Fidele, who seemed to mightily approve the mess. The roast looked very well, but did not taste quite as agreeable: however, by the aid of a little lime-juice and capsicum, we contrived to make a dinner. Eliza, true to her resigned spirit, did not complain of its being unpleasant; but I did; and proposed the lime and capsicum: as she had conquered her moral objection to it, the physical repugnance, was to her too insignificant for a murmur. About an hour after our repast, as my dear Eliza had been confined all day with our wounded friend, I volunteered to remain with him, while she should take a little walk, by way of exercise, to the thicket and the spring. She obeyed my wish with pleasure, carrying with her some bruised corn for the three hens hatching their broods, and also for the four sitting ducks; the two lately missed having been discovered near the spring-head, sitting on eggs, in snug nests amongst the rocks. While she was absent, my little charge showed himself very sensible to my condolence and attentions; and I felt the happiness I was bestowing, even on a dumb creature, reflected graciously in my own breast.

My dear wife bent her steps first to the spring. On her return to visit the thicket, she saluted me by kissing her hand as she passed the plank-house. She did not

tarry long on her errand there, soon coming back to me again, and with a brisk step approaching the platform (where I had now placed myself with our little dog), she told me she had fed the poultry; but having taken a peep into the cave, found there, fluttering on the floor, two young full-feathered pigeons, which, in attempting to fly out through the aperture, must have dropped, probably in a first trial. She held them tenderly in her hands, and showed them to me with a pitying kind of pleasure. "Now, my dear Edward," said she, "we can keep these, and tame them without hurting them!"—"Certainly," replied I; "to keep them, we have only to cut one of their wings; and if we set them down in the cave, and throw a little bruised corn, then the old ones will feed them there: so we may even get more, if we choose."—"Oh, no!" she replied; "I wish to tame these near ourselves: but if the old ones would come to them, when with us, we should treat them well; and by so doing, we, perhaps, might tame some of them also."—"Well, dearest," I rejoined, "we will do even as you propose." I now took her scissors, and cut the long feathers of one wing in each pigeon; and, for the present, deposited her new pets in the old basket, now vacated by Fidele. During tea the goats came gamboling before our door; but the now nursing ducks did not choose to leave their cool spring; and for the gallant but solitary cock, he now seldom appeared beyond the thicket avenue, patiently waiting the forthcoming of his young progeny. When evening drew on, I placed the basket with the young pigeons in the cave, scattering plenty of bruised corn around; and then, returning to the plank-house, took Fidele in my arms, and made our escape on board before the sand-flies began to buzz.

Friday, 15th.—Our dear little dog was on foot in the cabin as soon as we arose, and seemed quite himself

again; which induced me to take off the bandage placed around his neck: finding the long slit well united, I drew out the pin, and the thread-twisting fell to the ground. I bathed the part again with spirits, and his mistress put on a clean neckcloth; we could not but smile at the fine bow she tied on one side of his face; although he appeared almost ready to run, I thought it best to carry him on shore. On landing, she visited her pigeons in the cave, while I remained with Fidele in the plank-house. When she returned, she told me, that when she went in she found a great many pigeons pecking on the floor, and that one of them was in the basket, feeding the young ones, which had both their bills in her mouth. She was quite pleased with the sight, and I with the details of it. We now agreed on the policy of placing the basket in the avenue, at wider and wider distances, gradually from the mouth of the cave, with corn scattered round, until at last we should lure the old ones to follow it, and feed at our door. That point settled, I walked down to the rocks before breakfast, to hoe a little round the plants for half an hour, and was delighted to see many melons and pumpkins larger than an egg. Having nothing else to do, I brought home a load of firewood, which I had cut some days before. On my return, I found my dear wife had boiled the kettle, and roasted the last of our plantains for breakfast: of which wholesome vegetable we this morning took our leave with some regret; for they were an excellent substitute for bread. During the forenoon I employed myself on board, in getting several articles for our daily consumption from the hold, for it was there all the ship's stores of salt provisions, flour, etc. were kept. On my return I went into the cave, and found, notwithstanding the comparative coolness of the place, that the other fore-

quarter of the peccary was no longer fit for the use of our table. I therefore carried it down to the crayfish tank, and threw it in; but I did not observe any of them approach it. I then baited one of the hooks at the conservatory, where I soon drew up a mullet; meaning it for our dinner. I showed the fish to my dear wife, telling her I had been obliged to throw the quarter of the peccary away; but did not say I had given it to the crayfish, lest she might not like to eat of them in consequence. The salted hind quarters, I had found in very good order. Fidele now partook of our present usual fare; for the stiffness of his jaws, from his neck-wound, having passed away, he sat up, begging for some fish, which he eat with a sharp appetite.

In the afternoon I proposed to row to the plantation: we accordingly accoutred ourselves; and I carried Fidele to the punt. The little voyage was pleasant; and we soon found ourselves in the midst of our plantation. Every thing was flourishing: the Indian corn was several inches above ground, high enough for the hoe; and the sugar canes had grown another foot: so that I found plenty of employment until the evening. My dear wife, with Fidele at her foot, stood near me while at work, and we both surveyed with pleasure and thankfulness the promising reward of my labour.

We returned with improved spirits from this part of our island domain; and my Eliza, like a kind parent welcoming her young brood, began immediately feeding the armadillo liberally with melon, and the goats with pumpkin cut in slices. The evening was delightfully cool, which induced us to remain sitting on the platform until the stars appeared; though with them, the sand-flies also: however, we were not disposed to be driven away; so I had recourse to a cigar, while my dear love

nestled close to me, and we enjoyed not a little the serenity which our situation cast around us. The cigar finished, we departed to our ship, and to repose.

Saturday, 16th.—I thought it right to pump the ship out this morning; my wife the while rummaged the captain's chest, and took out a new jacket and some striped trousers; my broad skirted coats and short tight breeches not being at all convenient for my present occupations. We disembarked to breakfast, and I went to the cave to inspect our corned meat; which I found sweet, and fit for use. It occurred to me to look at the place where I had driven in the peg to hang the peccary on, as it appeared to me at the time of my hammering at it, to sound hollow. On examining the spot, I was confirmed in that opinion. On rejoining my wife, I told her my surmise; and we determined, after breakfast, to satisfy ourselves respecting it. Accordingly we repaired together to the cave, and I knocked my hammer about in various directions wherever I saw a crevice; and though there certainly was a difference of sound near some of them, she thought it could only arise from natural irregularities in the rock, probably by fissures; and so we returned as we went. Next day being the Sabbath, we now employed ourselves in preparing and dressing some provisions, and in doing every other thing requisite to keep it holy, so as to give the Creator of the whole earth a seventh of that time, which is altogether his own, and which he has appointed as the type of the blessed rest prepared in everlasting mansions for his people.

Sunday, 17th.—We arose with the sun, and performed our usual water sluicings on deck. It has been well said, "that cleanliness is next to godliness;" it is, in truth, the symbol of inward purity; and, therefore, we thought it no sin to make our grand ablutions on the morning of

each returning Sabbath. The sea-water thrown over us, was highly refreshing and invigorating; and nothing but the dread of the sharks, which we had once seen near our shore, prevented us daily bathing on the beach. But I now hoped to soon find leisure to erect a bath, so that we should at once enjoy the pure and ample wave, and be placed in safety from those terrible fish. We dressed ourselves neatly; she, in the work of her hands, which during the last few days she had been adapting to present convenience; and I, in the captain's jacket and trousers; enjoying ourselves awhile on the quarter-deck, until it was time to go on shore to breakfast. We first visited the young pigeons in the basket, and brought them forth before the plank-house, where we put them out, and strewed some corn: we watched earnestly to see what would be the result, and to my Eliza's great delight, while we were at our repast, the old birds came to them, and fed them by the basket. Our poor solitary cock came up amongst them, apparently glad of their company.

After breakfast I read the Morning service, and my dear wife the lessons of the day; concluding with one of Archbishop Tillotson's excellent sermons. "If ye love me," saith our blessed Saviour, "keep my commandments." We then took food to the rest of our dumb friends, and Eliza fed her armadillo: the so-recently shy creature now went round the inside of the stoccado from place to place, following her as she altered her position with the slices of melon in her hand. We dined on what had been provided yesterday, giving thanks, with more than our daily fervency, for the bounties of that God, "in whom we live, and move, and have our being." In the afternoon we read some chapters in Isaiah, and a part of the Gospel of St. John; and then took a ramble into the woodland regions; Fidele following closely, and

sedately, at the foot of his mistress. It was happiness unutterable so to walk, her arm linked in mine; with the one of all earthly beings the most dear; not bone of my bone, but soul of my soul,—one mind, one spirit, one faith, one hope, of a blessed communion with each other for ever in Christ; who is the power and wisdom of God, by whom all things were created, and by whom alone mankind can be saved from the effect of sin, unto the resurrection of eternal life.

Monday, 18th.—We arose with daylight, and, on account of the valetudinary state of our little dog, used the punt, to visit the cocoa-nut grove; where the progressive state of our plants constantly required the hoe. The melons and pumpkins had attained the size of lemons; and the yams and coccos well up; but the stems of the former appeared weak. While I employed myself at my husbandry, my dear wife visited her capsicums among the earthy places of the rocky ledge, and found them also well forward. Having finished the hoeing, I next took the gaskets, and ascending one of the trees, cut off about a dozen young cocoa-nuts, which I carried down to the punt on the beach, without disencumbering them of their husks, the distance being inconsiderable.

After my morning's labour I was disposed to rest awhile at the plank-house, lingering over our breakfast; and during our conversation, it turned upon the sounding crevices in the cave; and the idea still possessed me, that in some places the hollows must be deeper than a mere fissure in the rock,—perhaps, some inner cavern; and I therefore proposed taking a heavy hatchet-hammer to sound the rock again all along the inside, to try more convincingly the real depth of the hollows. My wife liked the notion of disinterring another convenient recess in our cavern, to which, perhaps, some future removal of

the thin wall of rock, might admit us. I accordingly took my strongest hatchet, and struck the sides of the place as before, in various parts, with the hammer end; and was quickly satisfied that the sound from the spot near the crevice where I had hung the peccary, and for several yards beyond it, was very different from that produced by striking on the other parts of the cavern. We now brought in a light; for this place was the darkest, and therefore the coolest in the cave: it was for this reason I had selected it for our larder. When we had the advantage of a candle, to our amazement an artificial appearance of inserted stones was evident. We now reflected on the circumstance of the military belt, and the chocolate trees at the cavern's mouth; and thought this built-up partition must be connected with those things.

I lost no time in going on board for a crow-bar, which I had seen in the fore-cuddy; and, bringing it, commenced the work of dislodging the stones. Crowds of pigeons, which the first noise of my hatchet had alarmed, now, at this greater disturbance, fled precipitately out of the hole at the further end: we were at first vexed at this, but soon reconciled ourselves to their temporary fright, by knowing that the return of stillness in their ancient abode, would unquestionably attract them back again. After very short work, I had extracted sufficient of the stones (which had formed a wall, very like the natural broken-rock interior of the cave), to lay open a hole large enough to admit my body; and, on thrusting in my head and shoulders, I did indeed perceive a kind of chamber, dimly lit by a glimmering light from a narrow fissure above, but which had not power to shew me anything within. By this aperture, I knew that the air now admitted from the opening made below, would instantly

clear the place of all foul vapour that might exist within; and, after resting a moment to explain this to my attentive Eliza, I wormed myself into the recess, and received the candle from her hand. The floor of the place was covered deep with sand, which was quite dry; and for some time I could not discover anything worthy of notice; but, on moving forward about three yards, I saw a collection of small canvass bags, ranged side by side, and behind them a long wooden box. Without stopping to examine their contents, I stepped back to the hole, and desired my wife to come in, telling her what I had seen. She quickly got through, following the candle and me; and opening one of the bags, I discerned at a glance some sparkling metal. "This is treasure!" cried I. She instantly exclaimed, "May it please God to preserve us!"—"From what, dearest?" I replied, tumbling out several large pieces of coin. "They are full of dollars," she rejoined, "and of what use are they to us?"—"Well, sweet Eliza," I replied, "they can do us no harm; we can leave them where we find them, if we please."—"Just so," she answered. "However," said I, "we will examine the box." The lid was nailed down, so it could not be opened without a chisel; we therefore quitted the recess, till I should bring the necessary implement from the carpenter's chest, and returned to the plank-house. I held some pieces of the money in my hand, which had fallen out of the bag, and by the candle-light had appeared white: we then concluded they were dollars, but we now discovered, by daylight, that they were gold doubloons. I remarked this vast difference in their value to my dear wife. "Well," said she, "Edward, it is all the same to us, dollars or doubloons, or our own English farthings: we cannot send to market with money here. Your health, my honoured husband,

is our wealth, and God's blessing is our exhaustless mine! So I care nothing about these; only this, that I fear the discovery will be a source of great uneasiness, if not of misery, to us."—"Very well, dearest," I replied, "if there be any more of it in the other bags, with you and God for my guide, I hope I shall not make a bad use of it, should I ever have the opportunity."—"I hope—I believe, you would not, my dear Edward," she rejoined; "but riches are a snare."—"My own Eliza," I answered gravely, "bags of gold can be no riches to me, where we are; they may as well be full of the sand that covers the floor."

Here the dialogue ended; and with less haste about going for the chisel, I set about preparing dinner, in which my Eliza, cheerful as usual, assisted me; and we dined on the last corned quarter of the peccary, which was still very good; and the salt had drawn out the rankness of the meat that exists in its fresh state. "Now, my own!" said I, "let us go and inspect the box." She relit our candle; and I taking a chisel and mallet with me, we proceeded to the cave, and again entered the recess. I opened the box; it was full of all sorts of gold and silver articles—representations of the Crucifixion; the Virgin and Child, in highly-wrought silver shrines; gold hilts for swords; large earrings of gold; some ingots of gold; and a considerable quantity of gold and silver tissue; and some silver lavers, and other costly things. My dear wife admired all these beautiful pieces of workmanship very much, making many appropriate remarks on the different articles; and when we had examined all, she gently said, "Dear Edward, let us now shut the box up, and the place in which it is also: these things do not belong to us."—"O, very well!" I hastily replied: "as you please! I don't care a rush about them!" In mutual

silence we stepped out of the recess, and I thrust in the loose stones again.

After sitting down in the plank-house, and after a few moments' musing, I said, "My dear Eliza, we will let this matter rest for the present, and discuss it at our leisure; for I trust that, whatever we may conclude to do, will have a blessing, and not a curse."—"Don't let it perplex you, my honoured husband," she replied; "we will pray God to direct you." This affair was of too much importance, to remain unsettled. I turned the doubloons over and over in my hand, and found on them the head of Carolus II., which, although looking as if just out of the mint, bore the date of 1670. "Eliza," said I, "when we look at the date of this coin, and consider the situation in which we discovered the belt, the probability is, that this treasure has been here at least fifty or sixty years, and that there are no persons living to whom it belongs. Besides, most likely, the persons who placed it where it is, were buccaneers, who despoiled some Spanish vessel of it; the first owners, then, are doubtlessly killed. Hence it does not belong to any one; at least not to any one that could, with the utmost diligence be discovered. Therefore possession is the only right which, under such circumstances, can be set up; and it is a duty I owe to myself and to you, and to all connected with us, though on distant shores, to endeavour to preserve this treasure, and to convey it to England, if ever an opportunity should offer. With your consent and approbation, my beloved wife, I will act according to this reasoning." She did not answer me for some time: at last she said, "If those to whom it rightfully belongs, cannot have it, I certainly see no just reason why you should not do as you propose—preserve it for your own use, and so apply it, should the occasion ever present

itself."—"Well, my dear Eliza, that is the principle on which I shall act; and, on that principle, allow me to lose no time in securing the fortune which has fallen so wonderfully into our hands."

The question was now set at rest between us, by which a great weight was taken off my mind: for my exemplary friend, as well as obedient wife, would never have uttered an assent to any measure not founded on moral propriety. It was but a few hours since I had discovered this hoard of gold; and, with all my efforts, I could not settle to my work as before. I continued in the plank-house, talking on subjects far from our little island; and I asked my sweetly attentive companion, to give us some wine, which she did immediately; and I sat, and discoursed, and drank wine, till tea-time. She often smiled as I talked, but would not disturb my humour; and that visionary hour or two, passed off very well. We fed our animals, and retired early to the vessel.

Tuesday, 19th.—My sleep during the night was harassed by strange dreams, so incoherent, they could not be recounted; but all bore on the treasure in the cave. On waking, I mentioned them to my dear wife, though I really felt ashamed that the late matter had so completely engrossed my mind. After discussing the subject for an hour, she concluded by saying, "Well, my Edward, whatever you wish to do, I will join you in most cheerfully." And she said this with great emphasis, as she always did when she had made up her mind to so pledge herself. I received her assurance affectionately; and we left the vessel for the shore.

After breakfast, I proposed that we should examine the whole of the bags, with their contents; and accordingly, on entering the cave, I removed the loose stones from the breach in the wall, and we again found ourselves

in the recess. I counted the bags, and found forty, each of them not larger than the top of a stocking; but, on reckoning out the doubloons from the bag we had first found, the result was five hundred; and on breaking the stirngs, which were quite mouldering, of some others, I saw their contents to be the same. The bags themselves, also, were nearly rotten, although they lay in a bed of dry sand. "We have here," said I, "my dear Eliza, a corroborating proof of the great length of time this money has been hidden in this place."—"Well," she replied, "but what are we to do with it?"—"You must make new bags," was my answer, "and I will make boxes to pack them in; and then we will leave them here, ready for any opportunity that may occur to remove them and us. For we may hope that, in the course of time, some providential vessel may hover near us, and give us means to return to our native home, to bless with our riches and our presence those whom we fondly love."—"Ah! dear Edward!" she exclaimed, "it may indeed please God that we are to be the instruments of comfort to your family and to mine, and, with these riches, be a blessing to the poor." Thus saying, she embraced me tenderly.

There sometimes is a sort of foreseeing impulse in the mind that cannot be checked, and such was that which I now felt respecting the purpose of these bags of doubloons: my mind seemed assured of the possibilities of certain events; and contemplating them (though perhaps afar off) as if they really existed, I saw opportunities in a thousand shapes of quitting the island with our treasure; and I desired to be ready for the favourable moment. I therefore hastened to get up some new canvass from the fore-cuddy of the brig, and as speedily cut it out into forty pieces, for as many bags. "Now, my own Eliza," said I, "you must sew up these, as strongly

as you can, and I will make boxes to pack them in; so shall they be prepared for whatever may be our own destiny." Here was at least a fortnight's employment for us; and, as my agricultural business had been for the present completed, we immediately began occupying ourselves with our task. During the remainder of the week, we worked together at the treasure deposits; and this circumstance seemed a happy earnest connected with it. We did not, however, neglect our little dependants the while; and there having been some showers of rain within the last few days, we fondly anticipated their salutary effects on our young plantations.

On Sunday the 24th, we rested from our labours, and kept the Sabbath; but I confess we did not feel so serenely devout on this day, as had been usual to us: yet we read the service of the church, and engaged ourselves in other spiritual exercises; but our thoughts too often recurred to the strange discovery of the preceding week: still it was the Sabbath, and we found it so to our minds, for we prayed fervently to God for direction and support, to be our counsellor and comforter, and not to permit us to forsake him, and our life of holy hope, for any earthly considerations.

On our coming on shore, we were agreeably greeted near the thicket avenue by the appearance of one of our fowls, with her brood of twelve; and recollecting that another was sitting at the same time in the hatch, we visited her just in time to assist her little progeny to step down to the greensward, or rather wild herbage; of these there were as many as thirteen, and I can truly say we were more delighted in seeing this increase to our family, than in finding all the treasure: the one was unalloyed; the other was encompassed with care and misgivings. My dear wife fed the mother hens, before

our own breakfast, with plenty of bruised corn, of which the little strangers endeavoured to partake; while the two young pigeons also walked about pecking familiarly with the group; and, notwithstanding the late disturbance I had occasioned in the cave, several of the older birds joined the feathered society, and fed with them. The armadillo was now so tame that he might have been let out, but we thought, for fear of alarming our nursing party, we had best keep him a little longer in his enclosure.

After dinner, we took a walk through the woodland region to the plantation, and there felt a renewal of our former pure happiness, while contemplating the progress our plants had made; and with these renewed spirits, we sat down under the great tree, feeling sensibly that the society of each other, and the favour of God, was all we required on earth to fill our hearts with joy and gratitude. Our dear little dog also, now quite well, seemed to participate our lively pleasure in this emancipation from our long captivity, in bag and coffer making; and, if he could have spoken, would doubtless have pronounced a malediction on all buccaneers and their doubloons. We returned to our house an hour before the sun dropped; and, having read some chapters in the Bible, took our tea, and retired to rest.

Monday, 25th.—On rising this morning, I, as well as my dear wife, could not help expressing a wish that we had never found the treasure; for it had discomposed our minds, and sadly thrown us out of the customary tenor of our employments. However, having taken our resolution not to absolutely throw away, by utter neglect of its preservation, what we had discovered, we continued to persevere in making the bags and boxes, and all were finished by the following Saturday morning. We then

counted the contents of each old bag, as they were turned over into the new bags, and found each to contain exactly five hundred doubloons. I had made each box to hold three of the bags, which I packed closely with sand, thirteen boxes in all; and there was one bag over, which I removed to the plank-house. We were heartily glad when the business was completed; and so sick were we of it, that I built up the wall again, shutting the whole in, without looking a second time into the great chest that contained so much gold in various shapes.

In the course of the week, two of the ducks had brought out their broods,—one of eight, the other of ten; and, busy as we had been, we did not omit to carefully house them every evening in a place I had built for them near the spring.

Sunday, March 3d.—We arose this morning, and blessed God, as if delivered from some great calamity. Our hearts were again light, and we enjoyed ourselves, arm in arm, on deck, after dressing for the day with a new delight. The sun was up, yet the morning was cool; and we looked once more around, alive to all the beauties of nature that surrounded us. Surely there is something, even in the touch of gold, that demoralizes the man! Such was my reflection. This Sabbath was passed in great comfort of mind, and in the due exercises of religious duty.

Monday, 4th. — We congratulated each other, on leaving our cabin this morning, that we had done with the counting and packing the doubloons; but nevertheless I smilingly remarked that I had large possessions, both in land and money, without a title to either! "But," said my dear wife, with an answering smile, "if there is not any one to show a better title, possession here will surely give you the right. However," added she, more

seriously, "we will leave the issue of our extraordinary situation, in the hands of Him who placed us in it."—"Just so, my love," I replied; "and here we will leave the subject."

But the subject was not so easily got rid of; it haunted me in spite of myself. "I should like, dear Eliza," said I, a little while afterwards, "to make another excursion to the summit of our promontory; we ought not to neglect the possibility of discerning vessels in the offing: and, besides, I wish to make some more observations on our island with the spy-glass, as the adventure with the peccaries has alarmed you and Fidele from any further excursions beyond our own immediate domain." To this proposition she made no objection; and her little friend being now quite recovered, we were enabled to march out again, in due order.

We accordingly harnessed ourselves with pike and bill-hook, pistols and musket, and the ship's glass; and my dear wife putting up refreshments in her basket, we stepped into the punt, and I rowed round to the further extremity of the cotton-tree plantation. We landed, and proceeded through the wood to the foot of the hill; and, having deposited our basket under the tree at the commencement of the ascent, where, on a former occasion, I had cleared a pathway to the ravine, we began to clamber and climb, and in about an hour we gained the summit of the promontory. I here looked attentively around, sweeping the horizon with my glass wherever the land did not intervene; but no sail was discovered. I then directed my eye to all the shores of the islands within sight, but nothing presented itself worthy of attention, excepting some large black birds, hovering about the place where the peccaries had been killed. We supposed these birds to be the carrion vulture, drawn to the spot, and perhaps

even to the island, by the smell of dead and putrefying animals. We returned by ten o'clock to the tree where our provisions had been left; and, while I opened the basket, Eliza owned being a little disappointed in not having surprised another armadillo, to be a companion to her domesticated prize. We had, however, the pleasure to observe some of the shaddocks, and oranges, and limes, we had then sown, now above ground, and promising well. Our position was in deep shade, and therefore highly agreeable; so that, after our fatiguing expedition up and down the side of the promontory, we enjoyed our collation, to which a cocoa-nut shell of cool wine and water, was an excellent appendage.

After breakfast I moved the punt to the northern part of the plantation, to save us the labour of carrying the basket; and there landing again, I occupied myself an hour in cleaning the ground round our various plants, which were all in high vegetation; even the tobacco, and American corn, and Virginian pumpkins, were fairly up, and looking well. At noon we rested under our arbour tent, the dear cotton tree; and, being in a place of safety, gave ourselves up to sleep. We were on foot again about three o'clock; and visiting the little neighbouring spring for some cool fresh water, we there had the satisfaction of seeing both the shaddocks and orange plants (designed for two future groves) in green germ of growing luxuriance. We returned to dinner beneath the perpetual shade of our patriarchal tree: and, after finishing our meal, I cut some sticks from the adjoining thicket, to support the slender stems of the yams, which I thought required it by their seeming weakness; for never having seen the yam grow, and being quite ignorant of its cultivation, I did that which appeared necessary. We returned, by the punt, in the cool of the evening, and stepped on

shore a little before sunset. I felt that we had not enjoyed this day's excursion as we used to do; the beauties of the place were not so much the subjects of remark as formerly, and nothing was said of its eligibility for our permanent residence. It was evident that the discovery of gold had instilled a subtle poison into my mind at least, that continued its secret operation, in spite of all my excellent conclusions and good resolves. We were, however, much pleased with seeing our two broods of young ducks waddling up to their home, as we landed; and while my dear wife stood by them, I ran up to the plank-house, and brought down some bruised corn, which I mixed with water for them in a hollow stone, close by the door of their habitation. We walked thence with the goats and their kids, and were met at our door by the gallant cock, and his numerous progeny. It was our next care to feed them, and to cut up a pumpkin for the goats, not forgetting a melon for the armadillo; and all this gave us real gratification, very different indeed from the fevered hopes which arose from counting and packing the gold. After regaling ourselves with a damaged pine-apple, we retired to our marine abode, to pray, and to rest.

Tuesday, 5th.—On rising in the morning, we talked over a little change in our accommodation. The increasing heat of the weather, had made it rather unpleasant in the state-room at night, so I employed myself after breakfast in slinging a cot in the great cabin, it being more airy for a dormitory; and in the end it proved to be not only an agreeable, but a healthy expedient. While I was thus employed, my dear helpmate made us some johnny-cakes, a West-Indian sort of tea-bread, and a pumpkin-pie. I then went down to the cray-fish craal, and was bringing one home with me, when,

in my walk back, I observed several young pumpkins, about the size of English penny rolls. I cut off half a dozen, and put them into my basket: my wife, on seeing them, expressed a fear that I had gathered them prematurely. "Oh, no!" I replied, "they eat them in America in this state; and when boiled, and mashed with a little butter and pepper, they are as good as turnips."* This intelligence pleased her, for she had sometimes wished for some greener vegetables to eat with our fish or meat, than the yam or coccos. The crayfish was put on the fire, and also the young pumpkins; and (reserving the pie for the morrow) we made an excellent and a salubrious dinner; for we did not feel that inconvenience after eating this smaller crayfish, which we experienced on a former occasion, when we eat of the large one we had found on the beach after the storm. In the evening I pursued some of our daily usual occupations; and when the stars appeared, we retired composed to our place of rest, anticipating a cool and comfortable sleep, in which we were not disappointed.

Wednesday, 6th.—We arose unusually refreshed, feeling as if we had slept in another climate, and quite delighted with our swinging bed. On coming on shore, we visited our third hen, having calculated that her brood should be out about that time, and found her surrounded by a numerous progeny, no less than fourteen. By this accession we had altogether thirty-nine chickens; a most welcome store towards our future subsistence. After breakfast I proposed to my dear wife, that, as all my husbandry was completed for the season, I should seize the interval, and begin my operations for constructing us a house on the open glade near the cotton-

* This appears to be exactly what is now reared, and eaten in England, under the name of vegetable marrow.—Ed.

tree plantation; for though we might hope it would please God, at some period, to afford us an opportunity to remove from the island to our native home, yet meanwhile it would be to our happiness to wait patiently on him for his own time, and think only on such matters as most directly and immediately concerned us. These were her own sentiments, and she was delighted in hearing me speak as I had done. But she entreated, that whatever I did towards building the house, I would go about it leisurely, and not with that indefatigable zeal which hitherto had manifested itself in the speedy accomplishment of every thing I undertook. I gave her my promise to be moderate in my exertions; assuring her that I would confine myself to four hours' work each morning, in the combined operations of getting materials from the ship, and in carrying them across the isthmus, and conveying them by the punt to the nearest place below the intended site of our dwelling.

After this discussion, while I was absent, examining the success of my fish-pot, my dear Eliza recollected a large and small coffee-mill she had seen in the captain's cabin; which, perhaps, he was taking to some friend at Honduras; and she brought them on shore. "Edward," said she, "this large one will make a nice corn-mill for the poultry; and I will roast some coffee, and grind it in this," showing me the small mill; it will save our tea, and be an agreeable change." I was much pleased at the sight of these mills, which had escaped my observation on board; but I was still more pleased with the kind and affectionate manner in which she introduced them to my notice. "After we have dined, darling," said I, "we will fix them both up for service, fastened against the side of our palace." To-day we dined sumptuously on a fine fish I found in the fish-pot, and, being fresh from

the sea, we relished it greatly. Our dear little dog, too, seemed to make a better dinner than he lately had done on fish; so that I was led to conclude he had discovered something different in the taste, which perhaps in time would have rendered the live store in the cask even unwholesome. In the evening I fixed up the mills in the interior of our palace, and having brought some coffee, which we roasted in the frying-pan, I ground it; and my Eliza soon had the pleasure of presenting me with a cup of its refreshing beverage.

Thursday, 7th.—We arose with the dawn; and while I commenced my operations in the hold, to get up planks and boards, and some long-squared pieces of timber, purposely made for house-building at Honduras, my active helpmate went on shore to attend to our poultry; and, while feeding them, she was delighted with meeting the other two missing ducks and their broods, near the spring-head; one had brought out nine, the other eight; so that of the four broods we mustered thirty-seven young ones. As the remaining six old ducks were still marching about, we began to suspect they were all drakes; and this suspicion was strengthened by observing a considerable difference in the appearance of their heads, contrasted with that of those now on duty over their broods. These Muscovy ducks are altogether clumsy creatures; far inferior in point of form or plumage to those of England: the drake having little to distinguish him beyond an exuberance of red fleshy excrescences about his head.

After our own breakfast, I set to grinding corn; and found the mill do so well, that we looked to it as a fruitful resource for our own use, in case we should be necessitated, by the spoiling of our flour through time, to eat Indian corn thus prepared in its stead; but we hoped that day was a long way off, for the Americans press their

flour so hard into their casks, that air or damp cannot penetrate them. In the afternoon we walked over to the cocoa-nut grove, where I employed myself hoeing for an hour; and saw, with satisfaction, every thing in a flourishing condition. We finished our evening on the platform of our palace, as usual, and retired early to our vessel.

I will now pass through the rest of the month, by observing cursorily, that I worked for four hours in the morning of every week-day, getting forward the materials for building our residence, on the open space beyond the silk-cotton tree; and I also contrived to find time to make a secure place with planks and fragments of the rock, covered in at the top, under the larboard bow of the brig, for a bathing-place; which proved a source of great comfort and delight to us both. Nor did I neglect to dress the ground at one or other of the plantations, every evening. My dear wife the while attended to the stock, and other domestic matters; always happy when the Sunday came round, being ever to us a Sabbath day.

Monday, April 8th.—During the preceding month I had conveyed all the materials to the spot for our new residence. But many of the melons and pumpkins required gathering; the corn was ripening apace; and the yams and the coccos would soon be fit to dig: so that labour of a different kind called on me to suspend further operations towards raising our plantation house. I, however, set about erectiug a temporary shed near the great tree, to shelter the various produce of our grounds, as I might be able to get them in. This operation brought round another week; and on the Sabbath we blessed and praised God, and I rested from my labour.

CHAPTER IX.

Monday, 15th April.—While my dear wife and I were enjoying our breakfast under the wide shadow of our arbour tree, we were struck dumb by the sudden appearance of a large canoe, between us and the opposite island. To arms was the first impulse: I put my pistols, which were lying near us, into my belt; and after looking at each other for a few moments with astonishment, I said, "Fear nothing, my beloved wife! They may be nothing more than a few harmless Indians, driven hither by some accident. I will wave to them to land."—"Then," replied she, "may our God be with us, as we mean them kindly!" I took her pike, and tied a white napkin, that lay in the basket, to it, as a flag; and with it she and I ran to the highest part of the open ground, where we held it up, waving it, the more to attract their attention. In a few minutes the people discovered us, for they were little more than half a mile distant from the shore. They immediately turned the canoe's head towards our flag, and soon began to hail us; but we could not understand them: our only answer, therefore, was still waving our signal. My dear wife, however, bethought herself of running back to the cotton tree, whence she brought a fine melon, and held it up in her hand, while I continued to flourish my staff of invitation. They were now lying on their paddles, about a cable's length off, apparently in consultation. At sight of the melon they spoke to us again, and we heard the word "amigos," or something very like it. The Latin I had learned at school made me catch at it. "Amicus!" thought I, "that will do;" and I hallooed out "amigos!" as loudly as I could, imitating their pronunciation of the

word, and again waving the flag. On this they began to paddle in earnest towards us; but we kept our commanding position, walking along the high ground as we approached the water, until we should see them more distinctly. As they drew near the shore, we discovered two men, two women, and a girl in the canoe, all negroes. I now perceived we had nothing to fear; so I made signs to the men to row a little to the northward, that they might land clear of the rocks. Meanwhile we proceeded forward, with our dear little dog by our side, to meet them. We descended to the beach just as the canoe touched the shore. The people did not jump on land instantly, but stood, or sat, surveying us attentively. At length the elder of the men stepped out, and stooping before me, embraced my knees. I raised him up, while my wife, with the look of an angel, gave him the melon; and I, to show him I had no misgivings, took a clasp-knife from my pocket, and putting it into his hand unopened, made signs to him to cut the melon, and divide it among his party. It was a water-melon, and in their situation, parching with thirst, as we afterwards learned, nothing could be more grateful or acceptable. He returned into the canoe, and, opening the knife, cut the melon into slices, and presented it to his companions. As they ate of it, they looked much pleased; and, on our beckoning, they all came out of the canoe, drawing it up a little after them on the shore, and sat down upon the beach, the elder man giving me back my knife. After they had finished with the melon, I made signs to the two men to rise and go with me, at the same time saying to my wife, "Will you be afraid to stay with the women?" She answered, with firmness, "Certainly not." The men hesitated to leave the women, as they did not suppose that my dear partner was other than a caballero, till one of the women suddenly seemed to recognise

her sex; and then speaking to the men to that purpose, as I supposed, they readily went with me. I took them to the silk-cotton tree, where our morning's provisions lay, which had scarcely been tasted when we discovered the canoe. I put the salt beef and biscuit, and other things, into the basket, giving it to one of the men to carry, and to the other the canteen with water. I then returned with them back to the beach: as we drew near, my companions laughed and shouted to their women, who answered by clapping their hands, accompanied by some vociferous expressions indicative of joy. I caused them to move a little higher up, where I spread the provisions before them, of which they all ate, drinking the water at times with much eagerness, while my Eliza and myself walked about at a little distance. During all this affair, Fidele never barked, but kept quite close to the feet of his mistress, eyeing the negroes with fear and suspicion.

When they had finished their repast, which was scanty enough for so many, I made one of them take up the empty basket, and another the canteen, and then proceeding in a body to the great tree, I signed to them to lie down to rest. They instantly obeyed, and all but the elder man fell asleep. He and I endeavoured to converse; but could not understand each other in the least. I was, however, satisfied he spoke Spanish, though perhaps in the sort of way the negroes of Jamaica speak English. If he had spoken pure Castilian, I should not have understood him the better for it. All that I could comprehend was, that his name was Diego, and that he called the other man Shaver; which, as he repeated it several times, caused my dear wife to smile, at which old Diego laughed heartily, although ignorant of the joke. The man's name no doubt was Xavier, though pronounced in a manner that produced a ridicu-

lous meaning to our English ears. Our mirth awakened Xavier, who seemed quite happy when Diego explained to him the part he had borne in the jocular affair; however, he soon lay down again, and dropped asleep. My dear wife then suggested, that as these poor strangers had but a spare breakfast, it were well to take Diego, and bring some provisions for their ample dinner. I readily fell into her kindly idea; and putting the basket into the negro's hand, he appeared to understand that his service was required, and followed us through the woodland region without showing any fear. He was delighted with the fountain of water at the turn of the cave promontory, and seemed greatly pleased on observing the broods of ducks, and the goats feeding by the stream.

No doubt he expected to see a fine house, and plenty of people; for after passing along the path between the promontory and the rock, he looked around and around, and then at us, with a sort of amazement. He then followed us closely up to the plank-house, where we collected some yams, biscuit, salt meat, and old pumpkins, with a few cocoa-nuts, and filled his basket. As we came out on the platform, he turned his eyes upon the brig, and then said something to me. I made signs, to inform him she had been wrecked, and that all but ourselves had perished. He understood me completely; his eyes instantly filled with tears, and he covered his face with his hands. Poor negro! thy sympathies were awakened; thou thyself, like ourselves, had been snatched from a watery grave! and the divine spirit breathed into man, became manifest in thee at this moment, without, perhaps, thy knowing that there is a God, and that that God is your Father and ours! My beloved Eliza was deeply affected by this language of universal nature,

which so distinctly spoke how much the poor negro compassionated our present situation.

We proceeded on our return to his sleeping friends; but I stopped when we arrived at the rocky point; and taking up one of the rods which lay there, I baited the hook with a bit of raw pork, which I cut off from a piece in the basket, and presenting it to my dear wife, I said to her, "Go, my Eliza, and catch us a fish." She received the rod from my hand; and while Diego and I stood at the base of the rock, she dropped the bait into our conservatory, when a fish immediately took it, which, with a little exertion, she soon drew out upon the rock. Diego, on seeing the great size of the prize, caught in a moment, as he thought, from the sea, and by a white woman too, (whom, he believed, could do nothing but yawn and count her beads,) burst into an ecstasy, and sprung on the rock, to disentangle the fish from the hook. My dear Eliza thanked him with a smile, and the next instant he descended with the fish in his hand; and my little angler, who now moved like a kid among the rocks, sprang from her position, and was by my side in a moment. Thus well provided, we returned to the cotton-tree within the hour, and found all the party still asleep.

Diego seemed to think they had had repose enough, for he roused them immediately on our arrival: they were much startled by the suddenness of his manner: the women, indeed, appeared somewhat frightened; but the old fellow was a wag in his way, and seemed, by his laugh to enjoy the confusion he had occasioned; while with an air of triumph, he held the fish over the face of one, and a great yam over another, as the people lay close together. After rubbing their eyes, they one and all began to talk and smile, and we rejoiced to see in our new companions nothing but what was cheerful and

inoffensive. "Shawveer," said I, (imitating Diego as well as I could in pronouncing the name), and at the same time taking him by the arm, "come with me." He was much amused by hearing me endeavour to call him by name. I led him to a little distance, where there is a large upright stone standing between the cotton-tree and the open ground, and, having taken with me a few leaves and some bits of stick, I struck a light there, and ignited the leaves and sticks, making signs to him, meanwhile, to build up a fire on that spot. He was pleased with the occupation, and soon called on one of the women, who was his wife: she came to him. On this I put my hand on his breast, saying "Shawveer," then touching his wife's shoulder, at the same time pointing to him, and repeating his name, and then pointing to her; after the pause of a second he understood my question, and answered "Hachinta:" I repeated the word, patting her on the shoulder, and then left them to collect wood and make up the fire.

On returning to the cotton tree I found Diego in full detail to the other two women, or rather to the other woman, and a girl about seventeen years of age; the one his wife, the other his daughter: they seemed full of surprise: and I suppose he had told of his seeing the brig, and his understanding our misfortune; for, at the moment I came close up to them, his wife fell before the knees of my dear Eliza, weeping and kissing her feet. This scene sealed our friendship for these poor outcasts; and from that hour we cherished the feeling towards them, of which they had set to us so eminent an example.

We now thought it best to retire to the plank-house, and leave them to cook and eat their own dinner, as they might please; beside it was time that we ourselves should have some food. This determination being taken, I

beckoned to Diego to follow me, and led him up to the little spring, where he replenished the canteen with water. On our return to the tree, we made them comprehend that we were going to retire for awhile; but Diego, no doubt, had made his wife understand we were without any one to help us, for she took her daughter by the hand, pronouncing the word "Mira," and tendered her to my wife, giving her, at the same moment, a gentle push, as much as to say, "I have turned you over." My dear Eliza looked so kindly on the girl, that she showed no reluctance in going along with her; and we now left the cotton tree arm in arm, followed by the young negress and our faithful little dog, walking leisurely through the woodland up to our wooden palace.

Mira took small notice of any thing, yet did not appear sulky. As soon as we entered our house, her new mistress cut a musk-melon, and gave her a slice of it, which she eat with evident pleasure; while we, too, regaled ourselves with some of the same, to stay our hunger until we could get dinner ready. I made haste to take a fish from the conservatory, which having duly prepared, I returned in a trice, and gave it to Mira, who helped it into the kettle with much adroitness; she also seemed to know what she was about in roasting the yams. When the dinner was ready, it was served up on the table, placed within doors; and, after taking for ourselves, I filled a plate, and gave it to the girl on the platform, where she eat with great composure. When she had finished it, I bored a young cocoa-nut for her; first giving her the milk to drink, and then, cutting off the top, handed it to her, with a spoon, which she knew very well how to use, and with it eat the soft pulp, after showing signs of satisfaction at our kind treatment.

After the dinner things were put away, and we had

rested about a couple of hours, my dear wife made her maiden put four young cocoa-nuts into her basket, and with it we proceeded to join her friends at the plantation. They were glad to see us; and my Eliza taking the cocoa-nuts, presented them one by one to each of the party: they looked pleased at the promised treat in their hands; but they had no knife, so I gave Diego the clasp knife, and made signs to him to keep it, which delighted him exceedingly. They had done justice to the feast: the fragments were not very heavy.

Poor creatures! they all appeared very much fatigued, or exhausted; and, as negroes do not require much preparation for a lodging, they seemed quite content to take up their abode in the shed I had erected to store the vegetable productions in; but to render it a little more comfortable, I made the men bring in a few planks, and place them side by side upon the ground, for their beds: this being done, my dear wife remained with the women, while the men and I went down and secured the canoe; from which they brought up its thin sail, to cover them at night.

About four o'clock, we left them, taking the girl with us; and on our arrival at the plank-house, my Eliza made a large quantity of coffee in the tea-kettle, and sweetened it; then pouring about three pints of it into a tin camp-kettle, she put it into one of Mira's hands, and into the other a basket containing biscuits and a small mug; making a sign to her to take them to her friends, which she answered by a pleasant look, and instantly set out at a good pace.

"My honoured husband," said my dear wife to me, after the maiden was gone, "the coming of these people is an event so new and unexpected, that I sometimes think it a dream; however, I doubt not Providence hath

brought them for their good and ours, poor creatures! God hath been merciful to them as to us; and it is our duty to share what we have with them. Indeed, they seem grateful, and disposed to be our servants, if we please to make them so."—"We will be kind to them, my dear Eliza," I replied: "but for their happiness and our own, they must be accustomed to look up to us for every thing, and therefore be made to serve us as servants, but not as slaves."—"My Edward," she replied, "your judgment is always most prudent, as well as most kind; and I hope we shall be able in time to teach them to know that God, who delivered them from death, and placed them here in security and abundance."

In this strain our conversation continued until near sunset, when Diego returned with his daughter, bringing the empty baskets and tin kettle, and making many signs of thanks, bowing profoundly before us; after which he went away, and left her with us. The girl was nearly worn out by the recent fatigue and anxiety she had undergone; and we ourselves, being somewhat weary with our hospitable exertions, retired early to the ship; but she did not follow us quite so willingly as before, when she saw us about to embark. However, a kind look from my Eliza, and my showing her the vessel was fast moored, prevailed over her reluctance, and we spread a bed for her on the cabin door.

Tuesday, 16th.—We arose with the dawn, but Mira was fast asleep. I dressed myself, and left my wife to awake her, and follow me on shore. Without more ado, I walked over to the plantation, where I found the two men and their wives out before the shed. They greeted me with evident grateful reverence; and I, having shown them a kind salutation on my part, took Diego by the arm, as a sign to go with me, which he did; and leading

him to the beach, I rowed him round in the punt to the rocky point. We then drew up the fish-pot, where I found two fish, which we brought on shore. I made him prepare them for dressing, and then baited the fish-pot with the entrails. This done, we carried up our work to the plank-house, where we met my wife with her maid, ascending from the vessel. Diego scarcely knew his daughter, her mistress having made her bathe, and dress herself in clothes she presented her with; namely, a white chemise and petticoat; after which, my dear Eliza tied a coloured Bandana kerchief gracefully round the girl's head. Mira was quite elated, and showed herself with pride to her father, turning round and round with a sort of dancing step. He smiled, and patted her shoulder, bowing to us; while we put some yams into one of the baskets, with a couple of melons and the fish. I then made signs to him to depart to his companions, which he did joyously; no doubt anticipating the pleasure with which he and his acceptable store would be received.

We now adjourned to our own breakfast of coffee and biscuit, of which Mira also partook, though at a respectful distance, sitting at our feet, with Fidele by her side, on the platform: he, good dog, with equal content, eat his crumbs without grumbling. During breakfast, I complimented my wife, on the change she had made in Mira; adding, that I thought it might be well to give the whole party two suits of clothes each. She was delighted at the idea; and we soon brought from on board, the articles necessary for the men, from the seamen's chests. She then accompanied me, Mira carrying the bundles, to the cotton-tree plantation, where I was to see the negroes array themselves, while she would bring the women back with her for a similar purpose. The latter,

on seeing Mira's gay appearance, required no further inducement to follow their new mistress; and the females returning altogether, left me with the two men, whom I led to the beach, and soon made comprehend my meaning. They threw aside their dirty partial covering, and, having given themselves a thorough washing, each put on a check shirt and white duck trousers, which I handed them, and looked neat enough. I rolled up the two duplicate suits; and signed to them they were for change. Both men kissed my hands, seeming very thankful; after which I caused Diego to dig a hole in the sand, and bury their tattered old garments.

I now walked my men over the places of my agricultural labours, and tried to make them comprehend that the product was to go into the shed; at the same time putting the spade and the hoe into Diego's hands, as much as to say, "I deliver all these things into your care;" and he understood me. He knew all the plants; and when he saw the tobacco shoots, he put his finger and thumb to his mouth, imitative of smoking: and instead of looking contemptuously at my half-dozen sugar-canes, or on the general insignificancy of the plantation, he evidently expressed wonder at seeing them there at all, by first pointing at them, and then at me, and then looking upwards, as much as to say, "I only wonder that you alone, and a white man, could have accomplished this, situated as you are!" I proceeded next to the great body of planks, and other timber, which I had deposited near the place intended for our house; and having pointed to the timber, I was about to mark out two spots in the rear, for them to erect each a hut for themselves, when Xavier, with a grin of sudden joy, touched his own hands, and then the timber, and quickly drawing aside a plank, began a sort of pantomime, by

which I as promptly understood that he was a carpenter —a discovery that pleased me exceedingly. We then proceeded to the sites I destined for their huts, where I marked out an oblong square for each, sixteen feet by twelve, with which Xavier seemed well satisfied. At this instant my dear partner appeared, with her three damsels, all looking equally clean and neat, and in high spirits; and the whole party congratulated each other by bows, quite significant of mutual respect at meeting each other in such unusual finery.

Short as the time was that we had been together, enough had passed, to establish perfect confidence; so that my gentle Eliza did not hesitate to remain with Diego and the women, while I took Xavier to the ship, to help himself to a saw, an axe, and an adze, and such other things as he might require. He was highly amused with the construction of the plank-house, which I showed him, in our way; and he viewed it over and over again, inside and out, to my no small entertainment too. After getting our carpenter's tools, we made quick march back to the plantation, and in less than an hour I had the satisfaction to see both Diego and Xavier engaged in their respective employments. "I am happy to see this," said my dear wife; "it has pleased God, my Edward, to relieve you from a toil, that, in such a climate, could not have been pursued without ultimate destruction to your health." I indeed gratefully acknowledged the signal providence; and my sweet angel (whose soul was always full of heavenly thoughts) soon after, left us, taking with her Mira and her mother Rota, with a view to prepare food for us and them. As Diego was not using the spade, Xavier borrowed it, and commenced digging holes for the uprights of his hut; but the ground proved rocky, being a red sandstone, hard, within a few inches of the surface soil, so that he could not

accomplish his purpose with it. I therefore took him to the plank-house, and gave him the crow-bar I had used in removing the stones of the cavern; and at the same time I made him take with him another hoe and spade, and signed to him to find his way back to Diego. I remained with my wife, who, with her women, I found very busy boiling salt beef and pork, and making flour cakes.

Not needing my help, I left them, and returned on board to get up some bags of nails of various sizes; and with a view of expediting Xavier's work in completing the huts, I brought some pieces of torn sails on shore, of which there was an abundance. On rejoining Eliza after this my task, I found dinner on the table, and Rota departing with our largest basket, well replenished with beef and pork, and flour cakes, for her friends at the plantation: my dear wife had also furnished her with four knives, two tin cups, and two wooden platters, to eat off. The good negress had proved herself handy in the culinary art; so that, to my great satisfaction, the object of my anxious care had not been under the least necessity, as heretofore, of broiling herself over the fire. As we sat down to dinner, she was sensible of this relief; and although she never had murmured, she now smilingly acknowledged her obligation to the assistance she had received. It were, perhaps, difficult to ascertain whether we or the negroes rejoiced most in the providential connexion, which our similar misfortune had brought about. No doubt their change was very great: escaped from shipwreck, and most likely from slavery; hitherto strangers to Christian kindness, they must feel sensibly the comfort of their lot. We, on our part, valued their services, and hoped, by kind and wise measures, to secure their attachment, and consequent happiness. I knew there was nothing pressing at the plantation, for Diego to do; I therefore sent Mira

for him, in about an hour after we had dined; which message was conveyed by my merely pronouncing the name of "Diego," and pointing for her to go. They soon returned together. I then took him to the ship's side, and gave him the bags of nails to carry; and then showed him the canvass I had also deposited ready;—by which he understood me, that he was to come back for it, and take all safe to the silk-cotton tree; whither I and my household, that is, my wife, Mira, and Fidele, leisurely preceded him. I easily made Xavier understand, that the canvass was to be nailed to the sides of his structures, instead of boards; and also, for the present, to be used as a covering to the roofs. He had not been idle during my absence, having excavated several places for the uprights of one hut; which, he explained to me, were to be made by sawing a plank lengthways into three—a very good idea. He saw I comprehended him, and expressed my satisfaction. While I stood by, Diego took the crow-bar, and went on with the hole-digging; while Xavier commenced with the saw, no doubt proud to show me how well he could handle it; and, indeed, I was highly gratified in seeing him quite at home in his work. In the midst of this, we were agreeably surprised by seeing the two women take a hoe each, and go over among the Indian corn, and commence hoeing the ground well up round all the stems. No doubt Diego had sent them; but it was a heartfelt delight to us, to observe such a spirit of industry manifested by the whole party.

While they were at work, my dear wife and myself walked arm in arm about the plantation: we visited our shaddock and orange plants at the north-east corner, and marked with pleasure the rapid growth of the latter. Strange as it may appear, we felt ourselves exalted in rank, by the situation in which we then stood; and,

without being tainted by pride, we experienced a sentiment within, which, affecting our external demeanour almost unconsciously, was likely the more to maintain our dignity with our people, without lessening our real kindness and sympathy towards them. As we walked along, my dear Eliza often exclaimed, "How gracious is God, my Edward! How, in a day, has he taken off all our burdens, and made us the protectors, and supporters, of those he has sent to serve us!" On coming round again where the melons grew, she requested me to cut two that were ripe, one of which she sent by Mira to her father, and the other she cut in pieces, and gave it to Rota, and the other woman, whom they called "Hachinta; "a name that puzzled us a good deal, but which, I have since learned, the Spaniards write "Jacinta."

As the sun was now sinking towards his setting, and there was plenty of provisions left from the people's dinner, for their after-meals, we took our leave of them for the day. When returning to our little land home, my wife and her damsel engaged themselves a few minutes in housing the broods of ducks, which we found still loitering about the spring; from whence we walked leisurely up to the plank-house, followed by the goats: they and their kids, here received some slices of pumpkin from their mistress's caressing hand. The poor armadillo, too, was soliciting food at the bars of his enclosure; which was bestowed by the same kind donor. Mira had never seen one of these creatures, so it excited her wonder, and elicited some ejaculatory remarks, to us not quite intelligible.

Coffee was soon in preparation; on handing which, the negro girl raised a smile in my wife and myself, by calling her Eliza, when she addressed her, in presenting

it. This was very natural, having heard me so address my wife: but I thought it right to show her the proper distinction; and although I was ignorant of the Spanish language, yet I knew it called ladies, Donna and Señora: I therefore said, "No: Señora." Mira instantly corrected herself, repeating "Señora" with an inclination of the body. When the girl went over to the fire, my dear Eliza laughed, saying, "I shall fancy myself a heroine in Gil Blas; but you are right, Edward." After coffee I regaled myself with a cigar: at the sight of it Mira was delighted, and, without losing a moment, had brought me a firestick to light it; after which she stood near, to enjoy the fragrant smoke as it issued from my mouth. We did not, however, stay long enough to encounter the sand-flies, but moved to our vessel in good time, preceded by Fidele, and followed by our maid, who now showed no fear.

Wednesday, 17th.—I arose, as usual, with the dawn; and leaving my wife and her damsel to get together some things for our water-side laundry, went to inspect the fish-pot, in which I found three fine fish. I threw two of them into the conservatory, reserving the other for the day's table; and when my dear wife and Mira came on shore, we breakfasted immediately, to give more time for business; and after the meal, my Eliza, named "Rota" and "Hachinta," pointing to Mira to go for them. She went, and in a short time returned with them. My wife then gave each of the women a second suit of clothes, and making them bundle up the linen to be washed, directed them to carry it before her to the streamlet, while she took the two washing mallets in her own hand, and a piece of soap; part of my good aunt's supply, which, after our first essay, we had found necessary to the perfect cleansing of our linens, notwithstanding the

unparalleled cleverness of my two wooden-headed damsels, in the washing department. When arrived there, she set her laundresses to work in the water, without any trouble or difficulty. When they were fairly engaged, we walked away, followed by Mira, to the plantation, to see what the men were about, and to give our attentive little maid an opportunity of explaining to them how the women were employed. We found both men busy in erecting the uprights, six of which Xavier had sawn out; and both, now active workmen, appeared quite happy, and perfectly recovered from the exhaustion occasioned by their fatigue in escaping from the shipwreck.

My dear wife and I had determined, when speaking to them, not to repeat any of their words, excepting their own proper names; hoping by this to compel them to learn our language. On this principle I began to school Xavier, by pointing to the several instruments he used, at the same time calling them respectively by their names; by which process he and his companions, male and female, soon acquired a very competent knowledge of our terms for all the common articles of life; we always remaining silent, when through any forgetfulness they named them in Spanish. Mira had told them about her mistake in addressing my wife; after which both the men, when naming her in any way, called her "La Señora;" and so did the two women on coming over with Mira in the morning.

While the men were at work, we sat down under the shade of our noble tree; a place always agreeable and interesting to us, but now doubly so, since from it we had first descried our great and present help. "This indulgence won't do, Edward!" suddenly exclaimed my Eliza, sweetly smiling; "I must mind my own duties, and go to superintend our domestic concerns: the women

are with the linen at the brook; and dinner must be got for the whole party." She went, while I continued for an hour looking over the men, and was much pleased with the progress they made in the construction of the hut, and particularly with the scientific way in which Xavier went to work. When finished, each of these habitations would be at least twice as commodious as the plank-house; and seeing that he perfectly understood what he was about, I made up my mind not to interfere, but to leave him at once to the completion of the whole. In my walk home, as I passed the Indian corn, I pulled some of the full heads called cobs, and took them with me to roast; for in that green state they taste something like young pease. On my arrival, I found the cooking business in high order. My dear helpmate had taken Mira, with her basket, to the pumpkin beds near the cave spring; where we had planted that useful vegetable on our first landing, and where it now grew in abundance. A great stew of salt pork, with a due proportion of vegetables and pepper pods, was going forward. At noon, Mira was sent over to the cotton-tree for the men, and, when they arrived, they and their wives found their dinner spread on the duck-hatch, near our pleasant fountain. They all seemed delighted with the Yankee stew, and the cool place we had chosen for them to eat it in. After dinner, the men returned to the plantation, and the women to their task at the streamlet: the latter being only a few yards distant from their shady dining-room.

My dear Eliza and myself had agreed to dine later than usual: our labour being now little, our appetites were less importunate; and besides, we felt it would be well to attend to the wants of our people first. It was therefore time enough to raise the fish-pot, after they had returned to their work; which I did, and with great

success, finding in it no less than five fine groopers; I threw four of them into the conservatory; and calling our maid, gave her the remaining one to prepare for dressing, and then take to her mistress. Having baited, and replaced the fish-pot in the sea, while our repast was getting ready I walked into our pumpkin and melon ground, between the rocky point and rivulet, and was gratified on observing how the whole plantation was coming on; many of all sorts being already fit to eat; a matter of greater gratulation, because of our increased party; as our original store of fruits and vegetables was quite exhausted, excepting a few yams and coccos. However, as I found by the present crop before me, that there was no reason why we should be stingy of them, having plenty of seeds for more, I cut a couple of the melons, and took them home to my wife; one of which we eat after dinner, dividing it with the armadillo, who was now brought out for the first time, and seemed not at all disposed to run away, though still something afraid of Fidele: rolling itself up every time the little dog attempted to play with it.

While eating our fruit, I remarked to my wife that I thought it would be prudent to remove the bag of doubloons from the shelf, to my trunk in the vessel, lest curiosity might induce Mira some day or other to pry into its contents, and inform her friends of our riches. Eliza saw the propriety of the measure, which in the course of the afternoon I carried into effect. The women finished their task before sunset; when Mira went for the men, and brought them to regale, with their wives, on coffee and flour cakes, where they had dined. After that favourite beverage, they came up of themselves to the plank-house, and in their grateful delight danced before us while we sate as tea: we could have dispensed

with this mark of their satisfaction, but, for the sake of the feelings that dictated it, we showed nothing like disapproval. After they had finished, Diego, who appeared quite a courtier in his way, bowed several times to the Señora and myself; and looking archly at me, with a smile, said, "Don Edvardo! cigarro?" putting his finger to his mouth, and puffing from the lips as if he were smoking. I took the hint, and presented him with one cigar, and Xavier with another; then pointing in the direction of the cotton-tree plantation, they took their leave. I could not afford to smoke regularly myself, and to supply them also; I therefore did not indulge myself this night: so after my dear wife and Mira had attended to the security and comfort of our live stock, I fastened our door as usual, and retired early with my household to our marine lodgings.

Thursday, 18th.—On this day and the two following, the men continued steadily at work upon the first hut; Diego, meanwhile, employing Hachinta with the hoe among the corn, and other plants in the neighbourhood of their occupation. Rota was chiefly at the plank-house with Mira and her mistress, assisting in smoothing the clean clothes, and in cooking provisions. I found sufficient to do on board, looking over the bills of lading to refresh my memory, and in selecting out such things as might be required for coming events.

Sunday, 21st.—We arose as usual with the dawn. I took my bath, dressed for the Sabbath, and went on shore, leaving my wife with Mira to go through the same ceremony. I hastened to the plantation to prevent the men working, and arrived just as they were about to commence. I stopped them, but felt much embarrassed how to explain my motive, and what I meant to inculcate. The poor fellows looked a little astounded: they appre-

hended something wrong; and the more so, because my aspect was graver than ordinary. Then extending my arm, as if to demand attention, I held up the extended fingers of one hand, with two of the other, bending them in succession, and making a sign of, "*to work*," until after I had bent the sixth; I then, bending the other, knelt on a plank that lay beside me, and raising my hands to heaven in this attitude, I prayed, "Bless these people, O Lord, with thy holy Spirit; that they, even they, may be brought to a knowledge of thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord." Diego repeated, "Jesu Christo," and crossed himself. I was pleased to perceive that I was understood, and that the name, at least, of Christ, was not a strange sound in their ears. We put the working implements into the shed; then, pointing to my clean dress, I gave them to understand that they must go to the sea and wash, and put on fresh clothes, they and the women also.

I now returned to my dear wife, to inform her of my success; for, in talking this matter over, we had much feared there would be great difficulty in making a first impression. She greeted me in her straw hat, which she had not worn for some months; and I was agreeably surprised to see her in it again: besides, it was a welcome evidence of a returning step to civilised life. She had made Mira, also, look very pretty: if a negro wench could ever be so transformed, to an English eye!

Cakes had been baked, and salt meat boiled, on the preceding day; so that there was nothing to do now but to heat the coffee; and when it was nearly ready, Mira was sent to summon her friends to breakfast. We had debated on the idea of allowing them to eat with us on Sundays; many arguments presented themselves for and against; but we decided, I think prudently, that such intimacy might possibly prove dangerous, not only to our peace, but to

our ultimate safety; and we therefore determined to treat them kindly, but yet in no way to compromise the authority we had so well established. They all soon appeared with our damsel, and made their obeisance to us as we sat before the plank-house on the platform. They looked very clean and neat, and we complimented them, by signs, on their attention to our directions. We then desired Mira and her mother to take the provisions prepared, to the duck-hatch, for their breakfast: the thing was soon done, for they all gave a helping hand, finally leaving Mira with us, who very quickly, and even nicely, set out the table for our repast.

As we eat, we discussed the propriety of having the people at the Morning service; and we agreed to do it: for although they could not understand what we should read, yet they would comprehend that we were employed in devotion. However, we agreed to shorten the service, by omitting the lessons, which we would read to each other when alone; and my Eliza offered to sing a hymn at the beginning, and ending, of the prayers. To instruct these poor blacks in the elements of Christianity, required time, and a power of communicating our knowledge by language. After the breakfast things were put away, and the interior of our palace, now to be our church, was put in order, I sent Mira for her people; and not being ashamed of the sign of the cross, I seized on Diego's acknowledgment of its sacred import, and, when they assembled, I took a little water, and dipping my finger in it, moved it on the forehead of each one present, saying, "May it please thee, O God, to add this individual to thy holy church." And this being done, my wife, while we yet stood, sang an appropriate hymn, in indeed angelic strains, which seemed to make a striking effect on her hearers. We now knelt down: they all

followed our example; and I repeated the Lord's Prayer, and Belief, and Confession of Sins, with heartfelt energy. We then rose; and I read the general thanksgiving, followed by "We praise thee, O God!" after which my wife sang another beautiful hymn; and this short service was concluded by my repeating the benediction of our church. When it was finished, I took each of the people cordially by their hands, as did my dear wife, and pointing immediately after to heaven, exclaimed, with the fervour of inspiration, "Bless us, O Lord! bless thy people!" The Prayer Book was then shut, and put carefully and respectfully away; after which, we all went out together, my soul's partner taking my arm, which example the other men and their wives reverentially imitated, poor forlorn Mira, and Fidele, following separately in our train.

I knew it would be impossible for these uninformed human beings to pass the whole of a day in absence from labour, without drowsy sluggishness of mind, unless they had some amusement; so we thought it might be well to allow them to visit some of the distant shores of the islands, in their canoe. With this intent, we bent our course through the woodland region; and after looking with approbation on Xavier's work, we walked down to the canoe, which had been washed out very clean; and making a sign to the men to get into it, and row us round to the plank-house beach, they obeyed with alacrity; leaving their women clapping their hands with a sort of childish delight, as we pushed off. After they had landed us, we sent them back for their wives, with whom they quickly returned, the canoe being very swift: not like my heavy, though useful, punt, which with great propriety may be compared to a donkey that carries sand, and the canoe to a nimble-footed pony. On the party rejoining us, my wife went with Rota and Mira to the

plank-house, where she filled the large basket with cold provisions for the proposed excursion; and on its being brought drown, I made signs to Diego to put it into the canoe; then, pointing to the island opposite, showed him I wished him to go there, but to return before sunset. He paused a moment; and putting his hand to his mouth, as he would drink, pronounced the word "water;" I nodded; and he set off on foot for the canteen, which had been left at the plantation. Though I believed there was no cause for fear, yet I thought the party should have some means of defence; so by the time he re-appeared with the canteen, I had fetched the two half-pikes; one I gave to him, and the other to Xavier, with which they were much pleased, and both immediately stepped into the canoe, beginning in the same moment to shove off; for he had not understood that they were to take the women. I, however, stopped the movement, and taking hold of Rota, put her arm under mine, and walking about thus for a second or two, pointed to Diego, and then to the island: by this, they instantly comprehended that it was a party of pleasure we intended them; and the women again clapped their hands, and laughed, when they obeyed the kindly sign of my dear wife's hand also, who presented them a couple of melons, when they stepped into their boat. In short, the whole party pushed out into the lake in great glee, and rowed swiftly towards the opposite shore.

When they were fairly off, wishing to observe them, I went up to our house for the spy-glass, which I slung across my shoulder; my pistols, as usual, occupying my belt; and giving my Eliza my arm, we and Mira, and our faithful little dog, strolled leisurely through the woodland region, and took post under the great tree. From this point we watched the canoe, until we saw the people

land on the opposite island, in a bay, which appeared to be bounded on each side of its beach by a ledge of rocks, having a beautiful and finely-wooded conical hill of considerable elevation on the north, and a steep rocky promontory on the south, with well-wooded hills in the background, apparently half a mile, or rather more, from the shore. I then adjusted the focus of the spy-glass, and soon discovered each man and his wife, according to our example, walking arm in arm up the beach, each of the men also holding his pike. My own dear wife could not steady the glass so as to bring the objects to bear on it; I therefore placed three sticks at a little distance from each other in the ground, crossing them near the top, which presenting a rest for the glass, she could then see distinctly all their movements. Mira, too, from the same position, caught the objects instantly; at which she was both astonished and delighted, running, once or twice, from one end of the glass to the other, looking both ways, in added amazement. In about half an hour we saw the party re-embark, and row round the rocky shore to the northward, where they landed again on a sandy beach, from whence they walked up towards the woods. However, they soon returned, and again rowed along shore, sometimes observed by one, sometimes by the other of us: but Mira was most indefatigable, no doubt that she might be able to astonish them, by telling them all they did while away.

When the sun had passed the meridian, and having traced them to the further end of the sandy beach, where they opened their basket and sat down under the rocks to dine, we took up our spy-glass, to retrace our steps to the plank-house, where our own cold dinner was laid to receive us at one o'clock. We eat it with thankfulness, blessing God for all the bounties with which his pro-

vidence had loaded us. By way of dessert, we regaled ourselves with a fresh musk-melon and a little wine; the former of which we shared with Mira and the armadillo. The spy-glass was again placed on a rest, and after I had discovered the canoe, Mira undertook to watch it, while my Eliza's gentle voice read to me several chapters of Ezekiel. When she had finished, we prayed together to God, for the continuance of his grace, and to pardon anything we had done amiss this day, in our zeal for converting the poor negroes to a knowledge of His will.

We now took a peep at our wandering friends, and traced them into the creek, beyond the place in which we had had the encounter with the peccaries. My wife, on seeing this, expressed some apprehension at the idea of their meeting any of those creatures, and being hurt. But I told her, as they appeared all safe in the creek, having therefore passed the place, there could now be no reason to fear: however, Mira was deputed to watch their egress from the creek again. Meanwhile, my Eliza and I sauntered about, amusing ourselves in throwing corn to the poultry, the young of which had now attained a good size. After a time, Mira began to show uneasiness; she was tired of watching, and they had not appeared. But, on my taking the glass, I discovered two of the party at the extremity of our isthmus; guessing they had reached it by having compassed the back of the huge steep rock at the bottom of the little bay. When I directed the glass so that Mira could discern them, she seemed quite pleased, but nevertheless rather astonished. About an hour before sunset, we saw them row out of the creek, and this was a signal with us for getting coffee ready to meet their return: we meant it for a treat: and as we had many casks of Irish butter in our vessel, my dear wife added a frugal portion of that luxury to the

nice flour cakes Mira now put before the fire to warm. I thought the men would stop and take a look at the cocoa-nut grove on their way; but they did not; so our maid had just time to place the coffee, with the hot bread and butter, for her friends on the duck-hatch near the spring, as the canoe came to the shore.

As they were landing, we hailed them with a smile, and a few words spoken with a kind accent, which made their meaning quite intelligible. Mira, meanwhile, met them, to tell them of the comfortable repast we had ordered to be ready for their landing; and all, in their various ways, evinced pleasure and gratitude at the kindness. But Diego would not lead to the hatch until he had taken me to the canoe, where I saw several crayfish, and a great many large shells, among which were some rock oysters: he had also brought a variety of plants, or their leaves, and some roots. I could not tell him, that to collect such things was not the object of his excursion, and that I would rather he should not so employ himself on the Sabbath-day; but I owed it to his motive, to appear pleased, feeling that he had done no moral wrong. This over, he departed to his coffee, quite satisfied with himself and me. When he joined the party, we heard Mira's tongue going, interrupted only by the laughing of Xavier, and sometimes of the women, or of the whole party. Doubtless she was telling them the knowledge she had of all they did in their absence: but Diego soon guessed the truth of the matter, we supposed, for he patted her on the back, and looking her in the face, said something very knowingly, laughing also, as it were triumphantly. All, however, seemed to continue their good-humoured jests; and, while we walked at a distance, we observed Rota make her daughter taste the buttered cake, which, indeed, appeared a great treat to the whole party. When

they had finished their meal, the men came respectfully to me, and I went with them again to the canoe, where they delivered to me the two boarding-pikes. I then showed Diego, that he must deposit the crayfish, oysters, and conchs he had brought, into the crib which I had made for the crayfish, I had caught some time previous, at the head of the creek. While the men pushed off in the canoe to obey my orders, the women kissed my dear wife's hand, and proceeded through the woodland region to join their husbands at their hut. We now returned to our palace, and refreshed ourselves with tea; but Mira did not seem to relish it as well as her friends had done their coffee: she, however, did not the less enjoy her cakes, and drank some warm water and sugar with them, which seemed quite palatable to her taste. As the evening closed, she and her mistress scattered some corn for the fowls and pigeons; and we then all retired, peaceful and happy, to our vessel, and to sleep.

Monday, 22d.—The early dawn found us up, and active to pursue our occupations for the week. My wife employed herself in many domestic arrangements with the women. I visited the men, supplying them from time to time with what was wanted for the work, from the vessel; which kept me going to and fro several times during the forenoon. Such was the great progress they made with the hut, that before evening they had even fitted on a complete framework for a sloping roof; so that in a day or two they would be able to enclose it all with the canvass. On the approach of sunset, I caused them to desist; signing to Diego that I wished to see what the leaves and roots were, which he had brought in the canoe. He showed me some palm-leaves, not quite the same with those near the plantation; and he made me understand that they were to be formed into hats.

He then took me to a spot near the little spring, where he had put in some suckers of the wild banana, which he had found somewhere. I knew the plant, having seen it in its cultivated state in Jamaica. Pleased with his zeal, I returned, and sent some cold salt beef and biscuit, by the women, for his and Xavier's supper; and, after taking coffee, we retired early to our ship, and to sleep.

Tuesday, 23d.—The hut was ready for the canvass; and all things for its completion being on the spot, I left the two women to assist Xavier, while I took Diego with me, accompanied by my wife, her maid, and Fidele, to the cocoa-nut grove. We went in the punt, which he paddled along, at least as well as I could do. He and Mira showed themselves much pleased with what they saw: but our plantation there had lately been rather neglected; however, many melons, as well as pumpkins, were quite fit to cut; which our handmaid set about doing, under the direction of her mistress; and, while Diego employed himself with the hoe, of which there was great need, I took the gaskets, and, to his evident wonder and amusement, climbed one of the trees, and knocked down about a score of the nuts presently with my hatchet. I quickly followed the shower, and cutting a nice young one, through husk and all, presented it to my Eliza to drink its milk. I then pointed to Diego and Mira to help themselves, which they did, not unsparingly; the good old negro never failing to offer the opened nut to my wife, or myself, before he would partake of it himself. After this refreshment, while Mira was carrying the gathered melons and pumpkins, and the remaining cocoa-nuts, to the punt, my dear wife and myself visited the capsicums, which, to our great delight, we found in flower; we here sat down to rest a while on the accustomed ledge, where we had once slept with our dear little

dog beside us, when he and we constituted the whole of our colony.

Our party returned to the plank-house about noon, and a similar dinner to that of yesterday was quickly prepared; but Diego added some of his oysters to our repast, which he opened for us with the clasp-knife I had given him; and we found them excellent. In the afternoon we visited the cotton-tree plantation, whither Diego had gone before us, and where we now found both men and women hard at work, trying to complete the hut that day. We looked on with great satisfaction; and having made Mira serve them out some water-melons, and a few cocoa-nuts, to add to their supper of salt meat, we said, "Good evening," and retired.

Wednesday, 24th.—This morning I found the hut perfectly enclosed; and set Diego and the women briskly at work, excavating for the uprights of the second hut, while Xavier was fitting up the inside of the one they had finished, on the plan of the interior of the plank-house, placing boards for a mattress bed, and a few more for shelves. And all this being done before breakfast, immediately after it, he sawed out the uprights, and began to proceed with the other hut. During this and the three following days, the men worked closely at their second habitation; the women cooking the provisions, and doing such other things as my wife directed.

Sunday, 28th.—We arrayed ourselves on the morning of the Sabbath in a clean skin and clean clothes, and prayed to God to give us a clean heart. Soon after our landing at the plank-house, the two men and their wives came in their fresh attire, and saluted us: to honour the day, I shook hands with them; and they made their obeisance to my dear wife; the women kissing her hand. A coffee breakfast was prepared for them, with some flour

cakes and butter; and after their meal, and our own, as on the former Sabbath, we went to prayer, lengthening the service a little; my beloved Eliza, as before, singing a hymn at the beginning and end of the service. They behaved with great decorum, and showed neither impatience nor restlessness.

After prayers, we again gave them a basket of provisions, with the canteen and the pikes; and I made Diego understand I wished him to row round the promontory. As they could not as yet profit either by our reading or conversation, I did not know how they could better employ their time; for we wished to avoid disgusting them with the rest of the Sabbath, by dictating observances, the meaning of which they could not at present be taught to comprehend. Their wives now stepped into the canoe, as a matter of course, and the men put off from the shore in great spirits. In about an hour they had rounded the promontory, and appeared close under the brig's stern; from the quarter-deck of which we saw them, having taken our station there again; and we saluted them as they passed. They then rowed to the northward, between the beach and the reef; and with the glass we discerned them landing under the very rocky point which had threatened us with a second shipwreck, after we had escaped from the reef. They continued there so long out of sight, that we desisted looking for them: they had left the canoe, and were most likely pursuing the course of the stream into the interior. We went on shore to dinner, and employed Mira to watch the explorers with the glass. She at last discovered them push out from the land: I then took the glass, and observed them until they got among the rocks where the brig had struck; but, losing sight of them again, I returned the glass to our maid, while my dear wife and myself employed ourselves in reading the Bible.

Not finding them come back by five o'clock, we all became very anxious; and our uneasiness increased till near sunset, when we gladly, and to me most unexpectedly, saw them rowing up the lake. They, of course, had doubled the island; and, on relanding, must have rowed round it; by which circumstance I now got an idea of its extent. Coffee was prepared for the adventurers; and we received them as something lost, which had been found. The men were tired; but our kind reception, and a plentiful meal, renovated their spirits. The canoe was again, though on the Sabbath, not without a cargo: they had taken a turtle, and several live shells, large and small, of the conch kind, and others; besides having collected some vegetable productions. I could, however, say nothing about this now; so, after they had eaten their repast, I contented myself with making Diego understand he must carry all round to the cotton-tree plantation beach in the canoe; which he did without delay or demur. One of my reasons for this measure, was, that my Eliza should not see the turtle, until brought before her as meat to be dressed. After the people's departure to their rest, of which they had much need, we regaled ourselves with tea, and then retired to our ship.

Monday, 29th.—I visited the plantation early in the morning, and found the men at work on the second hut; but taking hold of Diego, I made him understand that he must kill the turtle, and Rota prepare it for dinner. It was but a chicken, compared with the former one, not weighing more than sixty pounds, shell and all. He had taken the vegetable matters out of the canoe, to dispose of in the way he best understood; but I signified that I should like the shell-fish to be put in the crayfish craal, which might be done by rowing the canoe over, when he came to dinner. I then left them, and returned to

breakfast. In about an hour, Rota arrived, with the turtle cut up, carrying it on her head in the calapach or back-shell: she laid it down on the platform, before my dear wife, who did not instantly know what it was; but when she recognised it, I was glad to perceive she did not show any disgust or aversion on the occasion. Such is the nice distinction made by minds of sensibility, that had she seen it alive, perhaps she would not have consented to its being killed; at any rate, I doubt whether she would then have consented to eat of it. I picked out the calipee, or under part, for ourselves, and made Rota take the rest to dress for the people's dinner; and, that she might make it savoury, my kind Eliza gave her some capsicums and allspice to season it: and we all enjoyed the treat.

During the remainder of the week, every effort was made to complete the second hut. Indeed, by Saturday night, it was finished, and both families comfortably lodged; one in each hut. We had got mattresses from the brig, and as many other conveniences as we thought they would need. They were now each made possessor of a commodious habitation—a home, with ourselves, in this Heaven-given haven; and we were made happy in seeing them thus lodged, and surrounded by many other blessings.

Sunday, May 5th.—The sanctity of the day was duly observed. After divine service, we walked with the whole company to the top of the promontory; and passed the evening in looking at the people's huts, and visiting every thing most interesting around.

Monday, 6th.—The season was now come, to dig the yams and coccos; also to gather in the ripe melons and pumpkins. The Indian corn, too, was nearly ripe; so there was no time to be lost. Diego and the women, therefore,

set briskly to work; and after Xavier had made some improvement on my temporary shed for receiving the harvest, he likewise joined the agriculturists. By this activity, in less than four days every thing was brought away from the cocoa-nut-grove plantation, and housed; and, by the following Saturday, all other of our mature produce, from different spots, excepting the corn and tobacco, was safely stored; besides our having many melons and pumpkins still in progress of growth. We were surprised and grateful at seeing so great an abundance, from such small sowings. While the negroes were thus busily employed, I kept them in fish; and Mira, under my dear wife's direction, prepared all the meals, which were supplied regularly and liberally; now and then giving them some coffee in the evening, as a treat.

Tuesday, 7th.—The sun was in our zenith at noon to-day, not casting shadow in any direction beyond the object. I took advantage of this observation, to make something like an approach to a knowledge of our situation as to latitude: and, by allowing four days to a degree, from the sun's transit over the equator on the 10th of March (the day of the equinox*) to the present time, it gave fourteen degrees and a half, which I now concluded to be pretty accurately the latitude of the islands.

Sunday, 12th.—We endeavoured to-day to convey some religious instruction, by way of a more lasting reward on our indefatigable labourers. They listened attentively and patiently; but Diego alone seemed to comprehend anything we said or did towards the subject, and he but little: yet any degree, is one step onward.

* The Editor startled a little at this declaration, until it was recollected that, in the year 1752, eleven days had been taken out of the old almanack; by which the calendar was thrown back so many days upon the sun.

Monday, 13th.—The women came over early, with their husbands' clothes and their own, for purification at the brook. Meanwhile Diego continued his husbandry cares; and Xavier was employed in putting a sloping roof of board on the plank-house, the better to protect its interior from the rains which we now might look for, conformably to what I had learned respecting such seasons in the Caribean sea.

Tuesday, 14th.—I gave out a keg of red ochre, and some oil, from the fore-cuddy; and directed Xavier how to paint the canvass coverings of the huts; and by Thursday night he had given them two coats, which would not only render them proof against rain, but give them a gay and pleasing appearance. While he was about this work, Diego housed the corn cobs and tobacco leaves; and during the last two days of the week, the men employed themselves beyond the silk-cotton tree, in clearing away the brushwood from before the rock; over the face of which, the beautiful little water-spring, from the long absence of rain, now appeared but as a silver thread.

Sat. 18th: Mon. 20, etc.—The sun rose in a haze; the clouds began to rise from the westward; and there was little breeze of any kind all day. By evening we had completed our operations, and just in time, for about ten o'clock at night it commenced raining most tremendously. On the morning of the following day, it was again fair, with a clear sky, so that we met to prayers at the usual hour; but about three o'clock in the afternoon, the clouds opened on us in torrents for two hours, but without wind, and then cleared up. In like manner, it continued to rain every day for seven days; during which time we took the best care of ourselves we could, and attended carefully to our stock. We also seized the op-

portunities, which intervals of clear sky afforded us, to cut down thirteen trees of the cabbage-palm, that grew abundantly on the high ground to the south end of the cotton-tree plantation. This was done, to keep the men in exercise, and to be ready to assist in building our plantation-house, whenever the time might arrive for commencing it. In the meanwhile, the tops of those trees furnished us with a succulent and agreeable vegetable, especially when boiled with our salt meat.

Saturday, 25th.—The sun rose this morning with unusual power and brilliancy; the atmosphere had been tempered by the late weather, to an ethereal purity; the rains had ceased; and not a cloud was to be seen. Diego lost no time in making me understand, that he and the women must employ themselves assiduously, after Sunday, in planting the yams, coccos, corn, and other seeds. The four cocoa-nut trees, put in round the plank-house, had increased rapidly in growth; as had likewise those between the plank-house and the beach, which had been raised from the four shooting-nuts: the time was most propitious to vegetation. We were all busy to-day in airing things that had been wetted by the rains; also in getting various provisions on shore from the ship: and the evening was finished by a great take of mullet with torchlight, to the great amusement, if not astonishment, of our negro friends.

Sunday, 26th.—We all met in our Sunday dress at divine service; and, after my dear wife had sung the hymn, we made the people say the Lord's Prayer after us, which they tried to do. It could not be explained to them at once; but we made them understand that the God to whom we prayed in the address, "Our Father in heaven!" stood in the same relation to us all, that Diego stood to Mira; and this was a great point gained,

as they now had some idea of the object of our worship. We also succeeded in making them comprehend, that all we eat or drank, and all the fruits of the earth, were his gift; and that we therefore prayed for "daily bread." We went through the greater part of the service in their presence this day: and at night, when we retired to rest, we fervently poured forth our thanks, to the Lord of heaven and earth, for blessing our endeavours so far, in opening the minds of these kind-hearted creatures to a knowledge of God.

Monday, 27th.—After the women had finished their Monday morning's task, they put themselves under Diego's direction; for we had now determined, that Xavier should henceforward be chiefly employed in the erection of our long-projected habitation, on the glade beyond our dear hospitable silk-cotton tree. To this end, I furnished him with a plan forty-four feet by sixteen; height of walls fourteen feet: the interior to be divided into three parts; the centre great room, sixteen feet; with one at each side fourteen feet. There were plenty of materials for the projected edifice—squared uprights, planks, boards, laths, and shingles; and I mentioned before, that thirteen trees of the cabbage-palm had been felled, and brought to the spot; seven of which were from sixteen to eighteen feet long, and the other six from fourteen to sixteen feet each, when cleared of their cabbage-head. These trees, when squared, were to form the base of the framework. I therefore hoped, with occasional assistance, as all materials were so well prepared for his hand, that he might finish the building in six months.

Xavier having received my grand architectural plan for our new palace, I sent for Diego, and furnished him, for his agricultural department, with all the yams and

coccos that had been preserved for the purpose of planting: I also gave him about two bushels of the old Indian corn, and some of all the seeds we had collected from time to time from our fruits as we eat them; also more than one half of the tobacco seeds, which I had not yet sown. He was delighted with this kind of supply, as they were more fit for vegetating quickly than the proceeds of the late growth. He took them away carefully to the storehouse near the cotton tree, in which plantation the chief of his operations were to centre; though we had minor nurseries for a few melons in the neighbourhood of the cave-spring, and in other places, to be handy on occasion.

CHAPTER X.

The men worked steadily at their respective avocations, and in three months the labours of each made a respectable appearance. Diego had laid out the grounds well, and every plant had attained its full growth. The house was up: the roofing and flooring, and interior work, only remained to be done. We all enjoyed good health during this period, and preserved great harmony, and proper subordination. Our negro friends began to speak with us, on all ordinary matters in our own language; and we hoped they now knew something of their Redeemer, and the moral duties that should bind man to man. In July there was some rain: these refreshing showers fell generally in the night, and especially after a great display of sheet lightning in the horizon, whose brilliant yet silent coruscations can scarcely be imagined by those who have not resided in intertropical regions.

Monday, August 26th.—My dear wife and myself had much reason to be well satisfied with the prospect of being comfortably lodged before the winter, which, although not much colder than an English summer, yet, in this climate, is attended frequently with stormy, disagreeable weather. We beheld every thing around us prosperous, and promising. Our young goats were nearly full-grown, and our three broods of chickens had nearly attained maturity. The old hens were again laying; and now we ventured on their prolific nature, to regale ourselves occasionally with a few of their delicious eggs at breakfast. Some of the young ducks had been lost, but there remained an abundance; so that now and then we treated ourselves to a roast duckling, as a deli-

cacy. The chocolate plants had sprung up to half a foot in height in several places in the woody region, where we had put in the nuts; and the capsicums and bird-peppers were everywhere full of fruit. Diego's plantation was gratifying to look on. The large red leaves of the coccos had a brilliant effect; and the majestic Indian corn, with its feathery top, and great bulging cobs protruding, leaf-covered from the stem, looked nobly. The yams, with their small stalks, claimed little attention from the eye, but their great usefulness stamped a value even on their homely appearance. The tobacco, thinned out to give it vigour, spread its broad dark-green leaf on a stem four or five feet high, exhibiting a yellow crown of clustering seed-capsules, here and there on a plant destined for seed, the tops of the others being cut off, to give an increase to the magnitude of their leaves. Our pine-apples had just begun to form; while the six sugar-canes had attained a height of nearly eight feet, with stalks and upper leaves of vivid green. All our fruit trees, too, had advanced considerably; so that we might eventually live to see the orange grove and shaddocks, in full bearing, adding to the beauty and comfort of our plantation residence.

But the happy condition of our negro friends was still more gratifying than even all this. Their orderly conduct, their attachment, their progress in speaking English, and the pleasure they seemed to take in learning what God had revealed to man in the Scriptures, gave us a deep feeling of holy joy. They now comprehended the ten commandments, and would not do anything on the Sabbath-day that could fall under the denomination of labour or ordinary work. They also seemed to understand the purport of the Lord's Prayer pretty well, and that memorable saying of our blessed Redeemer, "Do

unto all men as ye would they should do unto you." Perhaps, too, with a sigh, they compared the conduct of their former Christian masters in Cuba, with this most Christian precept, and could not reconcile the difference.

By this time we had been able to make out their story. They had been purchased, and shipped in a schooner, at Trinidada (a town on the south side of Cuba), for some person at La Guira, on the Spanish Main. Two nights before they appeared off our island, the schooner had struck on a reef, and almost instantly bilged, quickly filling with water. The captain, and five others, his crew, took to the boat, taking plenty of provisions with them, and without mercy left the poor negroes to their fate; but fortunately there was a canoe on deck, and the weather being fine, they speedily contrived to get it into the water; and having got a sheet out of the cabin, they made a sail; and with a few dried calavanças, a species of bean, they put off before the wind, to take their chance of taking some land, or being picked up at sea by some vessel. They had made our promontory at daylight, and seeing the opening between the two headlands, struck the sail, and paddled in: and this was the Lord's doing.

We thought how differently it might have fared with us, if the inhuman captain and his crew had made our island, instead of the poor deserted negroes: perhaps we should have been seized and sold into slavery, or something worse; and we blessed God for the manifold kindness of his providence. It was happiness for us to contemplate these dispensations: but there must ever be a want, or a regret on this side of the grave, and we sometimes sighed for a sight of those we loved, and had left behind in England. However, even here, we applied the cheering balm of hope to our aching heart, and felt the relief which resignation, supported by that sweet anchor, never fails to create.

In a few weeks, the product of our second harvest was got in; and its abundance seemed more than sufficient for a six months' consumption. When the labour of it was perfectly accomplished, Diego and Hachinta assisted Xavier in his work, by bringing every thing to his hand as he required it; but Rota made herself so useful to us in a domestic way, that Mira's services were comparatively, only those of a waiting maid. Rota managed all the house affairs, without giving my dear wife any more trouble than the mere expression of her wishes; which gave us now so much leisure, that we were able to read a good deal, and enjoy frequent walks, arm in arm, in intellectual converse; happy in ourselves, and happier still in seeing those around us happy.

On the 1st of September, the wind blew all round the compass, with repeated torrents of rain; and during the night it raged with redoubled violence: but our buildings, old and new, did not receive any damage; nor did anything happen, from the storm, worth remarking. The eleventh being my dear wife's birth-day, she then attaining her one and twentieth year, I made it a day of jubilee, and entertained the whole party more sumptuously than usual, giving them a couple of young full-grown drakes for dinner, a little wine, plenty of coffee, and a few cigars. I drank the dear one's health myself, after our own dinner, in a glass of Canary, continuing to sit before our plank-palace, enjoying the coolness of the promontory shadow, and her sweet conversation. But our friends soon claimed our attention by their approach: they offered their congratulations in their own way, and finished the day with dancing, blithesome and happy: an anniversary ever dear to my memory.

It was about this time that the early part of this diary was written, such as it is, from scraps of memoranda,

and from memory; and in the employment, recording so many mercies, I found inexpressible delight. It was also sweet to me, to write down, again and again, the name of my ever-beloved Eliza, when I occasionally paid the tribute that is due to her heart and understanding.

The plantation-house was finished on Saturday the 30th of November; the foundation of which, being on a high plot of rocky ground, was dry, and free from rank herbage: and its elevation was sufficiently commanding, when compared with the huts of Diego and Xavier, to give it an air of superior consequence. Indeed, things are great or small, only relatively. The interior of the house appeared to us, all we could desire: the floors boarded; the doors and shutters well made; one large door opened in front, opposite the lake, while a second, in the back, pointed towards the mountainous promontory. The side rooms were boarded over at the top, for ceilings, the southernmost being fitted up with shelves for stores. The great hall, we left without any covering, but the raftered roof of the house; which gave it a cool and a lofty air.

Sunday, 1st December.—Our Sabbath devotions had assumed a deepened character. Our people had been taught to respond to the litany, and also to the prayers generally, by the "Amen." And the residue of the day was mostly employed in endeavouring to give them various instruction. Mira could read English words of two syllables, and seemed vain of this acquirement; which, we hoped, would prove at least a grain of mustard-seed, that might in due season become a large plant, bearing its kind.

Monday, 2d.—All hands being now at leisure, I determined to open the hold, and set seriously to work to get up the furniture that had been shipped for our house at St. George's Quay. The men were now able to under-

stand me pretty well; so I commenced business in full confidence of soon effecting my purpose. The mainmast of the brig being gone, deprived us of the advantage of the mainstay, to fix a purchase-tackle to; and, of course, we had neither main-shrouds nor main-yard whereon to fix a guy. We, however, contrived to get the starboard fore-yard-arm aft, between the shrouds and mast; and making fast a double purchase to it, we then bowsed on the lift, and steadied it: the end of the yard-arm being now over the main hatchway, with the tackle affixed, nothing further was required to enable us to go to work, but to fix a guy to an outrigger, made fast to the fore shrouds. This operation altogether cost us the whole day; but, on Tuesday, we put our invention to use. After clearing away the remainder of the boards and planks, of which there were now not a great many, we proceeded to hoist up part of the cargo shipped at Jamaica; viz. American flour, Indian corn, biscuits, sugar, coffee, and rum; all of which were in barrels of thirty-two gallons. The barrels of beef and pork, which had occupied a handy place for ship's use, and which I had opened some months before, were now empty: therefore we had only to throw these empty casks over on the beach. Skids were fixed from the sides of the brig, by which we could lower the full barrels, direct from the tackle, upon land. But it occasioned so much labour afterwards, in rolling the first two or three across the isthmus, to the point where they were to be transported by water to the storehouse, that I proposed bringing the canoe and the punt from that point, and embarking them from the brig at once. The boats, if I may so call them, were brought round the peninsular promontory; but we found it safest merely to put two barrels into the punt, and employ the canoe in towing. They made two trips

the first day, but on every subsequent day they made three trips; so that, by the end of the week, we had conveyed twenty-six barrels to the plantation, besides three that had been rolled to the other side of the isthmus. There then remained in the brig about sixty casks that had been shipped at Jamaica, two only of which were rum: and I had a good mind to bore them to let their contents run out, but was afraid of giving umbrage to my good fellows by so suspicious an act. The barrels sent away consisted of flour, six; of biscuits, six; of sugar, six; of coffee, six; of Indian corn, four; and one of rum. The men worked with great sagacity and promptness, and no accident happened during the whole proceeding.

Sunday, 8th.—We observed this day with due solemnity.

Monday, 9th.—The men were employed some time in getting round to the plantation the three casks from the west side of the isthmus; after which the women assisted them in rolling up all the other barrels to the open ground, where planks were laid over them for the present, to shade them from the sun. These operations occupied the whole of Monday. On Tuesday morning, I made them roll the cask of rum, a barrel of flour, one of biscuits, one of sugar, and one of coffee, into the side apartment of the plantation-house, designed for a store-room. My dear wife, meanwhile, had undertook to make the women bring a quantity of the different fruits from the temporary shed, and arrange them on the shelves in this room; also in other places of it which had been prepared for their reception. But we were soon all at a loss how to dispose of the barrels now lying out of doors; for I had not at first contemplated bringing so many to the plantation. However, Diego relieved my mind, by proposing his house for a warehouse, until Xavier and he could build

one. The proffer was readily accepted, while Xavier courteously offered hospitality to his friend; and so all the barrels were rolled into Diego's hut, which held them easily. These, and some other arrangements connected with them, occupied the whole of Tuesday. On Wednesday morning, again in the ship hold, we got at the cases and packages that contained our household stuff, these packages lying on the top of the heavy cargo shipped in England. We unpacked them in the hold, and were much pleased to find their contents all safe. Most of the articles were conveyed on shore by hand, in baskets or boxes, and thence carried to the plantation. The women were delighted at seeing the pots, and pans, and kettles, pewter and crockeryware; and clapped their hands when they saw the glass, tea equipage, and all the truly English etceteras, such as knives, forks, silver spoons, and so forth. Sheets, tablecloths, and other napery, with all the requisites for home comfort; chair and table furniture, and—bedstead, excepted. All our wood-work was to have been done at Honduras, where mahogany is abundant; but we had mahogany here also, though small; and we had Xavier; and our wants in that way were few, and with those few we could soon be supplied by his skill and industry.

By Friday evening all our things were removed from the ship to the plantation-house, including our store-chest in the steerage passage, a few dozens of wine from the lockers, the captain's case of hollands, and box of cigars, with such other desirable or useful articles as were to be found in the cabin or state-rooms. We slept on board that night for the last time, and took our leave next morning, with a mixture of pleasure and regret, of a blessed ark, I may call it, where we had enjoyed many months of security, peace, and comfort. On Saturday

our trunks and cot were brought on shore, and the dining-table from the cabin, with the two camp stools. These latter I left in the plank-house, instead of the two chairs which were transferred to our new residence. My dearest helpmate, and her maids, put every thing in its place; and by noon nothing remained to be done, but to sling our cot in the bed-room, and to set the table and two chairs in the great hall. We were too much engaged as yet, to think of dining in state to-day; besides dinner was to be prepared for to-morrow also; and many other arrangements were found to demand present attention. In the evening we regaled the whole party with coffee, and I gave each of the men a couple of cigars, indulging myself likewise with the same. When the sun dropped, we rather dreaded a visit from the sand-flies, but were most happy in not hearing or feeling any of those little tormenters. On retiring to rest, we returned thanks to God for our comfortable habitation, and all the blessings his good providence had bestowed upon us. But we did not sleep very soundly; we heard noises we were unaccustomed to, which we afterwards found to be from lizards, some of which we had occasionally seen: but in the morning we were delighted by the song of the tropical nightingale, and rose quite refreshed, and in good spirits.

Sunday, 15th.—The morning of this Sabbath was solemnized in the great hall, with appropriate devotion; and the remainder of the day was passed in the same simple pursuits as heretofore.

Monday, 16th.—Hachinta only, went to the weekly washing to-day, while Rota attended with Mira at our new dwelling. I made the men tow the punt round to the brig early in the morning, where I met them after I had breakfasted. The carpenter's chest was got upon deck, and lowered down into the punt; and such other

things as appertained to the craft, which had not already been taken on shore, were put into it, and delivered into the charge and keeping of Xavier. Some additional spades, hoes, axes, hatchets, and bill-hooks were next brought forth: these were to be deposited in the house store-room, for Diego's future use; and with this cargo the men were sent away, and desired to return. During their absence I looked out two of the best of the seamen's chests, and completed them from the clothing found in the chests of the others. When my active negroes re-appeared, I made them get up a barrel of beef, and a barrel of pork, which I despatched by them to the house store-room; telling them not to return till they had seen me at the plantation. I remained on board some time after they had put off, securing the residue of the captain's property altogether in his state-room; and as his cabin door was still in its place, with lock and key, I duly fastened it.

It being now near one o'clock, I walked over to the plantation-house to dinner. My dear partner received me with smiles, and dressed as when in England. I flew to her arms, as if we had met after a long separation. "My beloved Edward," said she, "how gracious is our God! how much happiness does he bestow on us!" I felt the just tribute, with full force. It was the sentiment that filled my own heart, as I hastened to embrace her. I saw her restored to her former gentlewomanly condition, by his providence, relieved from toil, and all the menial offices of culinary labour. And, may I add, I saw a table covered with a clean damask cloth, laid out with all the conveniences of European comfort, to which my eyes had long been strangers!

While dinner was serving up, my Eliza took me into the store-room, to show me how well the people had

arranged the casks; and herself and damsels, the articles for housekeeping. I was much pleased with the order of everything, and highly gratified with so goodly a sight. Rota sent in our dinner, as nicely cooked and served, as if she had been apprentice to my Lord Mayor's kitchen. A fine fish at the head, a piece of boiled salted pork at the foot, a pumpkin pie on one side, and a roast white yam at the other: with capsicums, and vinegar, and mustard, and all the etceteras. After giving thanks to the Giver of all things, we eat our dainty viands with an indescribable satisfaction; finding gratitude, now as ever, our sweetest sauce. When the cloth was removed, a fine melon, and a bottle of wine decanted, were put before us; I took a slice of the fruit, and drank one glass of the wine to my dear wife's health. Not tarrying longer, we arose, and walked together to the plank-house; the path to which, through the goodly trees, was now well trodden: after sauntering agreeably through the wood, and lingering at the fountain, we sat down to rest upon the camp stools which were already on the platform. For some time we amused ourselves with feeding the poultry and pigeons, which flocked around us, as if glad to see us; and also the armadillo, which had lately been again a prisoner in his crib. As soon as I heard the boats, or rather the men in the canoe, I left Eliza with Mira, who now, as well as Fidele, was her constant attendant, and I proceeded on board.

I made my sturdy fellows get up the seamen's two chests from the steerage, and one cask of Irish butter from the hold; after which I had all the hatchways battened down, fore and aft, and the companion door closed. Then taking two bits of stick of unequal lengths in my hand, with one end of each projecting, I told my two men that the two chests contained clothing; that I did

not know which of the two was best, but he that drew the longest stick should have his choice. They were delighted with the prospect of possessing such a treasure each, and highly entertained at the idea of drawing lots. They drew, and the choice fell to Xavier. "I get big stick, I take big chest;" and he did so, instantly marking it with his knife. Diego's ready couteau soon performed the same operation on the other. The chests were then lowered down into the punt, and also the cask of butter. When they were pushing off to take the cargo home, I showed them the keys, at which they laughed; but I said I would not give them until I came myself to the plantation. After their departure I rejoined my Eliza, and told her all I had been doing: she seemed greatly pleased, and said she would follow my example in one respect at least, by giving the women some striped cotton (of which she had several pieces) to make up for themselves; but the cutting of it out she herself would superintend. We remained awhile at the plank-house in continued conversation; and, amongst other domestic subjects, thoughts of the expediency of removing a colony of the young fowls and ducklings to our new habitation, suggested themselves.

On our return home, we met the men bringing up the butter, which they placed in the store-room; after which I gave them their keys; and when their wives, and even Mira, knew what they were for, the whole party went off together to the water-side, to help up with the chests to their own house, to see, no doubt, what they contained. That operation detained our domestics a long time; however, about seven o'clock, coffee was served up by Rota; Hachinta getting supper for the men. I now regularly took my cigar after coffee, which was both agreeable to my dear wife and to myself. The evening was cool, and

there were not any sand-flies to annoy us; we sometimes heard the buzz of a moscheto, but that insect did not bite us; it was, therefore, pleasant to sit with open doors, looking full upon the tranquil lake, distant from us about two hundred yards, discoursing on all we had been doing, and on what we yet intended to do. While we talked, Mira and Fidele slept cosily together on the floor, not far from our side. In due time our own eyes drew to slumber: the doors were closed, and we retired to our room, making Mira spread her mattress in the hall; but Fidele shared our apartment, and contented himself with a boarded bed.

Tuesday, 17th.—In the morning I sent for the men, and told Xavier, if he and Diego could be satisfied with lodging together for a little longer time, I should wish him to erect a complete poultry-house, with roosts and laying compartments for the hens; the ducks to have their habitation below. And I thought it should be placed between the open space separating the two huts, and the great house, and be stoccaded round with stakes and wattles. I made him understand me, and he undertook the task cheerfully. I now gave directions to Diego to try his skill at a new fish-pot, the old one being nearly worn out; also to enlarge the crayfish craal, so as to hold a turtle occasionally. I told him besides, that I should look to him to provide us in fish as well as vegetables; but I charged him never to attempt to catch any of the pigeons, nor to take their eggs, nor indeed in any way to disturb them. My dear Eliza's tender wish was this; but my own principal reason for the injunction, was to keep him and the rest of the people out of the cave. Diego promised to mind all I had said; but he took the occasion to observe, that the first tobacco leaves had been pressed together long enough to be mellowed, and he

should like to make some cigars for himself and Xavier. "I will supply you both, for a fortnight," returned I; "we shall soon have the rains, when you cannot go to outwork: you may then make up the tobacco" He seemed quite satisfied; and I accordingly went to the store-room, and divided a hundred cigars into two parcels, desiring him to reserve one for himself, and to give the other to Xavier. This unexpected and welcome present drew forth many profound bows from honest Diego. After breakfast, I began to arrange the fire-arms and boarding-pikes in our bed-room. There were three muskets and six pikes. I drew the charge from the muskets that were loaded, and employed myself till dinner time in cleaning them; after which, I placed them, one over the other horizontally, on wooden pins, which I fixed in the wainscot; and immediately above them hung up the ship's spy-glass and speaking-trumpet, and then flanked the whole with the boarding-pikes, placed erect. No one but my wife knew where I kept the ammunition; but it was at hand, if wanted. We thought all these precautions right, although we hoped quite unnecessary. Caution and circumspection, however, are faithful sentinels. My pistols I always wore ready loaded in my belt.

While I was arranging the arms, my dear Eliza placed the few books we had in due order; and on a neighbouring shelf, made a fine display of the shells we had collected during our residence on the island, from the noble conch, the monarch of them all, used for a bugle, down to the rice shells, whose extreme smallness and beautiful translucency, and great abundance, elicited from my beloved an exclamation, "What would you give for these, Queen Mab!" These little beauties were, indeed, like fabled things of fairyland. The noble Shakspeare, was

to be found among our books; but the nobler Bible was there also. We had Archbishop Tillotson's works, and the Spectator, and Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress; and one book more, that afforded us never-failing pastime—I mean the Arabian Nights' Entertainments, in which there is, throughout, more than floats on the surface of the story. A fable is a foolish thing, if we do not lay hold on the allegory; but that being taken up, no mode of writing can be more delightful and instructive, as evidenced in the works of the late Mr. John Gay.

Every one was industrious in his or her calling, and in nine days Diego had finished his job. But there was no rest for him! We had been made sensible of the danger of fire, when near our wooden habitations in a loose and uncovered state. I, therefore, directed him to quarry some stones with the iron crow-bar, and place them in the rear of the open space, under the rock, behind the two negro houses; and there with the assistance of Xavier, build a safe kitchen. This was to be done as soon as the pen was up, and stoccaded. The men worked hard at their respective tasks, and by the end of the week the fowl house was erected; but it required all the labour of them both, during several days afterwards, to cut the stakes and watlings for the stoccado, and put them in place; which was not accomplished till Tuesday the 24th instant, but early enough on that day to allow us to transfer into it a colony of our ducks and fowls, twelve of either sort. Before they were turned in, a wing of each bird was clipped, to prevent their flying over. The goats also were brought, and put into the stoccado, as were likewise the two tame pigeons. The great body of the poultry was left behind at their old quarters; the young ones of which were destined for table use; while the old patriarchs and mothers of the tribes, we intended

to leave in permanent possession of their former haunts, to lay and multiply, as might happen.

The next day would be the anniversary of our landing on the island, of which we informed our friends; but we also informed them, that it likewise was the birth-day of the Lord Jesus, through whose mercy we and they were preserved alive! and that we must keep it as a Sabbath, with this difference, that they might dress a feast to celebrate the day; for it was a day of rejoicing to all the human race. I then directed Rota to roast, for their entertainment, a couple of young fat ducks, and to make them a pepper-pot; also to bake flour cakes, and take such vegetables and fruits as she might choose.

Our minds were much excited by the recollection of our deliverance from shipwreck, and by the anticipation of a day which brought up in our memories the dear friends we had left behind in England, and who, most probably, were sorrowing for us, who were now safe and so happy! We hoped some blessed occasion might inform them of our preservation; and, added to all this, the sentiments of joy, which Christmas-day brings to all hearts that beat under the banner of the cross, now rapturously expanded ours. All these emotions were too much; and we sought to calm our souls, in long and fervent prayer, when we went to our chamber; and there we indeed found "that peace which the world can neither give nor take away." Thus soothed by the Spirit of our heavenly Father, we retired to our cot, where tranquil sleep, and consequent refreshment awaited us.

Wednesday, 25th.—After breakfast, we assembled in our best attire in the great hall; and after singing a hymn appropriate to the day, we read such parts of the Morning service as bore more particularly on it, together with the lessons. The negroes were much interested, and desired

to have many things explained to them, which we were unable to do, from their yet scanty knowledge of our language: however, I endeavoured to make them comprehend, that Jesus came into the world for the purpose of teaching to men the will of his Almighty Father, the pure and merciful God; and, by the sacrifice of himself, to atone for the sins of repentant transgressors, who "groan in their spirit," to be relieved from the corruptible propensities of fallen human nature.

After divine service, we followed the culinary practice of our ancestors, as nearly as we could in the absence of roast beef and mince pies; so that our friends were regaled still something in the English way. Rota served them up a good dinner, and I added to it a bottle of wine; they had plenty of cigars; and my dear wife had given them out coffee and sugar liberally. Our own dinner was but a chicken and some coccos. Poor Rota had roasted herself sufficiently for her party, we thought, without our imposing anything more on her for us than what we considered quite necessary; but we sat after dinner over our fruit and wine, happy, most happy, enjoying more nearly the state of paradise, than when the world's gaieties could mingle in our hearts' gladness. Fears, and cares, and anxieties were all excluded; here was no intrusion: peace and plenty, and an habitual communion with God, seemed alone present with us.

At sunset our people came and ranged themselves round the great door, where they sung: sometimes two dancing, sometimes the whole. When all their evolutions were gone through, they advanced to take leave; on which occasion my dear wife gave to each a large coloured cotton kerchief to wear on their heads; and they received the present with many demonstrations of gratitude, and said "Good night."

The three following days the men continued to work at the stone kitchen; but being unaccustomed to masonry, their progress was much slower than they had anticipated.

Sunday, 29th.—We kept the Sabbath with all due observance of sanctity; yet amused ourselves innocently in recreative exercise, after the performance of divine service, and in the evening.

Monday, 30th.—Xavier and Diego continued to work on the stone kitchen; and, that they might not be interrupted, I undertook to take the fish, and, with the women, to do whatever else might be required for the establishment, which had usually been the men's part. By Wednesday they finished the kitchen, the walls of which were built pretty high, entirely of dry stones; and the cooking places within were made of the same materials; the two ends of the kitchen were planked over, but about four feet of the centre was left open. The position we had chosen was safe, because the sea-breeze, although originally from the eastward, was changed in its course, by the hill, to the south-west, which would carry the smoke or sparks clear of all our buildings. I was glad to have accomplished this object, for we looked every day for the breaking up of the fine weather, but it still continued; so that on Thursday and Friday the men made aquatic excursions in the canoe. On the first day they circumnavigated the western island, and brought back with them some calabashes, several fine conchs, containing their fish, and many other shells in the same living state. My dear wife had previously arranged her former collection of shells, and was much pleased with the idea of adding some fine specimens to them from this new acquisition; for the shell loses its beauty after it has long been deserted by its inhabitant, and rolled about by the wind and sea. On Friday the men visited, before daylight,

the rocks and islands to the north-east, where the brig had struck; and there they succeeded in taking three fine turtles, which they brought home, and placed in the craal. We devoted Saturday to domestic purposes, letting the fowls and goats out for a few hours, and herding them to the southward of our habitations, clear of the planted ground. It was now the usual afternoon's pastime, with my Eliza and myself, to repair daily to the plank-house for an hour, to feed our abundant poultry left there, and then to visit the quarter-deck of that vessel which, at least to us, had been a faithful ark under Divine Providence.

Sunday, 5th January, 1735.—Kept the early part of this Sabbath-day as usual, by the performance of divine service, and by reading and explaining to our friends such parts of the Gospel as they might comprehend. Towards evening the sky became overcast, which was suddenly succeeded by torrents of rain, alternating with heavy gusts of wind, from north and north-west. We had anticipated the bad weather for some days, and had taken the precaution to haul up the canoe and punt upon the beach. The wind blew all night a hurricane, which shook our habitation fearfully: my dear wife sometimes thought it would be overturned; and, indeed, if Xavier had not exercised much skill in its construction, it could not have stood. He had given it a solid basement of trees; three under the front, and three under the back, and seven lengthways across, to which the flooring was fastened by tree-nails. All the windows were made to close with sliding shutters, like shop windows, so that they could be entirely or partially open, or quite closed; and during a hurricane, the safety of a house mainly depends on keeping out the wind. The doors were each of four pieces, folding back or forwards, with a wooden bar fastening inside; so that, when shut, the gale was completely excluded. The

store-room windows, indeed, were fitted otherwise: they were protected only by boards, slanting one over the other, in the fashion of Spanish blinds; but these boards nearly overlapped each other, throwing off the rain entirely, and very materially breaking the force of the wind. Still our terrors were great, and we rose from our bed, and I struck a light; and we went into the great hall, to see how it fared with Mira; but she was reckless of the storm, and slept soundly. "Happy creature!" said my dear wife; "thou knowest not what anxiety means!" Towards morning the wind abated; and we also found repose, on retiring to our cot.

A little before daybreak, I thought I heard guns firing. I instantly got up, and sent the men to the summit of the promontory to look out. They quickly returned, with information that a vessel was in distress, and they believed on a reef in the offing. I hastened back with them to the heights, and taking the glass, saw the vessel, a brig schooner, steering away to the south-west. No doubt she had been aground, but had got off. We watched her for a couple of hours, until nearly out of sight. My gracious Eliza was much moved by the recital on my return; and, without expressing any natural regret at so probable an instrument of deliverance to ourselves from the island, not having come into our harbour, she thanked God that they had escaped, and were proceeding on their voyage. The rains, with occasional gusts of wind from every quarter of the compass, continued daily, at intervals, to pour in profuse torrents, for nine days; but may be said to have subsided entirely, on Tuesday the 14th.

From the circumstance of seeing the vessel in distress, the idea of erecting a flag-staff on the promontory, on which I might hoist the brig's ensign if occasion should offer, presented itself to my mind; and I set about putting it in execution. With some trouble, we unshipped the

fore top-gallant-mast of the brig, which was already struck, and brought it away; and before night we conveyed it to the summit of the promontory. On Wednesday morning we fitted a truck and halliards to it; and, with the crow-bar, excavated a place in the rocky ground to receive it. After placing the mast as firmly as we could, we built the base round with stones, to steady it, and finished the job before sunset. On Thursday, we were all on foot by the grey of the morning, taking the ensign with us; and as the sun rose, I hoisted the English colours, and gave three cheers, crying aloud, "King George, and England for ever!" I felt that, by this act, I had taken possession in sovereignty for our gracious king. We left the flag flying till sunset, when the men and I ascended the hill again, with a tarpauling bag, in which we cased the colours, after lowering them at the going down of the sun.

On my return home, my dear wife regaled me with coffee and a cigar, while I expatiated on the probable consequences of the measure, perhaps with some extravagance; for we were ignorant of whose dominions we were in, or even of the probable name of the spot where we were; for our situation did not exactly answer to any island, or islands, laid down in the chart I had found in the captain's chest. Indeed it had been made sufficiently evident to us, that these islands were extremely dangerous of approach on all sides, to a very great distance seaward; so that mariners, being perhaps aware of the prodigious number of rocks and shoals which lay in this direction, might always give them, if possible, a wide berth; and, accordingly, it might as yet be an unappropriated place.

Friday, 17th.—Diego put the two women in requisition to-day, to assist him in the field; while Xavier began the erection of a storehouse for provisions, at a little

distance from the south-west end of our dwelling-house. This storehouse cost our carpenter a great deal of labour; for it was regularly built with boards, and shingled over; so that he had not completed it before Tuesday, the 11th of February, by which time the plantation-work was also nearly completed, although on a much more extended scale than formerly; for not only all the good ground between the mansion and woodland region had been cultivated, but the fertile plots between the spring and rock also.

There yet remained much of the former harvest in store. Our fowls and ducks had multiplied, and our young goats had kidded three amongst them. The wild bananas, put in near the spring, had attained their full growth. The sugar canes and pines had thrown out many offsets, which had been transplanted; and both the one and the other were approaching maturity. Diego had made cigars from his tobacco during the rains, of which from time to time he brought me an offering. And the bad weather gave occasion also to a new species of domestic industry—the platting of narrow strips of the cabbage-palm leaf into a continued extension, called sinnetto, which the women sewed together in form, making of it a hat, somewhat rude in shape, but light in texture: holding out an earnest of something better on a future day. In short, peace, harmony, plenty, and promise, surrounded our dwelling: and it only remained to keep alive in our hearts a daily and habitual thankfulness to the Giver of all things. During this period, my dear wife and myself, with Mira and Fidele, took many a happy walk; but passed the heat of the day generally within our new palace, enjoying the few books we had the good fortune to bring out with us.

CHAPTER XI.

Wednesday, 12th February.—While at breakfast I heard distinctly the firing of cannon, and hastened with my Eliza, and all the group at my heels, to the summit of the promontory. We saw a brig and a schooner in the offing, the former firing at the latter, which seemed much embarrassed by the shoals and reefs, in her endeavour to escape the enemy. I could discern Spanish colours flying at the brig's peak; but the schooner did not show any. I immediately hoisted our ensign; and in a few minutes the schooner showed English colours at her fore-topmast head, at the same time shaping her course for the promontory. The brig followed her, firing a bow gun every now and then. I did not hesitate, but leaving my wife and the women near our ensign, hastened with the men back to the house, and taking down the muskets and the pikes, and ship's trumpet, got out a bundle of ball cartridges; and throwing some provisions that were at hand into a basket, and making one of my companions fill the canteen with water, we returned to the height with as much speed as possible. By the time we reached the summit, we saw the schooner entering the passage between the promontory and opposite island. I instantly loaded one of the muskets; and at that moment the brig, which was not above half a mile astern of her, fired another shot. I immediately returned it; and was delighted to see the brig heave to. I then hailed the schooner to luff round the headland, and anchor about two cables' length off the house, in the bay. To this they answered "Ay! ay!" The brig again bore up for the passage; I instantly fired another

shot, and then another; but he still kept his course. I then thought a volley might be more impressive — if three muskets fired together may be so called!—for the business had become exceedingly serious; and the poor negroes were almost frightened to death, at the sight of the Spanish flag so near to them. I therefore loaded the three muskets with haste; and advancing close to the brink of the promontory, we gave him the contents upon his deck; the effect of which I do not know, further than that he immediately hauled his wind, and stood out to sea for five or six miles, and then hove to again.

On observing this, I requested my dear wife to remain by the flag-staff, with the women, until I should send for her, or return to her. She readily acquiesced; and I added my desire that she should give me notice, if she saw the brig standing in again. I now hastened to the shore with the men; and embarking in the canoe, rowed out to the schooner, which had anchored off the woodland regions. I jumped on board, with my pistols in my belt, and was heartily greeted by the captain and his crew. "If it had not been for your men on the height," said he, "we should have been taken by yon Guarda Costa; but they gave him a dose, I guess, and he is off. What island is this?" continued he: "I did not know that our nation had a garrison on any of these places." —"I am happy to see you here in safety, friend," I replied; "but have you neither cannon nor musketry?" —"None," answered he.—"Then I hope," said I, "that we shall see the guarda costa no more; for you see all my garrison before you; and as to the name of the island, I know no more of it than yourself; however, your business now is to land, and leave your vessel to its fate. If the guarda costa should persist in coming in, he cannot but succeed in taking her, and in burning our

dwellings; but if he attempts to take you and us, we will do our best against him." The captain and crew were altogether six in number: they hastily got the boat out and accompanied us on shore; whence they proceeded with me directly to the height, where my dear wife and her companions received them courteously.

From hence we had the satisfaction to see the Spaniard increase his distance: so, leaving Xavier and his wife by the flag-staff, to keep watch, I descended with the rest of our party to the beach; where I desired the captain to warp his vessel as close in as he could to the shore, and afterwards give me the pleasure of his company to dinner. He readily did as I bid him, moving her into the little bay below the cotton tree; and disembarked time enough to appear at our family meal. Rota, however, made it rather a feast, presenting us with a Yankee dish of salt pork and pumpkin, I suppose in honour of our guest; to which she added a brace of mullet, and a roast chicken. A decanter of Canary was placed at my elbow. A table laid out with all the circumstances of European equipment, and served with such prime food, and capital wine too, in so out of the way a place, evidently caused much surprise in the captain, who looked at every thing out of the corner of his eye. I hoped he did not see the empty box I sat on for a chair, the stranger and the lady occupying the only two I had. However, he neither made remarks, nor asked questions; but eat his dinner, saying a few words now and then on his late narrow escape. And when dinner was finished he told us his story.

He belonged to Norfolk, in Virgina; had sailed to Santa Martha, on the Spanish Main; taking Cape St. Nicholas Mole, in St. Domingo, on his way. He embarked flour, and some goods of English manufacture,

from Norfolk, and picked up half-a-dozen slaves from a slave ship at the Cape. For his merchandize, he took payment in bags of cacao: for the slaves, he had received nearly two thousand dollars, with which return he had sailed. A few days after, he fell in with the guarda costa, which chased him a day and a night, and had run him on a reef just as we hoisted our colours. He then expected every moment to be captured, and was about to throw the dollars overboard, the only part of the cargo that could condemn him, when the schooner beat over the reef (but, he feared, with the loss of her false keel), and so escaped shipwreck, by good luck, (as he expressed it); and from capture afterwards, by our well-timed fire of musketry. He intended to return through the Gulf of Florida; but as the schooner had been leaking since she struck, he should be afraid to put to sea until he had ascertained her condition. I made but few remarks on what he told us, and reserved all detail respecting ourselves until I should know a little more of him, and more exactly what he meant to do. After we had sat about an hour, I called Diego, and told the captain it might be well for him to accompany that guide to the height, and there reconnoitre the brig; after which I should be glad to see him back to coffee and a cigar.

During his absence, my dear wife and I took our new position, into serious consideration. It was possible the Spaniard might return with the sea-breeze next morning, and destroy every thing belonging to us. We trusted, however, in God, and thereby set that matter at rest. We then canvassed the wisdom of embarking in this schooner, with our money, if she were found sea-worthy; and many other matters, on all of which we came to conditional conclusions. About five o'clock, the captain returned, with Xavier and his wife; Diego having been

ordered to remain on the height, to strike the colours at sunset, and at the same time to fire a musket, if the brig should be in sight. Our guest reported, that the brig was still lying to, about six miles off; and probably, he thought, might drop anchor, and stand in with the sea-breeze. "Would you venture to do so, captain?" said I; "not knowing but by so doing you might run into a trap! He will not dare it," continued I, "you may rely on it, without a previous reconnoitre: however, during the night he cannot stir, and in the morning we shall see his movements. After coffee, bring your dollars on shore, and hide them in the sand, where you can put your hand on them: there is nothing better than caution. If you lose the schooner, you will save your money; and if he burn our houses, we shall at least be as well off as you, for we are not penniless; and I will defy him, with all his crew, to attack our persons with success, if we are driven to fight him from the heights. So that, if the worst come, we shall save our lives and our money, and our liberty too; for these much-valued negroes that surround me, are free as I am; and I would rather risk my life for the preservation of their freedom, than for my own wealth."

Much of my conversation was to him a riddle; but he had something else to think of just then, than the propounding of riddles. After the return of Diego, who had fired the musket when he hauled down the colours at sunset, the captain proposed to wish us "Good night," that all might retire to rest, and so be up early in the morning, to keep an eye on the brig. "That won't do, captain," said I; "we must watch all night. Two of your men shall go with mine, armed with a couple of muskets, and four boarding-pikes, and row guard at the back of the promontory, lest the enemy should

send in his boat to reconnoitre, and, finding no one on the alert, surprise us." The captain consented to my proposition, and sent two men on shore, to whom I gave some coffee; and having conferred with Diego and Xavier, they readily consented to go with them in the canoe, and keep a good look-out. I furnished the party, as I had proposed, with boarding-pikes and fire-arms, not forgetting a supply of ball cartridges; and I desired them to take with them some food, and the canteen. Being thus equipped, they put off in the canoe, which was a fine boat of the kind, to row guard.

We could not think of sleeping, and the women remained with us in the great hall; some provisions, and a calabash of water, being in readiness to take to the height, should we be driven to the extremity of retiring thither. About midnight we heard the report of muskets, which alarmed us not a little; so that we went out on the open ground before the house, where the captain and his remaining four men soon joined us, they having pulled off from the schooner in their boat, the moment they heard the firing. I had two pikes left, and one musket, and my pistols, which I quickly mustered together, with half a dozen good felling axes; and gently whispering my wife to stay with the women, I hastened, with the captain and his men, followed by her prayers for my safety, to the boat; and desiring them to row as quickly as they could to the assistance of the canoe, they obeyed without a word. We pulled lustily round the point, the firing being still kept up by a shot now and then. We soon joined the canoe, and saw the Spanish boat about a cable's length outside of her. They were both lying on their oars, exchanging a shot, now and then, at each other. On our coming up to the canoe, I was glad to find none in her wounded; and the two sailors, all alert,

cried out to me, "We want to board them, but your people won't lay us alongside."—"We will do it now," said I. "Give way, lads! but don't fire a shot till we are within boat-hook's length of her; then we will board and carry her." We instantly pulled out abreast, and I ordered the canoe not to go ahead of us. The Spaniard kept on his oars awhile, then gave us a few shot, and pulled away. At first he seemed to go from us, but, from some cause or other, we soon gained on him, and presently were close to him; for he had stopped to load and fire, but, thank God, without effect, for not one of our men was hit. We were just about to return the compliment, and board, when they cried for quarter, and we rowed up alongside in the boat, desiring the canoe, meanwhile, to keep a few yards off, with the muskets cocked. There were six sailors, and an officer and two soldiers, in their boat. The officer gave up his sword; and we took the muskets and bayonets from the soldiers, and also six other muskets, which had been put into the boat for the crew, and all their ammunition. Having effected this, I told our prisoners, in a proud tone, that they might now return to their ship, but must beware how they fell into our hands again, on such an errand; adding, that, as it was, I hardly knew how I could excuse their conduct in firing on an English vessel, in sight of the English flag, when the two nations were at peace! I had scarcely done speaking, when two of the crew exclaimed, "Massa, take we."—"Who are you?" I replied.—"Sailor negers, sir: we Mudians, sir: they take we, sir: they put we in boat, sir, because we row well, sir."—"You come into my boat; and tell them to go, and never come near this place again," returned I.—"Yes, massa," was the answer, as the two black fellows jumped joyously in, by my side; but they spoke too little Spanish, to repeat what I desired.

I had forgot I had an interpreter at hand, till Diego shouted forth very distinctly, some words in his sort of Spanish, which, perhaps, conveyed the meaning of all I meant to say to the Spaniard, pretty accurately; for the officer replied, that "the schooner was a smuggler, and his commander had a right to take him." This Diego interpreted: to which I made him reply, "Within the limits of your own shore, but not under the flag of an English garrison."—"I think," said the officer, "our captain will be sorry for the affair."—"Very well," I replied; "so he ought. Good night!" And I instantly gave orders to row towards shore, the Spanish boat taking the opposite direction.

In a few minutes the anxiety of my beloved wife crossed my mind. I called the canoe alongside; made the two sailors there, take my place in the boat; and myself stepping into theirs in the canoe, we sprung forward like an arrow. As soon as I could discern my Eliza, as she stood on the shore, I cried out with all my might. "All's well!" To which she replied by repeating the same words, the sound of which delighted my heart and ear. Almost in an instant we were on the beach, where our wives ran forward to meet us, each true to nature in the reception we received. When my beloved could raise her head from my breast, and the power of speech returned, her first question was, "Is any one killed?"—"No, my angel!"—"Is one hurt?"—"Not any one, love!"—"Blessed be God," she replied, "that blood has not been spilt, even in our own defence!" She took my arm; and silently, with full hearts, we walked up to the house. A candle was burning on the table, when we entered. "What have you got there, Edward?" asked she, a little flush passing over her cheek. "The officer's sword," I replied: "we disarmed them, and sent them back to their ship."

—"That was right," she exclaimed; "that was as it should be." While my soul's dearer part, and I, were thus conversing, Diego and Xavier were also exciting vivid emotions in their female auditory; and, interested as I was in the deep feelings of my dear wife, my attention could not help being sometimes drawn aside by the ridiculous gestures of Diego, and the ludicrous manner of his mixing Spanish and English in his recital.

It was not long before the captain and his six men, together with the two negro captives, bringing with them the eight Spanish muskets, and our own weapons, arrived. I directed that all should come in; and as there were no other seats for the men, I requested them to sit on the floor. Rota was desired to place before them the provisions which had been provided for our retreat to the promontory, while I took a bottle of hollands from the case, and made a bowl of grog, serving it round myself; not passing Diego and Xavier, nor the two Bermudian negroes we had rescued from the Spaniards. After they were all refreshed, the captain's crew were sent on board, taking the two Bermudians with them for the night. The captain and myself now took some refreshment, and by the time we had finished, the day began to dawn. "Up, Diego," said I, "and be ready to hoist our colours, and fire a musket, at sunrise: the Spaniard must see we are not asleep." Diego felt what the French call "l'esprit de corps:" in a moment he caught up the musket, examined it to see if all was right, and set off for the flag-staff. Exactly as the sun rose, he discharged his piece; and as he hoisted the ensign, perhaps, stout-hearted as he was, he wished a safe voyage to our enemy, hoping to see him no more.

In about an hour, he returned to us. "Well, Diego," said I, "is the Spaniard gone?"—"No, sir," he replied;

"not gone; sail all up; wait for sea-breeze."—"I reckon that is just the case," observed the captain: "now, if you please," continued he "I will go on board, and turn in." To this I assented; and, as soon as he departed, made my dear wife lie down in the cot, while I piled up the arms in our own room, and disposed of the ammunition. She entreated me to take rest, but that, at present, I told her, was impossible. I could not sleep till the enemy was fairly gone. I therefore directed Xavier and his wife to go up to the flag-staff, and sleep turn and turn about; so keeping a sufficient look-out on the brig. They cheerfully complied; and I made Diego retire to his hut and lie down, as his wife and daughter were both fast asleep on the floor in one corner of the hall. After all this, I went softly into our bed-room, to sit down quietly near my dear wife, and there to turn many important matters over in my mind; but she was awake, and said, "You need not tread so softly, dear Edward; I am not asleep. How happy I am you rescued those two poor Bermudian negroes from the Spaniard! I suppose he would have sold them in the end."—"Very likely, dear," I replied; "I also rejoice they are here; for they will add strength to our little colony, whether we go or stay." —"That, too, is a good thing," she replied; "for what a dreadful circumstance would it be to our poor negro friends here, if they should ever fall into the hands of their old masters again!"

In this way we talked, until the morning was considerably advanced; for my Eliza could not close her eyes, so was her spirit awake; and for me, it only remained to seek refreshment in a good bath and change of linen. Rota and her daughter were now aroused from their slumbers, and set about cleaning the hall and laying breakfast. By this time Xavier and his wife returned

from the flag-staff, bringing with them the happy intelligence that the sea-breeze had reached the guarda costa, and that he was going from us with all sail set. We were now at rest: every other consideration seemed light, compared with the possible consequences of persevering hostility from the Spaniard.

Diego next made his appearance: he looked a little queer, from the fatigue and anxieties of the preceding day. I told him to go and bathe in the sea, change his clothes, and invite the captain to come on shore to breakfast. I also bade him bring the Bermudians with him. He smiled at the idea of bathing, and changing his clothes, but went away with his usual good humour, to do as I desired him. In half an hour the captain joined us at breakfast,—a repast which would not have disgraced a Scotsman's board—flour cakes and butter, plenty of eggs, fish, and coffee! The two Bermuda negroes stood in the hall by the door; and in reply to my question, if they were married? they answered, "No, sir," and laughed. I then asked them as to their capture by the Spaniard. They answered, that they belonged to Master Eliab Tucker of Bermuda, and were taken in a schooner of his on the Spanish Main, some months ago; that their captain and his mate were now in prison at Carthagena; but all the crew, consisting of negroes, had been sold, except themselves, who were kept on board the guarda costa, because they were thought good sailors, and behaved quietly and obediently. "But," continued one of them, "I tank God, massa, we got away; tem Paniards bad fellows, sir."—"Well, never mind what they are: you strive to be good, and that will show you really do thank God for your deliverance. I do not feel," added I, "that it is my duty to send you back to your master at Bermuda; but if you wish to return

to him, I will endeavour to provide you with the opportunity. If you do not like to go back, I think you have now the right to refuse, for you are free men: when the Spaniard took you, Mr. Tucker lost his right over you; and now that I have taken you from the Spaniard, I freely give you any right that I may have acquired in you. I therefore do not hesitate to tell you that you are free; but I will not venture to tell you that the laws of Bermuda may not think otherwise. So if you should go back to that island, do not be surprised if the authorities there, should despise the manumission I would give you, as a certificate of your liberty." They understood me perfectly, and thanked me over and over again, saying they would do anything I wished. "Very well," said I, "we will talk over the matter by and by." I now called to Diego, and told him to take the men, and treat them as one of ourselves; adding, that for the present they must live with him and Xavier. "What are your names?" said I, addressing myself again to the Bermudians.—"Jack Martin, sir," answered the one: "Jemmy Purdy, sir," replied the other.—"O, you are Christians, then, I presume," returned I.—"O yes, massa, you see we have two name."—"Were you ever baptized?" said I.—"No, sir," answered Jack Martin, "we no more Christian except have two name."—"Oh, very well, rejoined I; "go with Diego, and we will talk more on this too, another day."—They made some very low bows, to the great amusement of Diego, who himself was a great proficient in that way, and retired. Jack Martin was a tall young man, with fine features, approaching to the European, but his skin was black as jet. Jemmy Purdy was rather short and ugly, but seemed very good-tempered.

After they were gone, I turned round to the captain,

and asked what were his plans, now the coast was clear? In this question I inquired when he meant to sail, and where he was bound to? "I am bound for the Chesapeake," returned he; "but the schooner leaks so fast, I will not venture to put to sea without looking at her bottom: and to do that, I guess we must heave her down."—"You shall not want assistance," I replied; "look out for a place that will suit your purpose, and let me know."

After breakfast, he went along the beach in his boat, and in about an hour re-appeared, telling me he thought the best place would be the southern side of the rocky point, near the run of water. "Very well," said I; "set about the work at daylight to-morrow morning; and, meanwhile, lend me a couple of your hands to-day, to assist in transferring some casks of provisions from a dwelling-house, to a store that we have just finished."—"I may do that," he replied, "if four men can keep the schooner dry, I guess." Diego was now ordered to move all the barrels from his house to the store, which he said he would do speedily, with the assistance of the two sailors from the schooner, and the two Bermudians. Leaving him to his work, I desired Xavier to keep in attendance on me: then giving my wife my arm, and accompanied by the captain, and followed by Mira and Fidele, we walked through the woodland region to the plank-house. "This place," said I, "captain, will do to stow your cargo in. What is it?"—"Nothing but cacao, in bags," he replied.—"Well," said I, "what this house won't hold, you must cover over on the beach with a sail."

I then addressed myself to Xavier, telling him, that as the ship's repairs would be going on so near our live stock, we must take precautions they should not get hurt by accident or carelessness. I therefore directed him to

immediately set about boarding up the entrance of the thicket from one side to the other; adding, that when it was done, the poultry must be penned in there, until the work about the schooner was completed. I pointed where there were plenty of planks lying at hand, and he knew where there were hinges and locks to spare, for a door. Xavier cheerfully said he would do his best, but must have help, to do it quickly. On this, as the place was in the shade, I volunteered my assistance; the captain instantly did the same; and both together we soon dug a trench in the sand between two and three feet deep, from rock to rock, across the mouth of the opening, that enclosed the thicket and the cave. While Xavier placed the planks on end in the trench, we followed his movements; re-filling it with the sand, to make firm the foundation of our wooden wall. In this way we made short work of it, finishing our part by two o'clock; at which hour we all returned to the plantation house, taking with us the two camp stools from our old palace. The other people had dined; so we sent Xavier his dinner from our table; and thinking himself thus honourably regaled, he hastened back with his wife, to nail some boards across the thicket fence, and to put in a few props, having then only to finish his job by hanging a plank-made door, with lock and hinges.

An hour before sunset, the provision casks were all removed from Diego's dwelling to the storehouse; and then he most courteously gave up his house, to accommodate the crew of the schooner while heaving down. I sent for him, and told him the schooner was to be hauled up to the rock, early the next morning, to be unloaded; and afterwards to be hove down there, to repair her bottom; in consequence of this, I wished a good supply of mullet for the men, to be taken that night by torchlight, and put

into the conservatory. I added, that we would walk over at the proper time to witness the exploit. I also desired him to find a new position for the fish-pots; perhaps off the rocky shore of the open ground, or towards the southern part of the promontory. He replied, it should all be done; and he hoped, as I was so kind to the people, they would behave themselves well. The captain said he would answer for that; "and so will I too," replied I; for "it shall be my business to make such arrangements as will prevent their misconduct ingthemselves, at least towards us."

After coffee we walked over to the isthmus, taking all our household with us. Xavier had just completed his work: and there was now a general muster, and driving of the ducks and poultry into the enclosed thicket; where a hole had been previously made in the earth, and a bucket of water sunk into it for them to drink; also a good allowance of bruised corn was scattered about; and seeing my prisoners all busy pecking, I locked the gate, and put the key in my pocket; my wife and myself only, having a knowledge of what was locked in, besides ducks and fowls.

When the stars appeared, Diego began his torchlight fishing; having, by my desire, the two Bermudians with him. The mullet soon began to spring, and dropped so thick into the punt, that Jemmy Purdy, in his eagerness to gather them into the central part that contained water, fell overboard; and in attempting to get into the punt again, he caused her to heel over so much that she filled, and turned his companion and Diego, torch and all, into the sea; the lucky fish, the while, made their escape. After the first alarm had subsided, we laughed a good deal at the accident, as the men scrambled out. Xavier then insisted on making the fishing with the women,

while the drowned rats went home and changed their clothes; but the poor fellows would not be so mastered: they stripped off their shirts, lighted a new torch, and went to it again with equal sport and more care; finishing by throwing a large supply into the conservatory. We then left them: and I desired the trio to call at the house, in their way home, to receive a glass of grog each; which they did; and as they drank it, Diego said, "Much obliged to you, Jemmy Purdy." Jemmy, who also was a wag in his way, replied with "Your good health, Don Diego;" and from that time his companions often addressed him so, which Diego always took in good part, and sometimes with no small feeling of pride and consequence. The fact was, Diego had a namesake, an officer in the guarda costa, whom Jemmy Purdy always had been accustomed to address in that manner; but it was peculiarly ridiculous to us, from other associations.

We then smoked a cigar; when I took the opportunity of telling the captain as much of our history as I thought expedient; mentioning my wish to return to Jamaica as soon as I could find the means; intending to bring from thence men, and such things as might be necessary to put a jury mainmast into our brig, and to otherwise equip her for sea, so as to take us afterwards to Honduras. He said, he guessed I should have to wait a long time before I found a vessel going to Jamaica. This was the amount of his reply, which I did not like, being a very cold-hearted way of treating the subject. Here, then, the matter rested; but after he took his leave, my dear wife said to me, "I perceived you were not pleased with that man's answer to what you intended as an appeal to his feelings. But never mind his hard nature, my dear Edward: you deserve his gratitude, as well as his sympathy; but where there is little generosity of feeling, money can

generally do every thing; and if you choose to have his vessel, it is in your power to buy it."—"I think you are right, my love," I replied; "but I will say nothing to him on the subject, until the schooner is nearly ready for sea."

Friday, 14th.—The schooner was hauled to the rock; and the people commenced unloading. I sent for the captain to breakfast; during which, he asked me to assist him with my negroes. I told him they were all free men, but I would speak to them on the subject; and, when the business was done, if they helped him, he must settle with them for their labour, at the same rate he would pay at Norfolk. To this, after some quibbling, he agreed. I then sent for Diego and Xavier, and the two Bermudians, and repeated in their presence what I had just proposed: to which he substantially assented. "As far as depends on myself, captain," said I, "you and your men shall receive all hospitality and assistance." The two negro houses were eventually given up; the one to the captain, the other to the crew; and the plantation shed was fitted up for my own men: the women the while all sleeping in the great hall. I took Diego and Xavier into council on this arrangement, of which they highly approved. A good deal of the cargo was got out, and carried to the plank-house the next day; while the women made preparations for the Sabbath.

Sunday, 16th.—On the preceding evening, the captain and myself had some argumentative conversation on the subject of his proceeding with his work on the Sabbath; to which determination of his, I was at last obliged to put my decided negative. On my pronouncing it rather sternly, he said, with an air of stupid acquiescence, he must enter a protest, and he hoped I would not refuse to sign it. I assured him I certainly would sign it, if he should think it necessary.

At ten o'clock, every one was summoned to prayers, which we endeavoured to make as impressive as we could; but there was little attention, and no devotion, excepting on the part of our old friends and fellow Christians. After divine service, I proposed to the captain (if it would be any amusement for him) to row round one of the islands before dinner; but he objected, saying his men were tired, and he reckoned they would rather lie down under the cotton tree. I then asked him if he would like to go with one of my people to the flag-staff. To this he assented; and I desired Diego to attend him, and show him all civility. It seems, on the way, he swore a little at me, for preventing their proceeding with the schooner on that day; but Diego reproved him sharply, and said to me the next day, when speaking of our guest, "That captain, sir, not very good."

As the crew of the schooner were lying about idle, I thought it right to keep the rest of our own men at home also, among whom I included the Bermudians; and to let these see how I meant to deal with them, I desired Xavier to bring them to me. "Friends," said I, "it is my wish, if it should be yours, to take you into my family, and to treat you as I do those you found here. They will tell you how we live together; and if it be agreeable to you to abide here, I will provide wives for each of you at no distant period. You shall each have a house also, and a piece of land, for your comfort and support." They both cried out at once, they believed I was "a good and true man; and a brave man too; and they would stick by me."—"I am glad of it," I replied; "and it will be my endeavour to make you happy." Xavier, who understood very well the purport of what had passed, shook them both by the hand, and said, "I very glad too."

At noon, a good dinner was given to all hands; and at one, the captain returned and dined with us. After dinner he strolled about; while my dear wife and I remained within, reading the Bible; but after some time he came back to take coffee and a cigar. I cannot say we were either much amused or edified by his conversation; he spoke of the blacks, as if they were nothing better than beasts of burden; and ventured some jokes on the sober-minded people of New England, that were not received as he expected. "You call yourselves Buckskins," said my dear wife (after listening long with much patience to his nonsense), "and with anything but a feeling of brotherly love, you call your northern neighbour Brother Jonathan, sneering at his quiet and peaceful demeanour, and deriding his most punctual observance of this most holy day. I will hope, captain," continued she, "that the day may come when an American shall be ashamed of the name of Buckskin." This was rather severe, but he deserved it. While we were talking, Diego was regaling the schooner's crew with some cigars of his making; but unluckily the captain had allowed the men to bring rum on shore without saying anything to me about it; and in consequence they became very noisy, which induced their sable host to break up the entertainment, and come to me with a whisper communicating the state they were in. I was not well pleased, so that I rebuked my worthy Diego on the instant for allowing the introduction of rum in any quantity among them, requesting the captain at the same time never to let them have one drop beyond their allowance as long as they remained here; for intoxicated men could not be governed. "I guess it was no rum of mine," he replied; "some of their own stuff I reckon. There's no other time for them to drink it," continued he, "but in harbour

upon Sundays." I could scarcely restrain my indignation at this reply: this much however escaped me—"No one shall drink rum here on Sundays, sir! I tell you that." On which he offered some sort of apology, which went little further than to declare that the rum was not his; which, by the way, I could have believed, without much ado to substantiate it. After this he soon took his leave; and, in truth, my dear wife and myself were so sick of these strangers, that we wished them gone, and safely anchored in the waters of the Chesapeake. I, however, saw every one to his quarters by eight o'clock; and desired Diego and Xavier to get up now and then during the night, and walk round the grounds, to observe whether all remained quiet. After our retiring, my dear wife and myself poured out our hearts to God our Father, in thanksgiving for our late deliverance; and in prayer for his grace to the obdurate, as well as to ourselves.

In the course of the ensuing week, the crew unloaded and hove down the schooner. They found part of the false keel gone, and the end of a plank in the bottom pierced by the rocks on which she had struck. The captain came to me, in great distress, when it was discovered; for he had neither carpenter nor carpenter's tools on board. "Your bad condition," said I, somewhat austerely, "would be likely to detain you longer here than the observance of the Sabbath, if you were left to your own resources; but you shall not be left to them; all shall be done for you that you may require; and I hope, if you should be here another Sunday, I shall hear no more of a protest." He now seemed rather ashamed of himself, if I did not mistake the feeling that his embarrassment expressed. I, however, immediately sent for Xavier, and desired him to take a couple of felling axes, and go with the captain in his boat to the place most likely to afford

a long, straight, and hard tree, to make a false keel; and to measure what he might want before he went, and bring away two or more trees, if needed, for the purpose required. This order was carried into effect without loss of time; the whole of the crew being employed all that day, in hewing down the timber, and bringing it to the place where the schooner lay hove down, keel out.

This matter being arranged, I took Diego with me to the ship, to ransack the steerage for some more seamen's clothes, to rig the poor Bermudians; but we found little worth bringing away: so I determined to make free with some of our lost captain's commonest things, and by that means made up a couple of kits for our two new colonists. Diego put them into two of the empty chests I had before left in the steerage, and then as briskly conveying them to the punt (for he delighted in the pleasure they would give), he rowed round to the plantation, where I met him, and delivered them to Martin and Purdy, in the same way I had done to my shipwrecked friends. The poor fellows were very thankful, and assisted each other up with the chests to the plantation-shed, their present habitation; where, as Diego afterwards told me, they overhauled them with great satisfaction.

As the opportunity was a good one, my dear wife and myself, followed only by our faithful little dog (Mira being desired to stay with her mother), made a visit to the cave, taking with us a basket of bruised corn. I unlocked the gate, and locked it again after me, taking Fidele in my arms; while my wife, holding the basket, strewed the corn to our clamorous poultry. We then went into the cave, and I satisfied myself, by feeling the wall, that no one had disturbed it. The object of our coming, being thus accomplished, we returned home, and sat down to dinner without our visiter, whose absence was to us a great relief.

The captain, however, made his appearance a little before sunset, in prime spirits; telling us that he had got two capital sticks, which they had cut on the opposite shore, and hoped he would now soon be ready for sea. "Are you driving for a market?" said I; "or is it for a new freight, that you are so anxious to proceed on your voyage?"—"No," returned he; "but loss of time is loss of money. I am paid by the voyage, and not by the month; the vessel is my own; and I must make as much of her as I can."—"And who does your cargo of cacao belong to?" said I.—"To the merchant Dwyer at Norfolk," he replied. "And what freight do you receive for that?"—"O! I am to have so much for the run out, and home."—"Very well," returned I: "then you are not confined to time, so that you make the voyage in the end?"—"Yes," he said, "I am confined to time, because every day's delay is time lost to me, which I might employ profitably if the voyage was finished."—"Now I understand you," I replied; "I see how it is. And since you have told me that the vessel is your own, no time shall be lost in repairing her for you. Every assistance shall be given to your men, and I will pay my people for doing it, as, perhaps, you are not very rich." He spoke in reply with some feeling on this, saying I overpowered him with my generosity; that he had a wife and family; and though, besides the schooner, and the two thousand dollars he had with him, he owned a little farm, yet times were hard. He now seemed a little humanized; and I felt disposed to make every allowance to old habits, and neglected religious education, for his sordid manner of proceeding. I, however, dropped the subject nearest to our hearts for the present; and after he had taken his cigar, we mutually wished "Good night."

When he was gone, I said to my Eliza, "You were

right; money is this man's idol. I see we may take him to Jamaica, if we please; but I will not start the project to him, until the schooner is repaired and reloaded." From this time, to the end of the week, every thing went on orderly; and on Sunday, the Sabbath was observed by the new comers with some appearance of devotion. The captain was in good humour, and after prayers he proposed rowing out into the sound, where he would amuse himself with making some observations on the course of the open channel. He did so; and having taken a compass, and a pencil and paper with him, he noted such landmarks as kept it open. On his return, he showed me the observations he had made, of which I gladly took a copy.

The false keel being quite ready on the following Monday, it was fixed the next day; and, on Wednesday, a new piece of plank, which I furnished, was put in, and all well caulked, and payed with our own oakum and pitch before night. On Thursday, they were embarking the cacao, which was packed in bags of about a hundred weight each, called a fanega.

While sitting after dinner, as I helped my guest to a glass of wine, I said to him, "How long might it take a good sailing vessel to beat up from this place to Kingston?" —"I can't say," he replied; "I guess three weeks, over or under, as the trade wind might veer."—"Well now, if it is a fair question," I rejoined, "what may you have for the run from Norfolk to Santa Martha, and back?" "Why," said he, "six hundred dollars: it should be seven hundred, but then I made more than that by the black fellows I bought at St. Domingo, on my way; and I had need, for I shipped two extra hands on their account; four, and myself, are men enough for the schooner."—"Pray," continued I, "what time did you

give yourself for the run, as you call it?"—"Why, I guess," said he, "about three months at most; but I shan't do it now within time."—"Well now," said I, "after all this, will you undertake to give me up your cabin, for my wife and myself, and some money, to be landed at Kingston: and wait there three days, to see whether I can meet with a small vessel to purchase, to bring me back here to save the brig and her cargo? And for this trip I would give you half the amount you would receive for three months' run."—"That would be three hundred and fifty dollars, I reckon," he replied.—"No," I said, "three hundred dollars."—"I will think of it," answered he, "and let you know in the afternoon." He then went away, and returned a little before coffee time. "I have been thinking over your offer," said he, "and have a mind to take it; but I am afraid it would break my charter-party." My dear wife, who hitherto had preserved silence when he and I were discussing the subject, abruptly spoke, and with energy. "You seem to forget," said she, "that the Spaniard would have broken your charter-party, and reduced you and yours to beggary, if my brave and generous husband there, had not saved you." On uttering this just reproof, she got up, and walked into the adjoining room. The fellow was struck dumb by this appeal. At length, something recovering himself, he stammered out—"Well, I think I shall run all risks to oblige you; for, as your wife says, it would have been all up with us, but for you and your people. So I will undertake to land you at Kingston, with any money you may take in the cabin, on the terms you propose; but we will have a written agreement, if you please."—"Certainly," said I; "two; one for you, and one for me. But, now, if I take one of my men with me, what will you charge for his passage?"—"I don't

know," returned he; will ten dollars be too much?"—"No," I replied; "I will pay it if he goes; and ten for a woman, if my wife chooses a female attendant." I now got pen, ink, and paper, and, without delay, wrote an agreement, which he copied, and we duly signed them both, he taking the one written by me, I the one written by him.

CHAPTER XII.

After coffee, I begged the captain would excuse my requesting him to take his cigar to-night at his own quarters, as I wished to lose no time in making my arrangements for departure. He accordingly took his leave. I instantly communicated to Eliza my decisive step, and almost in the same moment sent for Diego to come to me. He obeyed, and I opened the business. He was too much astonished to make me any collected remarks, for some time; but my point was gained so far, that he had learnt my intention first from myself, and thereby I had obviated the misgivings that might have arisen had the people been first told it from any other quarter. I bade Diego come to me at sunrise next day, and bring Xavier with him, also the two Bermudians. When we retired to rest, my dear wife and myself threw ourselves on that God who never had forsaken us; and after we had prayed, we turned the matter over, looking at all the circumstances of the case as narrowly as we could, the peace and comfort and security of our adopted family being near to our hearts.

Friday, 28th.—My dearest helpmate, as well as myself, was up at daylight, and dressed, ready to receive our people. We had discussed together the propriety of giving Mira in marriage to one of the Bermudians, before we should leave our little establishment for even a temporary absence; and we determined on making the proposal at once to the damsel and her parents. When the people arrived, and were standing respectfully before us in the great hall, in a few words I told them I was going to Jamaica for the purpose of buying a schooner to bring

back for our use here, and also to collect a crew for the brig, to refit her for my future purposes. I added, that I wished to take one or two of them with me, and especially Diego. The others all immediately volunteered. "I shall have occasion for only one more," said I; "and if you will leave it to me, I will decide." To this they cheerfully acquiesced. I took Diego aside into the store-room, and requested my wife to call in Rota. "You have heard," repeated I, "what I am going to do; and I think, Diego, we must take one of our Bermudians with us."—"I think so, sir," he replied.—"Well, then," resumed I: "Mira is a comely young woman, and if she would have no objection to accept of one of those clever fellows for a husband, I will marry them before I go, and we will take the other with us, and let him find a wife for himself at Kingston." Diego and Rota laughed heartily, giving their immediate assent; but my wife desired Rota to bring in Mira, and ask her if she would like either of the Bermudians for a husband. When the question was put to the girl, she curtsied, and said she would rather go with her Donna Señora to Jamaica. My dear Eliza thanked her most graciously for this mark of her attachment, but told her it could not be; however, she must make herself happy in knowing her affection was properly estimated; and so she would find on her mistress's return. The poor girl cried a good deal, and we left her and her parents together. While they were communing, I told Xavier to make an account of how many days he and the others had worked on the schooner, and bring it to me after breakfast. By the time I had finished my directions to him, Diego and Rota reappeared in the hall with their daughter, who now looked much abashed. The mother whispered something to my wife, who again whispered to me, that Mira had fixed on Jack

Martin. On hearing this, I got up and called Martin out. I asked him, would he like to settle here, and marry Mira, and live as we lived? Mira was a pretty negress, and gentle too.—"Yes, sir," he replied, "would like it. I like you, sir—I like the place—I like Mira: her fader and moder very good people, and she very pretty; good little girl, sir: will be very happy!"—"Very well, Martin," said I; "I will marry you to her on Sunday. And, now that the girl is to be your wife, come in, and her father and mother shall offer her to you, and you shall accept her in my presence." The scene was rather ludicrous. Martin entered, bowing as he approached Diego, who returned the bows with a variety of steps and attitudes, and a pretended taking off the hat. Rota spoke first. "You to be Mira's husband, Jack Martin?"—"If Mira will have Jack Martin," replied the bridegroom. Mira hung down her head, but Rota clasped the son-in-law in her arms, and hugging him very hard and close, and kissing him heartily, said, "So you love Mira!" Martin embraced his good mother in turn, and then saluted the half-averted cheek of Mira, at which our friends cheered; and I, placing their hands together, said "In a few days you shall be one; and may God bless you!"

The party then left the hall; and my dear wife and myself improved the opportunity, by considering closely the many things we had to do in the very short time we could command. The captain came to breakfast, and we talked over the business of our departure. After the meal, I sent for Purdy and Diego. "Purdy," said I, "if you choose to go with me to Jamaica, and return with me hither, I will take you; and if you can find a freed woman there that will marry you, I will bring you back together: but if you are not so lucky, I will purchase a

wife for you from a slave ship—any girl there you may choose."—"Will go, and return with you, sir," replied he: "and will do as please God."—"That is well said, James Purdy," observed my dear Eliza; "I believe thou art a single-hearted, honest fellow."—"Thank you, ma'am," said he, "you very good to think black man good."—"Well," returned I, "that is arranged; go; I shall want you by and by." He made a bow blithely and gratefully, not quite with a beau air, but joy and truth were in it.—O goodnature and kindness of heart! what blessings do ye impart to the possessors, and to all around them, even when ye find your place among those miscalled the outcasts of the human race! I felt happy in thinking I should have this honest fellow, as well as our trusty Diego, with us during the voyage.

After Purdy withdrew, I asked for Xavier, who was ready with the account of work done. Eight dollars were charged for himself, and six for each of the other men; making altogether twenty-six dollars, which I thought very reasonable wages; and I desired him to come in with his fellow-workmen after our dinner. He did so, and I paid them before the captain, out of some money we had brought with us from Jamaica, for our use at St. George's Key. After they were gone, the captain said it was great hospitality, and he always would remember it. But notwithstanding this fine speech, when I told him I intended to take Purdy in his vessel, as well as Diego, he did not seem at all disposed to remit the ten dollars for the extra passenger; and, as fortunately, money was now no object to me, I only pitied the man who might be so unlucky as to be in his gripe.

By Saturday middle day, the cargo was nearly re-embarked. I took the occasion to purchase from him three bags of the cacao for a doubloon each, and paid

him on delivery; giving one bag to Rota, to use for our people; but locking up the other two in the store-room of the house. During Saturday afternoon, we put on board both the hencoops from the brig, inhabiting them with a few young fowls and ducks, about a dozen altogether. One coop might have served; but I meant to fill both, on my return, with another description of poultry. Some biscuit, butter, yams, pumpkins, and melons, were sent on board; also the last dozen of our wine, and a due portion of ground coffee, and sugar. All this being done, the captain expected to sail on Sunday morning; but to that I would not consent. I told him, I had three days by the charter-party: the coming Sabbath should go as one; and on Monday we would weigh anchor with the first of the sea-breeze. He made no more objection to the delay, under its conditions; and it was agreed that we should sail as I had fixed it.

In this short interval I had many things to do, and did them. I wrote certificates of freedom for each person in the island, to be left behind with them; and I gave instructions to Xavier and Rota, how every thing was to be conducted in my absence. The Bermudians, meanwhile, brought to me the measure of the remaining mast and yards of the brig, to enable me to bring from Jamaica spars for a fished mainmast and boom, and yards to supply those carried away during the storm; as also a complete suit of sails. I left all the fire-arms, pikes, etc. in Xavier's charge, together with some ammunition, charging him not to use them but for self-preservation. I had thought it best not to suffer anything of the kind to be taken into the schooner, excepting my own pistols, and the sword I had received from the Spaniard. On Saturday night all arrangements were completed; and nothing remained for embarkation, but ourselves, our cot, trunks, and money.

Sunday, 2d March.—We endeavoured to draw all hearts round us this day in prayer; and the strangers seemed more disposed to the exercises of devotion than heretofore. After divine service, I solemnized the marriage of Martin and Mira, and strove to impress them with the sanctity of the vow they reciprocally took. I had got over my clerical scruples, by calling to mind that the law of England recognised any man a minister, who had a congregation; and although dissenters were not competent to perform the marriage ceremony, yet justices of the peace, and other public functionaries, were, in our colonies, and especially in these seas: for instance, there is neither clergyman nor lawyer at the Bay of Honduras, the magistrate being priest and judge.

I ordered a plentiful dinner for the whole party; and that we might separate for awhile under the most cheerful impressions, I added as much toddy, and coffee, and cigars, as would do them good. Besides, though we did not quite approve of anything like merriment on the Sabbath, yet in this circumstance we felt ourselves compelled to allow them to dance; which they did, till nearly ten o'clock. I then signified my wish that we should all retire to rest. The word was instantly obeyed; and the captain and his crew, also, made the best of their way to their vessel. Martin and his bride went to her father's house; Xavier and his wife to their own. Diego and Rota took up their lodgings in the great hall, as I should want them both before daylight. My dear wife and I sat up in conference all night, and finished the closing of the Sabbath, by prayer and thanksgiving to our heavenly Father, entreating for the continued influence of the Holy Spirit, and the favour of his divine grace and protection; and that now we were about to use the riches he had placed in our hands, that he would guide us in all things respecting their appropriation.

In about an hour after midnight, we arranged our trunks, and tied up the bag of doubloons in two strong handkerchiefs. This done, I awoke Diego and his faithful helpmate; and, after talking to them a short while on some ordinary matters, I quietly said, "You must now go with us, to bring my money from the place I have kept it in, for we must house it at the plank-house by daylight, ready to be put on board the schooner in the morning." We accordingly set forth to our hidden treasure. My Eliza gave Rota half a dozen candles and the tinderbox, to carry. I had provided also for the occasion, some small rope, a hammer and nails, a piece of cane bruised at one end for a brush, and the ink-bottle. Diego took Fidele in his arms, and, with my dear wife hanging by my side, we made our way by moonlight to the thicket. I unlocked the gate, entered, and locked it after us. We passed thence into the cave, where we struck a light; and giving a candle to my wife, and another to Rota, I commenced taking down the stones from the side of the place, to the great surprise of Diego; but in which work he soon began to assist me. In a few minutes the former entrance hole was cleared, and I crept through it, into the inner cavern. Then receiving a lighted candle from my Eliza, she and our faithful domestics immediately followed me within. There was nothing to be seen but boxes, and they were all very small, excepting one, so that no emotions were excited by such an appearance. If their contents had been spread out on the floor, the effect would have been very different. I proceeded instantly to nail down the large box, containing the various wrought articles of value; and having quickly completed that job, Diego and myself lashed it well up with rope; and I marked it E. S. We then proceeded to cord the thirteen boxes that held the doubloons, which, when so done, I

marked in the same manner, adding their numbers in Roman figures, from I. to XIII. This work cost us the labour of three hours; and after it was finished, we found that much time would be required to get the boxes out, on account of their weight. After a moment's thought, I sent Diego for a plank, and by its means easily and quickly accomplished it. About one-third of the plank was placed through the hole (the lower edge of which was two feet from the ground), the plank having its short end resting on the floor of the inner cave, while the long end in the outer cave stood up five or six feet. We then placed a couple of boxes on the extremity of the plank within the recess; and, while Diego kept them in their places, I took hold of the lever end of the plank in the great cave, and gradually brought it to the ground; by thus raising the boxes on the inner end of the plank, in the manner of two boys on a see-saw, they easily and safely were made to slide down into the outer cave. When all the treasure was got out, we replaced the stones; and I desired our assistants never to mention this interior spot to any one, as it might again serve some important purpose. To this they gave me their promise.

By daylight, we had carried all the treasure to the plank-house; the large chest being the least heavy of the whole. "Go, Diego," said I, "and take leave of your friends for a little time; we will stay here till you return. But you, Rota, hasten home to get breakfast for us; and when Diego rejoins us, we will come and take it; and then prepare for embarkation." Diego soon returned, and we left him in charge of the boxes, with directions not to quit the spot till I sent Xavier to him to assist in putting them on board.

With care on our brow, my beloved and myself now walked once more, arm in arm, through that woodland

region, where so often we had strayed with joyous and light hearts, with no companion but our affectionate Fidele, no watchfulness, but for the growth of our pumpkin and melon beds. Now we were oppressed by riches, and the desire of acting with prudence and precaution with respect to all the persons Providence had connected with us. As we approached our dwelling, we looked on the silk-cotton tree with a sigh, under whose friendly shade we so often had reposed in undisturbed felicity; thinking it might be possible we never should repose there again. But the assembling of our people around us, roused our energies: we paid our compliments to the new-married couple; and I talked aside with Xavier on many points to which I directed his attention.

While at breakfast the captain came on shore, and we hurried to embark. Xavier lashed up our cot; he and Martin corded the trunks; and then, with my pistols in my belt, and my spy-glass in my hand, with my soul's treasure, my Eliza, under my arm, and Fidele close at her foot, I found myself in a few minutes in the boat that was to row us to the schooner. We had stepped in from the beach of the plantation. Most of our things were already on board, and safely stowed away; and we soon reached the vessel, which, at my request, lay with her side to the rock. When we arrived, and embarked with the remainder of our luggage, the captain thought all was on board, as one of the trunks was rather heavy; but I told him the money was yet to be brought, and it was for that reason I had wished him not to haul out. I now sent Xavier and the two Bermudians to Diego, at the plank-house, to assist him in bringing the boxes on board; telling Rota to remain there till all were fetched away. I kept the deck; while my dear wife, who went below, saw the boxes taken down, and stowed commo-

diously in the cabin: Rota accompanied the last; with which I went down myself, and counted them: after which I locked the cabin down.

We were now all on deck, and the schooner hauled out from the rock, with our canoe alongside, as well as his boat. When he was about to hoist sail, my wife and I took an affectionate leave of those we were to leave behind. The women wept bitterly, while my dear Eliza endeavoured to console them by a faithful promise of our return, should it so please God; and, with our united parting blessing, we enjoined them to keep the Sabbath with all possible holiness. Being now under sail, Xavier and Martin were desired to land the women, and then to follow us to sea in the canoe, until we should haul down our colours. We went out with a fine breeze; and, after rounding the promontory, I requested the captain to proceed under easy sail till we got clear of the reefs and shoals. I took the sketch I had made from my pocket, and carefully noted the landmarks for the channel, as we went along; causing the lead to be hove every now and then, to mark the soundings. We continued to stand on, nearly due south, edging away, and hauling up occasionally to avoid a shoal, for nearly three hours, leaving the canoe considerably astern; and as I saw no occasion to take the poor fellows further out to sea, we hauled down our colours, and they returned; at which time we might be twelve or fourteen miles off the land,—shoals and breakers extending as far as we could see, both east and west of us. At twelve o'clock we took an observation, making the latitude 14° 20′ north. About two P.M. we had brought the broken water to the westward, abaft the beam, the promontory bearing N. ½ E., distant about eight leagues; that height, and the high bluffs of the westernmost island, appearing as two rocks. We now

edged away to the westward, and presently brought these two landmarks in one, which I now set at N. N. E. Finding the broken water still abaft the beam, we kept away west, and gradually hauled to the wind, on the starboard tack, having the broken water upon the beam till nearly sunset; by which time we saw nothing but a clear sea all round us. We continued to stand on the same tack all night; but about ten o'clock we had passed over the tail of a sand bank, where the water broke a little, and on the edge of which there was but three fathoms water. After this escape, we thought it prudent to keep the vessel away a little; but the night being clear, and nothing to be seen like broken water, we again hauled to the wind, and stood on till daylight, when we went about on the other tack, and at noon we saw the land again bearing S. E., distant about seven leagues, with a great deal of intermediate broken water. We stood on towards the land for an hour, when we discovered a hummock in the distance; but the water shoaled, and we neared the breakers, which obliged us to tack. In an hour I requested the captain to go about again; and as we were working to windward to get up to Jamaica, it was all the same to him; so he did it, until we brought the distant easternmost hummock to bear south, and then shut it in; by which I was satisfied we were off the north end of the islands, and the hummock I saw in the distance was our dear promontory. I requested the captain to continue to work to windward by tacks of an hour, all the afternoon, to give me an opportunity of making notes and sketches as to the different appearances of the land; but before the sun set we put her head to the northward, taking leave of the island.

CHAPTER XIII.

We kept our eyes upon our island home, while any trace of it could be seen. As the vessel proceeded on her course, it became less and less apparent, gradually sinking in the wave; still something appeared like a small cloud on the horizon, when suddenly, and unperceived by us, the sun went down, and I saw the little speck no more. In the instant, my Eliza and myself felt as when some dear friend passed away beneath our eye to the world of spirits. We took each other's hand in silence, and sat down upon the deck. Here my sweet partner was not slow to cheer me with blissful words, while the thoughts that gave them utterance warmed her own bosom. Thus cheered, we arose; and as she talked, I seemed to forget all but what I then heard, and saw. It was a peerless night — the azure canopy, studded with a thousand stars, appeared in transcendent loveliness above us, while my own embodied angel leaned on my arm, discoursing of joys unsusceptible of alloy, whose fountain is higher than the heavens.

During the greater part of the night, we walked the deck; and when we descended to our cabin, we left the captain in full expectation of being able to fetch the west end of Jamaica without making a tack, if the wind should continue steady.

On the following day the breeze was not so favourable, but at the expiration of a week we made the high land above Bluefields. From hence we beat up to windward, taking advantage of the land wind by night; and on the tenth day from taking our departure from the islands, the schooner dropped anchor at Kingston, as near as

possible to Mr. Dickinson's wharf. I now took my pistols from my belt, being again within the circle of old England's protective rights. This was on Wednesday, the 12th day of March.

I lost no time in writing a note to Mr. Dickinson, and despatched Purdy with it: he soon returned with a clerk of the store, who told me, Mr. Dickinson was dead; but that his employer, Mr. Green, who now occupied the premises, had a good deal of Mr. Dickinson's business; and would be happy to do anything for me I should wish. I answered him, that I had some boxes of money to put in safe charge; and that I would thank him to take a house or commodious lodgings for myself, my wife, and two servants, as near the water as possible, for the better accommodation of business. After receiving his promise to execute my wishes immediately, I added that I would remain on board until he had accomplished the object, when the schooner should haul to his employer's wharf, and land the money. I sent Purdy with him, and in about an hour they returned. He had taken lodgings for me in King Street, not very far up; and if I pleased I might have all the house but one room, which the owner of the house, a brown lady, desired to reserve for herself. The schooner was now hauled to the wharf, and in about an hour all the boxes were landed. When done, I gave each of the crew a dollar, for which they were very thankful; and I told the captain to call on me before sunset, and I would pay him his freight. The boxes with the treasure, as well as our trunks and cot, were removed from the vessel to our lodgings with my usual caution; and seeing ourselves, with our faithful little dog, and our heavy care, all together here in safety, we felt grateful to God for his continued protection.

The good woman of the house undertook to provide

dinner, and every thing else we might require, at a moderate charge; and as there were but three sleeping rooms besides her own, with a front and back dining-room or hall, I took the whole house; not choosing to have any stranger companions admitted. While dinner was getting ready, it occurred to me to procure change for twenty doubloons to pay the captain; for as he supposed my boxes to contain dollars (which I knew from two or three guesses, he made during the passage); I judged it prudent not to set his surmises agoing by paying him in gold. I therefore went out and changed my twenty doubloons for three hundred and twenty dollars; the exact sum I had to give him; viz. three hundred for his cabin, and twenty for the two men. He was very civil when I paid him the money, for which he gave me a receipt; and I invited him to take a cigar, sending Diego and Purdy the while to the schooner to bring the hencoops on shore at Mr. Green's wharf, and leave them there until I should want them.

In the course of conversation, I asked the captain the value of his schooner, or of such another. His answers were rather equivocal: sometimes he guessed, and sometimes he reckoned; but I concluded from all he said, that the hull might be worth a thousand dollars, and the masts and sails, and cables and anchors, etc. worth another thousand. This information was sought, to be a guide to me in my future proceedings. He soon took his leave, hugging the bag of dollars between his left arm and his breast, while he shook my hand with the other. My dear wife was never cordial with him, and said little on parting, excepting that she hoped he would find his family all well on his return.

After he was gone, I sent for the mistress of the house, and told her that my servants would each occupy one of

the spare bed-rooms. To this she instantly objected.—"Those rooms were for gentlemen, not for negro men."—"My servants are not slaves," replied I, "although they are negroes; and I will take care they shall not sleep in your beds, with a dirty skin or unclean linen." After much talk, during which I said my two friends were black gentlemen, she laughed, and conceded the point, saying, she believed I was only "Johnny Newcome, to be so foolish." After coffee, my dear wife and myself were truly happy to retire to our chamber, where a fine large bed with moscheto curtains awaited us. Our boxes were stowed in the corner of the room, at the foot of the bed; yet our minds were rather in a hurried state about them, notwithstanding we now felt ourselves and our riches in a place of security; but it remained for our God to give us that peace of which we felt the want; and which was not refused, on offering up our prayer for it, before we went to rest.

In the morning we awoke refreshed; and, during breakfast, I arranged with my dear wife that she should remain at home to keep an eye on the boxes, until I could dispose of the money. But there was another matter, of perhaps equal worldly import, that demanded our consideration. While on our dear little island, convenience and comfort were the only objects in determining the form of our dress; but I knew we must here conform to the modes of fashion in civilised life (if such monstrous modes deserve to be so classed!) and myself, particularly, must submit my head to be covered with pomatum and powder. There was no time lost, therefore, in sending for a hair-dresser, who promptly came, and as quickly put me under the torture. He rubbed my hair up in front with hard pomatum, till I could scarcely close my eyelids; and he dusted in the powder, first from the puff, and then from

a leathern horn, until he nearly blinded me, having previously appended to my hair behind, a large false queue, tied with about five yards of black riband. My dearest Eliza pitied me, and admired the Christian patience with which I sustained the operation; but it was to be done, or I could not show my face anywhere as a gentleman! My equipment being thus finished, she felt herself in duty bound to permit her fine and abundant auburn hair to be cut, and disposed in curls; but she would not allow any frizzing or powdering. And in this resolution of natural just taste, I was happy to see her continue during the whole of our stay in Jamaica.

When I was pronounced by Monsieur the frizeur as quite the thing, I sallied forth, taking Purdy with me; leaving Diego to hold guard with his mistress. I called at Mr. Green's store, and found him there. He gave me an account of Mr. Dickinson's death, which happened about six months ago: adding, that he (Mr. Green) had lately arrived from Liverpool, and had taken the store and wharf. I told him my business was to purchase a schooner of about a hundred and twenty tons burden, and a variety of things to load her; among which would be a main-mast in pieces, fitted, with other spars; also a complete suit of sails for a brig that now lay in a creek, the crew of which had been drowned: and that, therefore, I should want to take with me a captain, and a crew of eight, including the mate: and that if he would assist me in these matters, I would pay his commission; to which he readily agreed. I then said, the first things to be set about were the masts and sails; and that if he would send a proper person to me the same afternoon, I would give him an explicit order, with the dimensions; but I should trust to Mr. Green for the honesty of the charge. I added, that as soon as he could hear of a

schooner for sale, that might be suitable, I would look at her. "It shall all be attended to," he replied. "Indeed, I understand from my clerks, that you are well provided with dollars, so you will find little difficulty in speedily doing the needful." Mr. Green invited me to dine; but I declined his kind invitation, having Mrs. Seaward with me.

After having dispatched so much, I returned to our lodging to write a note to the admiral's secretary; which I sent by Purdy, with a person to show him the way to the admiral's penn. I merely stated, that I wished to transmit a considerable sum of money to England, and requested to know if any man-of-war was soon going, and whether the admiral would order the money to be received on freight. I was soon favoured with a very civil reply; in which it was intimated that such an opportunity was about to present itself, but that the admiral would not order any sum under ten thousand dollars to be received in charge of any of his Majesty's ships; he therefore requested to know what sum I proposed to remit to England. After giving some refreshment to the messengers, I returned them with my answer; in which I stated, that, if the ship were a frigate, I would send by her about 40,000*l.*; and as it would be all in gold, the captain would suffer little inconvenience by its bulk. In the course of the afternoon, a reply was brought, saying, the admiral's secretary, and the captain of the Solebay, would wait on me to-morrow morning.

In the evening Mr. Green appeared with a Mr. Finn, a shipbuilder (I suppose he may be so called, although no vessels are built at Kingston), and I gave him the dimensions of the masts, and spars, and sails, etc., and requested he would have them all ready in a fortnight; which he promised to do. After he was gone, Mr. Green

stayed and took coffee with us, and showed himself so pleased in making himself agreeable to my wife, that he asked me no more about the object of my business, than I chose to tell him; which at present saved me some embarrassment. The only thing he communicated of any interest, was the circumstance of a calamitous hurricane having swept over Jamaica last year, on the 1st of September; the very day on which we experienced, at Seaward Islands, four-and-twenty hours of violent rains, with variable winds, and a heavy gale at night.

In the morning, about nine o'clock, the naval gentlemen made their appearance. We were just going to breakfast, in which they joined us with great frankness and good breeding. During our repast, they talked a good deal about the creole ladies of Jamaica, and such other light matters as came uppermost. The captain also invited us to visit the Solebay, my Eliza having mentioned her never having seen a ship of war. After breakfast, she retired; and we then entered on matters of business.—"I understand, sir," said the secretary, "you intend to send about 40,000*l.* to England in gold, if you have the opportunity of a frigate. Captain James will sail in about ten days: and I privately communicate to you, that he goes to Chatham; so, if you wish the money to proceed to London, the opportunity is a good one."—"It will be so, sir," I replied. "And now, gentlemen, said I, "as a merchant, you must pardon me proceeding in this matter like a man of business,—what is the freight?"—"One per cent., sir," answered the secretary.—"In full of all charges and considerations?" said I, in return,—"the money being in the captain's charge, until delivered on shore by him to my order at Chatham?"—"Just so," they replied, smiling; then, after a few minutes' more conversation, they informed me they

would duly let me know on what day the money should be sent for; and at the same time a receipt would be given by Captain James; and memorandums exchanged, as to the conditions mentioned. My wife returned into the saloon when the gentlemen were going away. The captain then repeated his invitation for us to visit the frigate; which we promised to do, before he sailed.

This matter being arranged, I sat down and wrote a long letter to my uncle at Bristol; detailing all that had happened to the brig and crew, and with due gratitude mentioning our extraordinary preservation: adding, that fortune had thrown some money into my hands since our shipwreck; and that I had seized the earliest opportunity to get to Jamaica, where I was now providing a mast, spars, and sails to refit the brig; and by the help of some other repairs, and a fresh crew, that I meant to take with me, I hoped I should have her at anchor off Belize in about a couple of months; and that then I would send him a faithful account of all disbursements.—My dear Eliza at the same time wrote most affectionately to her father and sisters, and to mine. By two o'clock we had finished these long and interesting letters, and had just time to be dressed for dinner, when it was announced.

The dinner was excellent, and my two domestic friends were in attendance. Their apparel might do very well at Seaward islands, but it cut rather a shabby figure at Kingston. My wife, therefore, suggested the propriety of giving them three or four white suits each,—waistcoat, jacket, and trousers, with neat hats. This being settled, the brown lady was requested to send for a proper person to make the clothes; which she did in the course of the afternoon, and by Saturday evening one suit for each was brought home.

I remained with my dear helpmate all the remainder of the day, which allowed poor imprisoned Diego to go out for a walk with Purdy, to buy the different articles they wanted. When they made me their bows on going forth, I gave them a word or two of admonition as to their behaviour, which they promised faithfully to attend to. And I also desired them to be on the look out for such things as they knew I intended to take with me; but as we should be here about a month, there was no hurry beyond getting information, of which we might avail ourselves at a proper time. In the evening I took a cigar with my coffee, which brought back to our minds the many hours of happiness and peace we had so passed in our solitude — unperplexed by cares, undisturbed by anxieties.

Next morning I called on Mr. Green, and told him I wanted to purchase a bill of exchange for one thousand pounds sterling, which I was desirous to remit to London as a deposit; and I asked him if he could furnish me with a list of the London bankers, as I had forgot the name of the firm I wished to remit the money to, but I should recognise its name on seeing it. He said he would go with me to the Paymaster-general, who would give me the bill, no doubt; but there would be a premium on it of ten per cent.: after which we could call at the coffee-house, and look over the list I desired. On our doing so, I made a note of Perry, Child, and Co., Lombard Street: having preferred dropping in at the coffee-house, in our way to the Paymaster; with whom I arranged for the bills of exchange; and as an extra packet was to sail next day, I begged to have them the same evening: he shortly, but civilly, answered, that I should have them when I pleased to call with the money. I therefore quickly took my leave of Mr. Green, thanking him for

the trouble he had bestowed on the matter, and instantly returned to my dear wife, who assisted me in counting out 300 doubloons from the bag we had placed in the trunk; then turning out the remainder into a stocking, I replaced the 300, and taking the bag on my arm according to the example of our Yankee captain, I went back to the Paymaster's office; where he calculated the difference of exchange and premium, and then told me the sum to be paid was 4620 dollars. I said, "That is right, if you take the doubloons at sixteen dollars."— "Certainly," returned he, "if not cobbed." I produced my gold, which was the proper sort, the cobbed money being unshapely and not milled. I counted him out 289 doubloons, and he returned me four dollars, being the change; and then delivered me a set of bills of exchange on the British treasury for the 1000*l.* sterling. I asked him what he thought of Perry's house in London, to make a deposit with. "None better," he replied; so I took my leave, returning lighter in weight and in heart than I went, for all these operations were attended with much anxiety.

On my return to our lodgings, I refreshed myself with a little wine and water, but the real cheerer was my dear kind wife. I now lost no time in writing to Perry and Co., enclosing them the first of the set of bills, and advising them of a shipment of 12,000 doubloons to be made in a few days in his Majesty's ship Solebay, Captain James; which said 12,000 doubloons would be consigned to their house; and that they were to receive them from Captain James at Chatham, paying one per cent. for freight; after which they were to make the best of the market for converting the gold into stock, in the name of Edward Seaward; reserving in their hands 1000*l.* as a deposit to my credit. I also bade them take care of the Bank

receipts for the money, and to send me their acknowledgment for them, with the accounts, by the first packet, followed by duplicates in the next. This letter being finished, and the bill of exchange specially endorsed, I read the letter to my dear friend and wife, as she stood by me, observing to her, "You perceive, my love, I do not order this money to be insured: I commit it to the waves, to be preserved or otherwise, for us, as it may please Him who most wisely disposes all events for good to those who seek to serve him." My Eliza kissed my forehead, as she hung over my shoulder to read and listen to the letter, saying in reply, "My honoured husband, we have but one mind in all things."

It was nearly dinner-time, but I hastened off to post the letters; and returned, heartily glad to change my clothes, and then sit quietly down in comfort and security with the sweet confidant of my bosom, to enjoy the ample board that was presently set before us.

Diego and Purdy had been out all day with permission; and after dinner I called them in, to tell me what they had seen, and what they had done. Their recital was highly amusing to us, but too trivial in point of importance, for detail in this place, excepting that they had seen a capital boat or two, and several excellent canoes, to be sold; and Purdy had heard of a new Bermudian schooner, sent to Kingston for sale. I told them I was particularly pleased with this last part of their information, and that next week I would look at the schooner. We retired early to rest, as I was much fatigued; but it was in mind rather than in body. My mind was refreshed, however, by our evening prayer; and I slept soundly, notwithstanding the buzz of musquittos that hovered all night round the muslin enclosure of our bed.

Sunday, 16th.—We made the best shift we could, with

a large sponge and the contents of a great basin, as a substitute for our accustomed Sabbath morning's ablution. We then dressed ourselves in our Sunday clothes, which we found had not become quite unfashionable, excepting my waistcoats; the flaps of which were quite diminutive, and without lace or embroidery; so that I had ordered a couple of genteel vests to be made, one of which I now put on to-day; and the flaps being to the mode, reached half way down my thigh, with pockets sufficiently large to hold a week's provision. At breakfast I received the acknowledgments of our two attendants in their new attire; and, in my own opinion, they were much more conveniently clad than their master. We desired very much to go to church, but we thought it prudent not to leave so large a sum of money in a place so insecure; we therefore determined on having prayers at home, and accordingly, in the forenoon, we read the service; omitting the singing of the hymns, as we did not wish to draw the attention of people from without. Our two men attended, and by invitation the brown lady made one of the congregation. Diego was as usual truly devout, and Purdy behaved very well; but our new friend sometimes laughed, and sometimes yawned, and seemed heartily glad when it was over. The heart of my dear wife bled inwardly, at this manifestation of total darkness on the part of the poor woman; and said to me, how happy she should be, if it were granted her to be the instrument of bringing that poor soul to the knowledge of God. After service the men had permission to go out, but I enjoined them to keep away from all revelry, and to hold in mind that this day was the Sabbath, to be kept holy to the Lord.

About one o'clock Mr. Green called on me. My dear wife expressed her regret that we had not been able to go to church, but hoped we should have that happiness

next Sunday; and concluded by asking him how many churches there were in Kingston? He replied, "One, I believe; but I never have been in it."—"Never in it!" repeated my Eliza, with an emotion of surprise. "Oh no," resumed he; "scarcely any one here ever thinks of going to church. We have too much to do, and have only just shut up the store." She could hardly believe her ears; for on this subject we had made no inquiry, having on our former visit to the island arrived on one Sunday, and sailed the next. Her spirits were a good deal affected by what she now heard; it was a deep sentiment of sorrow for the people. Mr. Green sat a good while, and I thought in that case it was incumbent on me to invite him to dinner. He accepted my civility, and returned by two o'clock. We gave him excellent fare, with which he seemed well pleased; but when at our wine, he ventured to make some satirical remarks on saying grace before dinner, which drew from my dear wife a rebuke that I think he never will forget. "It has been said, Mr. Green, that ingratitude is so base a crime, that the man was never yet found who would acknowledge it. He that omits thanking the Creator and Giver of all things, for the good he receives at his hands, I think fairly deserves the imputation. And this is my apology for that grace before dinner, which you have endeavoured to make a subject for ridicule." Our guest was quite confounded, he could not make any reply for some time; at last, he said, Jamaica has a pestilential atmosphere; and that while in England, he was sure he never would have ventured to say what he had said. My dear wife mildly answered, that she hoped he would not suffer all his early good habits to be destroyed, and that she might see him at church before we left Kingston. To this he gave a smiling promise, and we passed the

rest of the evening in general conversation. He left us after tea, or rather coffee, without much regret on our parts at his departure. We soon retired to our Sabbath thanksgiving, and to our rest.

Monday, 17th.—I called on Mr. Green early in the morning on business. He very soon alluded to what my wife had said to him, and he really felt much obliged to her; saying, it had made such an impression on his mind, that he thought it would keep him on his guard against the inroads of impiety, which stalked about with unblushing face in every shape at Kingston. After finishing this conversation, I told him I wished him to make some inquiry about a Bermudian schooner that was for sale; and if he considered its price reasonable, and it would suit me, I would purchase it. About noon he sent his clerk to tell me, the owner of the vessel was at the counting-house, and if I would go with him I could see it. I accordingly went, and took Diego and Purdy with me. It was a fine vessel, built entirely of cedar, and fully equipped for sea—the admeasurement, one hundred and thirty tons: we were all much pleased with her. The owner, and another person with him, knew Jemmy Purdy; and he knew them; but they gave themselves no trouble about him, and he had sense enough to say nothing to them about himself, lest he might be seized as a runaway slave, and put in confinement. After we had looked at the vessel, we returned to Mr. Green's counting-house, and then I asked the price of her. The owner named four thousand dollars; she was complete, and there were two suits of sails. Comparing this with what the Norfolk man said, I thought the demand too much, and told him so at once; saying, "I will not give anything like that sum," and went away. He called on me several times during the week, always coming down a little; but

I would not negotiate with him at all. "What is the most you will give, then?" said he: "Three thousand dollars," said I, "if the report of a ship carpenter be satisfactory; and I am content myself with the inventory of the equipment, with which you must furnish me." No, he could not take such a sum as that. But before the week expired, he consented to do so, and also brought an inventory of the equipment. Mr. Finn was sent to examine the vessel, her boats, sails, cables, etc. etc.; and being well satisfied, a conveyance of the schooner was made; which, together with the register, was handed over to me, and I paid the seller in dollars; which I had taken care to procure, not wishing it to be thought my boxes contained anything more valuable. The vessel now being mine, I told Purdy he must take charge of her; and I shipped two free New England negroes, at five dollars a month.

On Wednesday morning, the 19th inst. Captain James, and the Admiral's secretary, and the master of the Solebay, called on me; and eight of the boxes were brought out by Diego, and myself, into the saloon. When they were put down, I sent to purchase a hammer and chisel; with which I soon opened the lids, Diego having quitted the room after they were uncorded. The doubloons were then counted, and replaced, and the boxes nailed up again, and Diego called in to re-cord them. I then delivered them to Captain James; taking his receipt, and signing a memorandum of agreement, the counterpart of one he had signed and given to me. The master went for the boat's crew,—who lugged away the cases of treasure down to the boats in waiting for them, as lightly as if they contained so much ballast. I told the captain the name of the house in London, to which the bullion was consigned; and that I had written by the packet, to advise the firm of the business, but that I should write

by him also. He took his leave, again expressing his hope of seeing us on board the Solebay. "You must come and see my little ship," he repeated again; adding with an emphasis, "My *royal* little ship, for it was she that brought King William to England."

Towards the end of the week, I called on the Paymaster of the forces again, and asked him if it were convenient for him to draw on the treasury for any sum within five thousand pounds; he replied it was quite convenient, and that I might have a bill for that sum or any other within it. My answer was, that I should prefer taking the whole sum; and would bring the money on Saturday morning. Accordingly, I made Diego, and another man I hired, carry one of the boxes with me to the Paymaster's; where I opened it, and untying one of the bags, I drew out twelve doubloons, saying, "Now you will find in this and the other bags, the sum right, if you will give me eight dollars." They then lifted out the bags, and counted 500 out of each of the full ones, and 488 from the other; which being the exact sum I mentioned, the Paymaster delivered me the bills, at thirty days' sight on the Treasury, for the 5000*l.* sterling; also the eight dollars change; and I took my leave.

In the course of the week I had desired Diego to look about for a large strong wooden chest, to lock up the remainder of the boxes; but he could not find one suitable. I therefore bought an iron chest, into which we removed the twelve bags of doubloons, from the boxes that remained; and also the contents of the big one, of which we now took a correct inventory; viz.—

Gold:—Crucifixes, thirty-six; sword-handles, twelve; chains, large and small, forty; triangular pieces embossed with Scripture figures, having a hole at one angle for a chain, eight.

Silver:—Candlesticks, two pairs; ewers, two; salvers, four; crucifixes, fifty; chains, fifty; cases with perfume, two; shoe-buckles, twelve pair.

Tissue, of gold, four pieces; of silver, six pieces. This being done, we locked the new depository; feeling, as I put the curiously wrought key into my pocket, a great relief to my mind, and to the mind of my dear wife also. Our thoughts and time were now comparatively at liberty; and we anticipated with delight, the celebration of the Sabbath in a temple dedicated to the service of God.

Sunday, 23d.—I sent Diego to the schooner, for Purdy to accompany us to church: and we left *mammon* in the chest, to take care of itself. There were but few people attending divine service, compared with the population of the place; and the greater part of that congregation, consisted of officers and soldiers. We could not but be affected by this awful corroboration of Mr. Green's statement; yet we ventured to hope a day would come, when the Sun of Righteousness should rise on this spiritually benighted land, when both bond and free should join in the worship of the God that made them.*

Monday, 24th.—I sent for Mr. Finn, to urge him not to fail in his promise with respect to the spars and sails, and to request he would be on the look out for a captain to take down for the brig, and for some one acquainted with the Spanish Main to command the schooner; and to cast his eye over some of the boats Purdy had mentioned to me, as I wished to purchase one of about twelve tons to take with me. Mr. Finn promised to do all I required.

After he left me, I desired Purdy, who was in waiting,

* This pious prophecy of heart, made by this good man, nearly a century ago, is happily now verified in the year 1830, by the indefatigable labours of Doctor Lipscombe, Bishop of Jamaica. This note is written in the year 1830, by the Editor of the work.

to be on the alert for a crew for the brig, eight hands; and bring them to me as he found them.—"Yes, sir," he replied: "I will get crew for brig, but wish to tell you something, sir. You said I should have Jamaica wife, to go with us. There is young woman, sir, will have me, sir; but if she go, sir, father and mother, and one brother, want all to go too, sir; I tell them, say, sir, can't marry every one of them, sir."—"Well, Purdy," I answered, "bring them all to me; or bring the father and mother, and I will talk to them."—"When they shall come, sir?" he asked.—"To-morrow evening, Purdy," I replied, "before sunset, let them come."—"Thank you, sir; thank you very much, sir," said he; and, making several scrapings with each foot, and a merry turn of both arms, retired. As he went out, Diego respectfully observed, "Good fellow, that, sir; honest fellow, him, sir."—"I am glad to hear you say so, Diego," I replied; "for I believe thou also art an honest fellow thyself."—"Thank you, Señor Don Edvardo; good master to me, and friend! thank you, sir," said he, with much emphasis and emotion, bowing his head low and slowly to the ground.

"Now, Diego," rejoined I, rising and taking him by the hand, "our time draws on; you must be on the look-out for whatever you may think we shall require; remember our family will be increased to at least four times our former number."—He remarked, in reply, that our stores would be full from the field, soon after our return; but we must take some plantain suckers to put in; and two or three breeding pigs, and a few turkeys, and some geese, if I pleased; and if anything else occurred to him, he would mention it.—"Very well," I said; "bespeak these things, and anything else you think we may want."

Having despatched all this business, I asked my dear wife if she was inclined to pay a visit to Port Royal, and the frigate; to which she readily assented. Diego was told where we were going, and desired to keep within, during our absence. I added, that we would lock our room door, and if we did not come home that night, he must sleep near it, on the hall floor. My word was a law to this faithful creature; and, bowing his answer of obedience, I despatched him to man one of the schooner's boats with himself and Purdy's crew, and bring it to the nearest wharf, to row us to the rendezvous of the wherries; these are large sailing-boats of eight or ten tons measurement, that ply between Kingston and Port Royal. By ten o'clock, we found ourselves in a wherry; and, the breeze blowing strong and fair, they disembarked us at Port Royal in an hour and a quarter. The ships-of-war looked nobly, as we passed a-head of them, lying at anchor off the town. On landing, we were shown to a lodging-house by one of the wherry men, where we were kindly received by a brown lady who kept it, and by her daughter. The latter came smiling up to us; and, rubbing her white teeth with a piece of chew-stick all the time she stood by my wife, spoke to her every now and then, "How you do, ma'am;—hope you don't sick, ma'am;—hope you get better at Port Royal, ma'am;—season don't very sickly, ma'am."—"I am very well, thank you," replied my Eliza. "You seem a nice girl; you can read and write very well, I suppose?" The girl tittered; "Read, ma'am! Buchara read! me no read."—"You sew, then? I suppose," continued my wife.—"O yes," replied the girl; "can sew—but no more than hem handkerchief sometime."—"What do you do, then, with your time?" replied Eliza.—"Plenty for do," she returned; "all day sit down, and talk sometime."—My

dear wife smiled, and the brown young lady resumed the rubbing of her teeth, which was done in a manner not to fatigue her, and walked out of the room with a peculiar movement, that swung her petticoats from side to side at every step.

In a little time the table-cloth was laid, and our hostess told us there was a guinea-fowl roasting for second breakfast, and that it soon would be ready; for which we thanked her. In the meanwhile I wrote a note to Captain James, and asked her to despatch it on board the Solebay; but she said she had no doubt he was on shore, and would therefore first send where she thought he was; which she did; and in about a quarter of an hour he waited on us, with another captain of the navy, whom he introduced as Captain Denny. Captain James was very glad to see us; and my wife, in turn, received him and his friend courteously, and requested they would partake of our second breakfast. They politely assented; but before we sat down, Captain James sent off a note to his ship. We talked of England and Jamaica, and the Spanish Main; at least, he talked of the latter, believing that we had come from thence with our stores of gold; however, the topics were all lightly touched on, so that there was no embarrassment.

After we had finished our repast, a midshipman came in, to say the barge was in waiting; and Captain James then repeated his invitation to Mrs. Seaward and myself, to do him the honour of visiting his ship. We were struck with the elegance of the boat, and the neatness of the crew, who were all dressed in white shirts, and trousers like petticoats, and small straw hats. They pushed off the boat in a peculiarly fine style, and rowed simultaneously, with a long interval between each stroke of the oar, the coxswain making a sweep as if he would

pass the ship; and, in fact, he did so, for I saw her cabin windows, before he brought the boat's head fairly round. As we approached, the bowman tossed up his oar into the air, and caught it again; while at the same instant all the crew placed their oars regularly within the boat, and she was laid alongside with the greatest ease and exactness. The frigate appeared high; but my dear wife said she could easily get up: however, the necessity of the attempt was prevented, for a large chair, fitted for the purpose, was lowered down to the boat into which the Captain placed her, covering her limbs with a flag, and, in one moment, by the signal of the boatswain's pipe, she was hoisted up, and placed on the quarter deck in safety. The Captain and Captain Denny were received with presented arms. He then introduced his officers to us; they were all dressed in dark blue coats, with white linings, but the lieutenants, only, wore white facings; some had on gold-laced waistcoats with deep flaps, rather the worse for wear; others wore their waistcoat plain, but I observed a rose on all their buttons. The lieutenants, and another officer, wore small cocked hats, of a shovel fashion, and they were laced, though somewhat rusty; and more than one of the group, flaunted an awkward-looking wig under the beaver. But, without exception, every fighting man of them had a short curved cutlass, slung horizontally at his side. I made a few complimentary remarks on the dress worn by the lieutenants, but more especially on that worn by Captain James himself. He said, in reply, that the navy was indebted for it to his present Majesty; that it was but a few years ago he had given them the white lapelle, and double rose upon their button: previously the coat was single-breasted, like that of a landsman; the junior officers wearing nothing but jackets, with sugar-loaf buttons, and a bit of gold lace edging the rim of a round hat.

After this ceremony, we walked down into the captain's cabin, which is on the main deck, where he showed us increased courtesy. "You see your cash there," said he to me, pointing to the afterpart of the cabin;—"but you perceive," continued he, "I am more careful of it than you were, for I have caused the carpenter to make a great coat, of oak plank, for each of your deal boxes; I wonder you could trust gold, in such trumpery cases."—I thanked him, smiling, saying, "If it were nails, we should think deal boxes safe enough; and perhaps we sometimes add little to our security, by too evident precaution! Still I felt much obliged to him; and I hoped he would not suppose I undervalued my obligation, by the remark I had made."—"No," returned he, with something like an oath, which rather startled my dear wife; "no, I really think you are right."—And then he told us a story about his smuggling some valuable things, when he came from India as a lieutenant, by merely putting them into a seaman's chest, for which he gave Jack five shillings, and which he sent on shore by a common waterman, directing it to a wagon office in London; where it arrived safe, when all those who bribed custom-house officers, and took every precaution, had their whole collection of things seized the moment they were landed.

Our chatty host now invited us to see the ship. I observed there was some small cannon on the quarter deck, but on each side of the main deck the guns looked nobly; yet I believe they were only nine pounders; the frigate was said to carry twenty-two guns altogether, with a complement of one hundred and fifty men. We were next introduced to the gun room, a deck lower, where the officers live. It was hot and dark, and is below water. Men must have a great thirst for glory, thought I, to live in such a place; to which the cavern in our own dear island is a

palace! We found ourselves very pleasant on the quarter deck, after emerging from that close region; and the awning being spread, we walked under its shade with great comfort, the cool breeze from the sea blowing freshly over us. The ships, and the scenery around, were all objects interesting to our reflective minds. Ahead of us were the remains of a once proud city; over the ruins of which, perhaps, we now stood, on the deck of the frigate! My dear wife made this reflection. Captain Denny assured her he had seen the chimney tops; and that he had heard of their being hooked sometimes by the fluke of an anchor. "I do not know how to credit that!" said she, smiling.—"O! there was not a word of a lie in it, I do believe," cried he.—"Well, but," added his gentle antagonist, "where did the chimneys come from? I have not yet seen any in Jamaica; and if ever there were any in Port Royal, the climate must have been strangely altered by the earthquake!"—Captain James laughed heartily at Denny's exposure: but he himself joined in the laugh, crying aloud, "What an infernal ass I am, to be sure!"—by which unusual candour, and great good humour, he completely turned aside the shaft of ridicule he had unwittingly drawn upon himself.

Dinner was announced, by a drum beating "The Roast Beef of Old England," when Captain James, who was a well-bred gentleman, handed my wife down to his cabin; Denny, at the same time, giving me a slap on the shoulder, said, "Make sail, my boy, and keep in the commodore's wake."—There was no other company. We had peas-soup at dinner, which was a novelty to us, and Newfoundland cod, with onions. There were a couple of roast ducks, and a dish of pancakes, made on board without either milk or eggs; the last dish proving very good, was a great mystery to my wife. They were made with sea

water! During the meal we had some excellent Hockenstein, brought from Curaçoa, and a glass of ratafia, by way of finish. Our conversation at dinner was not worth noting, excepting an account which Captain James gave us of an attack by the Maroons not many months before, made on Colonel Charlton and his officers, while at mess; taking them by surprise; and although the fellows were beat back before they did much mischief, yet the first report was that Charlton's men were totally cut to pieces. So that the records of the island were immediately packed up at Spanish Town, and all the old women, he said, came flying to the squadron for safety. The table-cloth being removed, we drank the King's health; after which, my dear wife addressed herself to our host:—"Now, with your permission, Captain James," asked she, "I will go and walk the quarter-deck for half an hour; by which time I think Mr. Seaward will thank you for a boat, as we are desirous of getting up to Kingston to-night." He very politely requested the officer on deck to give her his arm, where she enjoyed the fine air: and after we had sat an hour, during which we were abundantly jovial, I pressed my host to allow me to go also; adding, at the same time, that I certainly should not wish to do so were I alone. He felt the propriety of my request, and we soon joined Mrs. Seaward on deck. He ordered coffee to be got ready, and the barge to be manned; and after a short time we took our coffee, and our leave, having previously learned that he would sail by the end of the week; before which time I promised to send my letters to his care for England.

On landing, I asked the officer if he could permit me to give the boat's crew some money? to which he answered, "Certainly not; but your offer is not less kind."—"They are going to sea," said I; "allow me,

then, on that ground, to beg the favour of you to buy some vegetables for their mess? There can be no objection to this."—"Well, sir," he replied, "I think there can be no objection: you may give a dollar or two for that to the coxswain, and I will tell the captain."—I put ten dollars into the coxswain's hand.—"Two for yourself," said I, "and one for each of the men."—As we walked away, the men cheered us with "Long life to you, sir, and to your lady!" And the officer, who was a midshipman, accompanied us to our lodgings. On his taking leave, I invited him to come and see us at Kingston, which he said he would do with pleasure.

The day was too far advanced, for us to think of proceeding there that evening; so we amused ourselves walking about Port Royal, enjoying the cool hour before we retired for the night. It is a miserable place now. The piazzas were occupied chiefly by mulatto women, (brown ladies, as they call themselves,) sitting with their feet placed on a chair, or cocked up against a post,—no very modest attitudes for the female sex; but my candid Eliza rather pitied than found fault with them. With some of them we saw naval officers, standing and joking, or smoking a cigar; but all was quiet, and nothing indecorous in conduct, presented itself to our notice. We retired early to a large comfortable room, with an ample bed, and a fine white moscheto net, where we soon found a sweet sleep awaiting us. We breakfasted on coffee, with hot roasted plantains, and Irish butter, which reminded us of former days; and as soon as the sea-breeze set in, which was about nine o'clock, I paid our bill, and got on board a wherry; which stretched up against the wind to Kingston, making but one tack; and when arrived, we had rather a warm walk from the Wherry Wharf to King's Street.

Diego received us joyfully, saying all was well. We were glad to rest ourselves, and to change our dress; not so to sit under the hands of my frizeur. Soon after, as I stood in the hall, Purdy came in with two seamen. I did not like their appearance much; so taking my good fellow aside, I told him I thought it better to defer this matter till I had found a captain, that I might have the advantage of his judgment in the choice. I then said to the men, that I could not ship them till I had fixed on a captain; and on this remark they went. In less than an hour, Mr. Finn brought a respected man, who had been mate of a London ship, and whose captain had behaved somewhat brutally towards him. Finding that he had been at the Bay of Honduras, I engaged him as captain for the brig, but with an understanding that, as his wages were to commence immediately, he was to obey my orders in every thing, and to take charge of the schooner for the present, in which he and his crew were to sail to join the brig. I added, that he must come every morning to me at nine o'clock for orders, and meanwhile, as opportunity offered, to seek, and bring such men to me as he could procure for a crew, taking care not to engage any of bad character: and I desired him to confer with Purdy, who was a confidential servant. So this was arranged, and in the course of the week he had got his crew together; and, having received from me a very minute statement of the condition of the brig, he took care that every thing should be furnished by Mr. Finn, that might be required for her re-equipment.

My dear wife and myself had for some days past made our beloved friends at Awbury the subjects of our conversation, and I had resolved that she should send a present of 500*l.* to her father, and I would at the same time remit an equal sum to my sisters and brother; and

for this end I procured two sets of bills on the Treasury, for which I paid, as before, 288 doubloons 12 dollars for the 1000*l.* sterling. The letter written by my dear Eliza, was replete with expressions of tender duty to her most worthy parent, and of affection to her sisters; but it overflowed with grateful love towards myself. She told them as much of our story as I thought might with prudence be at present disclosed: for, as yet, until our affairs were settled, there were many reasons requiring partial secresy. She, however, told them that Providence had bestowed an ample fortune on me; and that if either of her sisters would marry, and come to Kingston, and not object to live with us where we lived, I would provide for that sister and her husband. In the same strain I wrote to my brother at Awbury, telling him that 100*l.* was for each of my sisters, and 200*l.* for himself; and if he chose to marry, and he and his wife should come out to Jamaica, I would provide for them; and that he need not be uneasy about leaving his sisters, as I would allow each of them 50*l.* a year. I desired him to write to me, but not to wonder if five or six months should elapse before he received an answer, as my place of residence was some hundred miles from Jamaica; but that a vessel belonging to me would visit Kingston every two or three months, on business. I requested him to communicate with our friends at the Parsonage, on our proposals, as Eliza had sent her father money, with an invitation to her sisters, of a similar nature to that which he now received from me. Our letters to Awbury, with their enclosures, were ready; and another letter to my uncle, informing him how I was getting on, as far as respected the preparations for re-equipping his brig. Likewise letters to Perry and Co., with the first exchange for 5000*l.*, ordering them to invest it; and also duplicates of the letter written

by the packet, with the second of exchange for 1000*l.* remitted by that opportunity.

The midshipman who had landed me from the ship, called on me to-day, according to promise, and I invited him to dinner. He seemed an honest, unsophisticated youth, and amused us much by his droll phraseology. He said the captain expressed himself very handsomely on the present I had given the men, and had desired the purser's steward to lay the money out for them in vegetables. "But," continued the boy, laughing, "they would rather have had the cash to bouse their jibs up ashore." When the evening came, he desired to depart; but I persuaded him to stay till the morning, as I wished him to take charge of my letters to Captain James. He soon said, "Yes;" and when morning came, I gave him my packets, together with a superb gold hilt for a sword (the value of which could not be less than 50*l.*), which I took from my reserved store, and sent with a separate note to Captain James, begging his acceptance of it, and regretting that I could not here get it mounted; but adding, that I hoped he would have it done in England, and send in the account to my bankers, who had my directions to pay the cost. When the midshipman took these things, I said to him—"My young friend, don't be offended if I offer you a doubloon, to lay in anything you like for your mess;" but he objected to receive it, until my dear wife remarked—"You cannot refuse it, because it is a present to your messmates as well as to yourself." He acknowledged the weight of this appeal, adding—"You are very kind; and as we hear you are very rich, I will no longer say no. When you went on shore," continued he, "the Captain said to our first lieutenant, 'There goes a fellow worth more than his weight in gold!' Some took the speech one way, and some another. Now,

sir, I would take it both ways—a good heart and a good purse! and they are two good things; that is, when they lie close aboard of each other." So, shaking me cordially by the hand, and my dear wife offering him hers, which was not her custom, he took his leave of us, apparently much delighted; perhaps more with what he had said, than from what he had received, either by my present, or our joint courtesy. But if his pleasure did not arise from what he had said, my dear wife's had; that having been the impulse to her cordiality on his leaving us.

The next day I received a note from Captain James, acknowledging the receipt of the letters, which he promised should be carefully delivered; also that he would pay every attention requisite to the safe delivery of the money boxes to my bankers'; and then he returned me his warmest acknowledgment for my very superb and valuable present; which, however, he must insist on having mounted at his own expense.

Purdy and his nuptial friends were punctual on the appointed evening. The father and mother of the girl were both mulattoes. The man said he would give his daughter to Jemmy; but, as he had heard from him that I had a good settlement where I could employ him, and give him a house and grounds; he, and his wife, and his son, wished to go too. He told me he was a carpenter, and so was his son; that they had been turned out of a place they had built on some ground that did not belong to the man who sold it to them; and they were so impoverished, and vexed by the business, they now wished to leave Jamaica altogether. I consented to take them; but it was on condition that the son should bring a wife with him, as my great object was to people the settlement with honest and industrious families. He answered, there would be no difficulty in that; so he would promise for

his son. This matter being thus arranged in the presence of Purdy, I informed them I would lend them all some money, to buy such things as Purdy would advise as necessary to take with them, and that I would charge it to them; for which they must account to me at a future time. The father and Purdy thanked me, and then departed with the welcome news to their friends. Little more was done this week; and, on Sunday the 30th, we went to church, accompanied by Diego, who now remained with us entirely at our lodgings; the schooner having the captain and his crew on board, besides Purdy, and the two New England negroes, whom he had shipped as part of her establishment.

Early in the week a fine new boat was fixed on with lugsails, measuring quite twelve tons. She was half-decked, and therefore safe in the open sea. I paid 300 dollars for her complete. Purdy agreed to have charge of her, with the two negro sailors; aad to take all his family down in her, with their needfuls. I advanced to his father-in-law, the son, and himself, 20 dollars each; and told him he must ballast with coals, which I should want, to burn lime; that they were now lying on Mr. Green's wharf, where he must take them in, and be in readiness to accompany the schooner, whose cargo was now ready, and would certainly sail on Monday or Tuesday next. I called this fine boat the Avon, after the beautiful river down, which my Eliza and myself sailed on leaving England, and on whose admired banks we had walked delightfully together before we embarked on our eventful voyage. It had also been my place of recreation when with my uncle at Bristol; and I loved such recollections. I had wished to call our schooner the Severn, in honour of that noble river, near to which our native village stands; but she had been registered by name, and

ugly as it was to our ears, it could not be changed; she was called the Porghee, after a fish much esteemed at Bermuda.

By the middle of the week, Mr. Finn was ready; but it seemed the spars could not be got below; so the schooner now began to take in her cargo, leaving the spars to be stowed upon deck. A few thousand bricks were already placed on the floor of the vessel; she then took in spare anchors for herself and the Avon, and also a long 12-pounder, fitted with a depressing carriage, to mount on the promontory, and nearly a ton of shot for the gun. Then, *in barrels*, came American flour, rice, biscuit, Irish beef, pork, butter, sugar, salt, suet, coffee, raisins, gunpowder, pitch, tar, resin, kegs of paint, kegs of ball cartridges, and a keg of flints; *in boxes*, Russia duck, English stripes, checks, linens, coloured handkerchiefs for the head, etc. etc., soap, candles, refined sugar, and tea: *in cases*, ironmongery; as knives, locks, hinges, nails, etc.; ship carpenters' tools; house carpenters' tools; twenty stand of arms, with their appointments, and blank paper cartridges for the 12-pounder: *in crates*, kitchen utensils; as pots, pans, kettles, etc., with a large quantity of yabbahs, or earthen pots, used for cooking in Jamaica; also wooden trenchers, and coarse crockery, as jugs, brown dishes, delft plates, etc.: *in packages*, implements of husbandry; as pickaxes, spades, shovels, hoes, axes, hatchets, bill-hooks, etc.; sawyers' saws, leather, canvass, cordage, oakum; a quantity of slop-clothing, including shoes; a large and small Union Jack, with spare bunting for other flags; two mahogany bedsteads, with mattresses and moscheto nets: *loose*, spare cables for the schooner and Avon, sails and rigging for the brig, a timber carriage, wheelbarrows, handbarrows, squared timber for erecting habitations, boards, planks, staves, shingles; a great

handmill, with a wheel for grinding maize; two mahogany tables, twelve mahogany chairs, wardrobe, and two chests of drawers. There were besides, a few hams, and a cheese; six dozen of Canary in hampers, and a quarter cask of the same; a large box of Spanish cigars, jars with oil, and spirits of turpentine, two looking-glasses, two spy-glasses, a speaking-trumpet, and bugle horn, a pair of glass-shades for the candles, and some other things not herein enumerated: however, the whole did not make more than three-fourths of a cargo; the planks and boards being stowed above all, so as to make a platform fore and aft in the hold, with room enough above it for the accommodation of such people as we might think fit to place there; as well as for the stock that Diego was to bring on board; viz. six sheep, four pigs, twelve turkeys, twelve geese, and twelve guinea-fowls; also a supply of plantain suckers, and a quantity of pine-apples, shaddocks, oranges, limes, and some other fruits. I may here remark, that the gunpowder, of which there were two barrels, as well as the kegs of ball cartridges, were cased in flour barrels, with a packing of Indian meal between, for security and safety.

While they were engaged in thus loading the schooner, I procured a letter of introduction to the Governor's secretary at Spanish Town; and hiring a calash with two horses, which I preferred to a kitereen, we were driven over from Kingston, on Thursday morning, in an hour and a half. Soon after our arrival I waited on the secretary, and told him that I understood he gave commissions for island appointments, and that I wanted a commission as Captain-commandant over a place where I was settled with some negroes and free people. It was a small island or two, among some rocks and shoals off the Mosquito shore, on which there were no inhabitants

when I landed there, about fifteen months ago; that we had built some huts, and I was now going back thither with a schooner; that we had prevented a Spaniard, about three months since, from taking a Virginia vessel; and that I had hoisted the English colours; but was afraid to protect them, without a commission. The secretary asked me, what the islands were called. I said it was not laid down in any chart that I had seen; I therefore had called the group '*Seaward Islands*,' after my own name.—"And what is your Christian name?" he replied. I told him, "Edward."—"Well, Captain Edward Seaward," said he, "you shall have the commission; but you must pay twenty doubloons for it."—"That is a great sum, sir," returned I, "but I do not demur; you shall have it: and I will thank you to give me the privilege of appointing any person on the island, my lieutenant, in case of my occasional absence."—"O certainly," he replied; "there can be no objection to that." He then requested me to sit down, while he went to settle the business. He returned in about an hour, with the commission, signed by the Governor. I read it over, and found it every thing I wished. I then counted down the twenty doubloons to the secretary; who wished me a good morning, without asking me any more questions. Of that I was heartily glad; but I could not help thinking, that I never had seen the commonest mercantile transaction done in a more matter-of-course manner; and I strongly suspected, that when the Governor put his pen to the commission, he knew no more of the nature of the appointment he was signing, than he did of the rocks and islands over which he had unconsciously placed me: however, I had obtained the important credential; and my wife rejoiced with me, on my return to the inn, at the quiet manner in which the

thing had been done. "Now, Captain Seaward," said she, smiling, and taking my hand, "we will have dinner; and I shall have the honour of drinking your health; and we will then return to Kingston."

On re-entering our lodgings there, I found Mr. Green waiting for me. A few difficulties had occurred in procuring some items of the cargo: however, after a little conversation, the obstacles were surmounted; having chiefly arisen respecting prices, and terms of payment, the word "ready money" acted like a charm, and all the stoppage vanished. He stayed with me to smoke a cigar; during which time I told him, if I found him behave to me with strict integrity, I should appoint him my agent at Kingston; with which place I might have considerable business. He thanked me, observing, that it would be his interest to serve me well and faithfully. We were glad to retire early, and rose next morning in health and spirits.

On Friday morning, I consulted with Diego and Purdy, as to the expediency of purchasing two new negro boys, to form a part of the schooner's crew, which, I thought, with Purdy and Martin, and the two New England negroes, might be sufficient. My worthy counsellors approved the idea; but I added, "Don't suppose that I will have any slaves at Seaward Islands. I will bind these lads for seven years; after that, they shall be their own masters."—"God bless our good master!" my two friends, one after the other, replied. "Dear Eliza," continued I, "would it not be well for you to take three or four girls on the same terms? for our society will be so constituted on our return, that you will require them." She cordially acquiesced; and we went all together to the wharf of a merchant, who had just disembarked a cargo of these human beings, for sale. My wife remained in

the counting-house; while I, with my attendants, proceeded to the enclosure where the poor creatures were all assembled. Some were young, and some in the prime of life; some were gay, and some were sad; but all exhibited a black and glossy skin, having been dressed with palm oil for the occasion; and all their vesture might have been replaced with a fig-leaf. After some scrutiny, my men picked out two nice clean-limbed lads of about eighteen, and they were led up to the store. The price was 50*l.* currency each, and the bargain was struck. The merchant's clerk was told that Mrs. Seaward wanted two or three girls; but that, as she could not go down into the mart, we would therefore thank him to bring a few up. Half-a-dozen speedily made their appearance; and my wife was selecting three from the number, when one of the young new negroes I had purchased, evinced considerable restlessness and some emotion. My dear Eliza, regarding him attentively, said to me,—"I am sure that lad has a mother, or wife, or sister, among these people, whom he wishes should go along with him." I bade Diego take him out to see if it was so, by leaving him loose, and observing to whom he would run. My Eliza proved to be right: they returned with his sister: and when my wife selected her, which she did at once, the youth fell upon his knees before her, kissing her feet. I was asked 40*l.* currency each, for the three girls: the money was paid; and Diego then conducted the party to our lodgings, where they were received and placed in the negro-yard by the brown lady, among her own domestics.

On our return, the first care of my dear wife was to have these girls washed with warm water and soap, and then neatly clothed; while Purdy took the lads on board the schooner, and put them under the same discipline, treating them also kindly.

In the afternoon, the captain of the brig called at his usual hour, and reported progress. He said he would be complete on Saturday night. "Very well," I replied; "but do not hurry: I will not sail on Sunday; and I shall leave Monday, to collect any things that in the hurry of business may have been forgotten: we will sail on Tuesday."—"That is very well, sir," he said; "but I would suggest to you, that it may be a very bad business to send Purdy's family in the Avon. We may want that boat to look out among the shoals and breakers for a passage; and if she should take the ground with these people in her, there will be horrible confusion. You had better send them in the schooner; and put half a dozen good hands in the boat, to jump out, and get her off, if she should ground; or use the oars to keep her clear of a reef, if necessary."—I thanked him for his advice, and would abide by it. "But," said I, "Finn was to get me a skipper for the schooner, and it is quite time I should be suited; he has not done it."—"I know a proper fellow I could recommend," returned the captain: "he is rather young, but he is a nice lad, and a prime navigator; and no lubber withal: he was born and bred at sea. I will bring him to you to-morrow, if you please."—"Do so," said I; "but, remember, do not serve a friend at the probable expense of human life! The person I want, is to take charge of my schooner, in which my wife and myself sometimes may be; and always many of those we love as friends,"—"I would trust my own life with him," he replied, by way of recommendation, "as far as that goes."—"Then bring him," said I.

In the morning, the captain called on me with his young friend, "Francis Drake."—"I like your name, and your countenance, sir," said I; "but you are very young."—"I am twenty-two," he replied, "and have been at sea

all my days. I was born on shipboard; my father was master of a man-of-war: I was a midshipman for some years; but my father being dead, and it being peace, I could not get promotion. I have been on this station, and in these seas, in and out of the service, altogether six years; and I think, without flattering myself too much, I know as much about it as any man now sailing out of Kingston. I would not have said so much," continued he, "only a man must say something for himself, when he is taken for a brat of a boy." I smiled, and stretching out my hand, asked his pardon, saying, "I doubt not, Mr. Drake, we shall in time be better friends. I engage you, if you please, at the same rate your friend there is engaged, to command the brig." He took me at my word, and he was captain of the schooner. "Now, gentlemen," resumed I, "sit down, and let us consult together." I then opened to them the situation of the place to which we were going, its unknown longitude, its complete investment with reefs and shoals; and showed them, by sketches of the land, remarks, etc. After some consultation, it was agreed that Captain Drake should go in the Avon, with three white seamen belonging to the brig, and Purdy and the two New England blacks; while Captain Taylor, of the brig, should navigate the schooner, with his mate, and the four other white seamen.

This being decided, I sent Diego for Purdy, and his father-in-law, and stated these things to them. Purdy did not like it much; but his father-in-law, who had just seen the two vessels, was very glad; and Purdy was easily persuaded to confide his wife to her own family during the passage. I had still one object more to compass, and without loss of time, for Monday would be occupied in settling and paying the accounts. I found it would be necessary to get a regular ship-carpenter

to go out with me; for although Xavier was a clever fellow, yet his sufficiency could not be relied on where a regular repair might be wanted. I therefore sent for Mr. Finn, and, after desiring him to meet me next morning at Mr. Green's counting-house with his bill, I asked him if he knew of any one that would dispose of a ship-carpenter negro, whom he could recommend; and, as an inducement, I would buy wife and children, if there were any. He answered, he thought he did. And in the afternoon, he brought a person to me, who was as much disposed to sell as I was to buy; for he was going home, he said—that is, to England. He seemed an honest man: for he said he would leave the price of the negro to Mr. Finn, or any one else. "No," returned I; "it shall be left to yourself. Has the carpenter any family? how old is he?"—"He is old, sir," was the answer; "I suppose nearly forty; he has no children with him; he has a wife, and she is nigh as old as himself."—I should like to see them," I replied, "before we say anything more about them." He then went for them, and they both pleased me. They appeared healthy, and did not seem at all the worse for wear, if I may so express it. I sent them to the back of the house, and asked him his price. "Give me," said he, "100*l.* sterling for the man, and you may have the woman for what you please."—"That is," replied I, "into the bargain, I suppose."—"Not quite that," said he; "but I will take anything in reason."—"Forty pounds," cried Finn.—"Yes," replied he, "that will do, though it is only the price of a new negro."—"Of a young one," I responded. "I think, sir," continued I, "if I give you 100*l.* sterling I should have man and wife; that is 100*l.* currency for the one, and 40*l.* currency for the other; and I will give you no more: take that, and I will pay you on delivery." He mused

some time, and at last consented. The bill of sale was made, and the money paid; after which I called in Allan Derrick and his wife Priscilla, and told them I had purchased them; that I was sorry they were not younger, because in seven years I should give them their freedom, if they behaved well, and should desire it; but, in the meantime, I would treat them with the greatest kindness. To this promise, my faithful Diego bore testimony, by saying—"Yes, indeed, sir; you indeed, sir, all like one our father." I asked Allan if he had any property. He replied—"Not too much, massa; have pig and goat, and few fowls, and some lilly tings in house."—"Well," I answered, "you may carry them all with you. Diego will take charge of them; and you shall have a house for yourself and your wife; and whatever you have shall not be injured."—"Tank you, massa," he said; "me see you good buckara massa." I now told Diego to go home with these two people, and to put them in the way of being ready to embark on Monday.

My dear wife had kept herself in her bed-room, all the while I was engaged in this morning's business; but she was not idle. She was making many arrangements in her own department; and the brown lady, with a frank-hearted activity, very usefully assisted her. She had not left our new damsels to run about the negro yard; but had taken them into her room, and set them about unravelling some hanks of thread, and doing some other things that required neither skill nor knowledge. When dinner time drew on, the girls were sent out to walk in the yard; while we, too happy to be together again alone, talked over our affairs, and dressed for the hour of repast.

We had nearly dined when Diego came back, with a very satisfactory account of our ship-carpenter and his wife; who were also, he said, quite happy in all he had

told them of their new home.—"Get your own dinner, Diego," replied I; "then go on board the schooner, and make my compliments to the Captain, saying, I wish the two young new negroes to come ashore with you to see their friends."—Diego, who had a kind heart, was glad of the errand; and in a couple of hours we saw him return, with the two lads neatly dressed in white jackets and trousers I desired him to leave them standing near us; then to bring in the girls. It was truly delightful to see the meeting: true, there was no ecstatic burst of feeling; but all the evidence of joy, their degraded condition was capable of, was elicited. My dear wife gave each of them an orange; and then signs were made to them to go into the yard. Diego accompanied them; and endeavoured, by pantomime, which he well understood, to make them comprehend that they were all going together. He returned with the youths to the schooner before sunset; and twice, during the two following days, they were again brought to renew the meeting with their friends; which had the very best effect on the spirits and conduct of the whole.

As I sat smoking my cigar after coffee, my dearest Eliza gently said—"Edward, I feel that we are chosen vessels for the mercy of God to others; which also we ourselves have so largely shared. Hence, I do not repent our taking all this trouble, and putting our lives to risk, when so much good may be accomplished by the means placed in our hands. I own my natural inclination was to go to England; pay your uncle for the brig altogether, if required, and so be done with it; and then enjoy our fortune. But to enjoy," continued she, after pausing a little, "is the gift only of God; to possess, may be his gift also; or, it may be the gift of him who said, 'I will give thee all the kingdoms of the earth, if thou

wilt fall down and worship me.'"—"True, my own best gift!" I replied; "I should be the most ungrateful of men, to the good God who has bestowed all this on me, if I did not feel that this money, so wonderfully delivered into my hands, was for some especial purpose of stewardship. The providential arrival of the poor castaway negroes, and then of the schooner,—all—all working together to give us the means of providing every comfort towards planting a colony of refuge in that blessed haven of our own preservation,—seems to me, in solemn truth, as so many signs from the Divine Will, that it is our duty to fulfil a task allotted to us, in that long unknown island."—Tears stood in my Eliza's eyes, when I said this; and, oh! how like an angel she did look! for they were tears of overflowing happiness. "His spirit, then bearing witness with her spirit," that we were indeed disposed to obey his most holy will.

Saturday, 5th.—I went immediately after breakfast to Mr. Green's counting-house, where I received a statement of the money he had laid out for every thing that constituted the cargo;—on all of which I allowed him commission,—and made the payment. In the course of the morning I settled with Mr. Finn; the disbursements on account of the brig being made a separate account: and I was pleased to find all fair; so that I paid the several demands with much satisfaction.

After I had done this business, I waited on the Paymaster, to inquire if he had any bills on England: he told me he had not; but referred me to the agent-victualler, to whom he gave me a letter of introduction. This gentleman was very glad to see me on my errand, as the cash would be convenient to him; and he quite chuckled when he heard that I could let him have a large sum. But I complained of the premium; and told him, I

would not take bills for any considerable amount, at any thing above five per cent. He replied, that all government bills had fetched ten, for some time back; but if I could accommodate him with 10,000*l.* sterling, he would give the bills at five. We struck the bargain;—and on Monday I waited on him with two boxes of the doubloons; out of which I counted down 2747 pieces, being the amount required, receiving back eight dollars. He in turn handed me over a set of bills of exchange on the Treasurer of the Navy, for the 10,000*l.* sterling, approved by the Admiral; for which I had stipulated, as a security for government acceptance.

Sunday, 6th.—This was a Sabbath! by going to church! Before we went, my dear wife and I had some difficulty in deciding whether we should have Purdy married there this day; but as Martin was not married in a church, and others at Seaward Island could not be, we feared it might make a schism, or create a jealousy among the people; and we therefore resolved to celebrate the rite on our return, so that all our people might be on the same footing with respect to such matters.

Monday, 7th.—After negotiating for the bills as above stated, and paying for every thing, I found I had four bags of doubloons still untouched; and about 100 extra doubloons, from the last bags we had opened. Of these, I converted 150 into dollars; for which I received 2400. I placed them in bags, in the iron chest, beside the gold; reserving as much as I thought necessary for present use. I now wrote letters to Perry and Co., inclosing them the first of exchange for 10,000*l.*, with orders to fund the amount; sending them at the same time the seconds of the former bills, and also inclosing my Will, which I indorsed—"Not to be opened, but by myself, or in the event of my decease."—And I, moreover, got ready a duplicate letter, with further duplicates of the bills already

sent, to be forwarded by Mr. Green, to Messrs. Perry and Co., at a future early opportunity.

Diego reported all his stock (consisting of six sheep, four pigs, twelve turkeys, twelve geese, twelve guinea-fowls, as also a quantity of plantain suckers and plantains, some roots, and a good supply of fruits), to be safe on board. Besides Allan Derrick's pig and goat, he had brought a fine large dog also with him, which he begged to take; and, after some hesitation amongst us for fear of our little pet Fidele, with my dear wife's approbation, I at last gave my consent; but the dog was to go in the Avon, and not in the schooner. Diego declared himself well satisfied, if it might go in any way, for it was a fine animal, and his name was Lion.

Before dinner, I visited the vessels, and was highly pleased with their appearance, and all the arrangements that had been made: every thing necessary had been provided; and I felt greatly indebted to Mr. Green, and the two captains, for having taken so much minute trouble off my hands. I paid a month's wages in advance to the captains, and also to each of the men. On returning to our lodgings, I would have invited the captains and Mr. Green to dine with us; but now that we were on the point of sailing, I thought it best that every one should be at his post. My dear Eliza and I, therefore, dined alone, and after dinner busied ourselves in packing up some suitable clothes we had ordered; amongst which were several pairs of buck and doe skin boots, the colour of our own sandy isthmus, on which we hoped once more soon to tread.

At my fond wife's request, a handsome suit of uniform, blue and gold, with a hat looped and handsomely laced, had been made for the Captain-commandant. "If those Spaniards," said she, "should ever intrude themselves into our bay, which they may do as friends; without an

imposing uniform on your person, they might pay very little respect to your commission." I saw the force of the observation, and therefore the uniform was made.

At the last visit of my hair-dresser, he recommended me to purchase of him an Adonis, a new fashioned wig very much in vogue, instead of having my own hair tortured into the mode. I wished he had informed me of such a thing at first, as it would have saved me a great deal of time and torment. "But," said I, "I do not want anything of the kind, where I am going." My dear wife thought otherwise; and smiling, desired him to bring the wig. He obeyed, with a proper box to hold it in, and all the requisites for powdering it up, when required. As it was my Eliza's pleasure, I made no more demur, but took it, and paid him 20 dollars for it. When he was gone, I said to her—"What am I to do with this mop-head, Mistress Commandant, at Seaward Islands?"—"It is for my Captain-commandant," she replied, "when he has occasion to appear in state!" I smiled at her remark, but felt at the same time that it was dictated by good sense, and a just regard to the opinions of men.

My kind wife, meanwhile, had provided herself with some presents for those left behind; and had attended to the minutiæ of our own future comforts, in the procurement of many things not necessary to be enumerated: and having finished the day in prayer to God our Father, we rose next morning in health and spirits. We paid our bill cheerfully to the brown lady, our hostess, and thanked her besides for her many civilities. The negresses and our trunks were conveyed on board, followed by ourselves and our faithful Fidele, who ran by our side before the great iron chest; which was a formidable burden, from the combined weight of itself and its remaining contents.

CHAPTER XIV.

Tuesday, April 8th.—We embarked at seven o'clock, where nothing but happy faces met us. I felt I had no need of pistols here! All hands cheered us; and the women crowded round my wife, kissing her hand. Indeed, she smiled so sweetly on them, and had already done so many kind things to them, they could not but love her. We did not receive our clearance from the Custom-house before nine o'clock, which gave us time to inspect the dispositions made on board for the people. Temporary combings had been fixed to a scuttle cut in the main hatches, to protect the opening from the wash of the sea, should it at any time come over the decks. This was well; and a wind-sail was fitted to the scuttle, to throw air down between decks; so that the stock and the people on the platform there, might breathe freely and wholesomely. Here were berths put up for Allan Derrick and his wife, for David Allwood and his wife, for young Allwood and his wife, and two berths for the three negresses, and Purdy's wife. The captain was requested to sleep in the steerage with the crew, to which he readily consented; himself, Diego, and the two new negro boys, John and Harry, being packed in among them. We were in all, on board the schooner, fifteen in number. And in the Avon, there were altogether seven; Captain Drake, Jemmy Purdy, the two New England blacks, and three white seamen. A little before nine o'clock, the Avon hauled alongside, and I went on board to take a look at her. Some precautions had been taken here too against the sea, by fixing canvass so as to make a defence, if necessary; with which I was much pleased.

Captain Drake, who, as captain of the schooner, had cleared her out at the Custom-house, now returned, but took his station in the Avon.

The sea-breeze having set in, and the pilot being on board, we set sail; and with the fine little lugger in our wake, ran down to Port Royal in little more than an hour. As we passed the men-of-war, I perceived the Solebay had gone; so, wishing her, as well as ourselves, a good voyage, we stood out to sea, and dismissed the pilot. The vessels steered nearly south, keeping away about half a point, to allow for east variation. At sunset we computed our run off the land to be about eighteen leagues, which was sufficient to take us clear of the Pedro shoals; we now kept away s.w., and having run about one hundred miles by Wednesday at noon, we observed in 15° 48′ N. It was determined, still to steer s.w., keeping a good look-out a head; and at noon on Thursday we observed in 14° 46′, having run little more than eighty miles during the last twenty-four hours, by reason of going under easy sail all night, and again laying by, for some hours in the forenoon, until we could ascertain the latitude, so as to shape our course accordingly, supposing ourselves not to be very far distant from the place of our destination. After some consultation, we agreed to steer west; and, by four o'clock, breakers were discovered right ahead; we in consequence hauled up to the northward, bringing the breakers on our beam to leeward. The Avon was now ordered to keep three or four cables' lengths ahead of the schooner, on her larboard bow. We continued to stand to the northward for about an hour, when we were enabled to keep away N.W.: at this time something like land was discerned to the southward of us, but it was too late in the day to endeavour to close with it; we therefore stood off and

on all night, holding a pretty good offing, for fear of encountering calms or currents, while among so many unknown reefs and shoals. At daylight in the morning we again descried the land to the southward, and stood in towards it. The Avon being within hail, I desired him to keep on our quarter till further orders; and I would endeavour to lead, and find the channel. After coming up the broken water, and then running a few miles on a west course, keeping the surf on the reef about a mile within us, we were enabled to steer two points to the southward, and then s.w. A little before noon we set the high land nearest to us, bearing s. E., when the channel appeared open, having a little hummock in the distance, which I knew to be our homestead promontory. We now hauled to the wind on the larboard tack, laying up about s.s.E., and stood in. I was not without fear and apprehension, although I knew there was a navigable channel that separated the two islands on the north, through part of which, Diego, who was now at my elbow, had rowed his canoe. Thus assured, and thus backed, I ventured to keep on under easy sail, till we found ourselves embayed within a horse-shoe reef, and were thus compelled to stand back again to escape from our perilous situation. We then rounded the edge of the reef to the westward, keeping away a little till, we brought the hummock in the distance, to bear s.s.E. The channel now appearing quite open, but with shoals on each side of it, we stood in again, with the Avon leading; but soon found ourselves obstructed by a long line of broken water, stretching apparently all the way across. Being thus straitened, and at a loss how to proceed, I thought it expedient to bring the schooner to an anchor for the present, under a low small coral island that lies on the eastern extremity of the breakers, and there remain until

the Avon should make out the passage. I hailed Mr. Drake to that effect; and as soon as we dropped anchor, he made sail along the northern edge of the broken water that obstructed our passage, until he at length rounded its western extremity: then hauling up to the S. E., the boat entered a clear and unobstructed channel, through which she stood on, with a full sail, for about three miles; making her way quite into that harbour, which on my first arrival I had mistaken for a lake, and which I have so called more than once in the early part of this Journal.

As soon as Mr. Drake ascertained a clear channel, he hoisted a Union Jack, as was agreed on, but stood on until he entered the harbour: he then put back, standing towards the schooner. As soon as I perceived his signal, we got under weigh; and quickly rounding the reef, hauled up to windward of a high rock, and afterwards to a low island, which lay amid channel, passing between them and the northern end of the main island. Here the Avon met us, and took her station on our weather quarter; and we sailed hence together, with a flowing sheet, and colours flying, through the strait that separates the two main islands on the north, into the open harbour, where at once a thousand well-known objects burst upon us. Xavier had caught a glimpse of the Avon from the shore, whilst it was exploring the channel, so that we had scarcely passed the strait when we saw the colours go up on the promontory. Captain Taylor was much pleased with the sight, and complimented me on the occasion. I will not attempt to describe my emotion, when my dear wife pressed my hand in silence at that moment. In half an hour more, we brought up in Woodland Bay, with our dear mansion, and our still dearer silk-cotton tree, in full view before us; and

at the same instant the anchor dropped, Xavier and Martin were alongside in the canoe. They were almost out of themselves; they embraced my knees, they danced about, they hugged old Diego almost to death, and bowed to the Señora Donna with all their heart. Captain Taylor was both pleased and amused by the display which they made of their joy at our return. The boats were quickly hoisted out; and we landed at once, with Diego, and the three negro girls, on the silk-cotton-tree beach, where Rota, with her daughter Mira, and Hachinta also, were standing to receive us: my dear wife had scarcely put foot on the shore, when they all, with one accord, threw themselves at her feet, embracing her knees; and when they arose, the new negro girls thought they must do the same, so they prostrated themselves also. But my Eliza raised them instantly, saying, "No! No!" She was affectionate herself, and loved every demonstration of it; but anything that could tend to give worship, where it was not due, she utterly abhorred.

After this scene, my beloved took my arm; and we felt as our first parents would have felt, had they been permitted to return to Paradise after their expulsion. Rota had prepared coffee for us, as soon as Xavier reported the appearance of a vessel; and indeed. the reviving beverage was very acceptable: for we had passed through an anxious and trying day. I desired to have supper ready about eight o'clock, and requested Hachinta to cook a good supply of provisions, to refresh the people. After coffee, I was going on board, but met our trunks, and cot, and iron chest, coming on shore; and as the evening was drawing to a close, I ordered all the people to be landed, excepting the white sailors, who were to take up their quarters in the schooner: the two New England blacks, were to return to take charge of the

Avon, and sleep there. After the captains had seen that their men were properly disposed of, and made comfortable, they were to come on shore to supper. David Allwood, and his family, had the plank-house allotted to them; and Purdy, being yet unmarried, after passing the evening with them, took up his lodgings on board for the night, along with the two young negro boys; who returned with him, having been permitted to land. Allan Derrick and his wife lodged with Xavier; and Diego went to his own house, where Martin and his wife also lived. The three negro girls were to sleep in the great hall. Captains Taylor and Drake occupied the cabin of the schooner. These arrangements being made, we all retired to our respective lodgings, as soon as everybody had been refreshed; and then my dear wife and myself, after shutting our door, lifted up our hearts to that God whose mercy and goodness had attended us by land and by sea.

Saturday, 12th.—I sent for the captains early in the morning, and told them they must move the schooner within the black rock, and there discharge the cargo; after which they must take it up under the promontory, close to the plank-house: and to avoid the formality of repeated invitations, I added, that I should expect the pleasure of their company to breakfast, dinner, and coffee, every day, while the bustle of our work was going forward. Captain Taylor was to superintend on board, and Captain Drake on shore, till the cargo was all got out; the latter taking an account of every thing as it was landed: but I told them, as to-morrow would be the Sabbath, there must be no work then;—that we should have prayers at ten o'clock in the hall, and that dinner would be provided on shore for all hands at one o'clock. I sent for Allwood and his son, and Derrick, telling them

they were to work under Captain Drake's orders, and that their wives must come daily to the store for provisions. I promised Purdy he should be married the ensuing day, which gave him great joy. Xavier was retained, to assist Diego in bringing the stock, and plants, and vegetables, and fruits, and other matters, to the plantation. The Avon, meanwhile, was left at anchor, to take care of herself.

My dear wife undertook to manage all the provision arrangements, for I found I now had a great deal to do in writing: regular accounts must be kept with respect to every individual in the settlement; and a correct statement must be made out from the brig's bill of lading, of every thing I had taken from her for my own use. I therefore set about opening books, in a regular way, for all purposes connected with money transactions. In the afternoon we paid a visit to the pen, which, with its new inmates, was like a fair. We were happy to see the armadillo, and our two pet pigeons among the number. All, excepting the pigs, seemed to take quietly to the place, but they were unruly members; and we found Xavier prudently planking up a corner, to confine them. The large dog showed no signs of a savage disposition, but, on the contrary, was placid as a lamb, and lay down very peaceably in the hall, allowing Fidele to play with him as he pleased. In the evening the captains and myself smoked a cigar, and my Eliza was much pleased with their decorous and respectful manner. We talked over our operations, doing, and to be done; and I took this opportunity of telling them, that I would leave the great gun, and the bricks, and the spare anchor and cables, which formed the ground tier of the schooner, in the hold, until we were quite at leisure to put them on shore.

Sunday, 13th.—At ten o'clock everybody assembled in the great hall, dressed in their best, to prayers. We were thirty-two in number; and looking round upon them, I blessed God for the sight. My dear wife opened the sacred duty with a hymn, and I read the whole service of the church, which finished with another hymn, and the prayer for grace. Some were devout, some only orderly; but every thing in God's good time. After service, I performed the matrimonial rite,—David Allwood giving his daughter Cornelia, in marriage to Jemmy Purdy; and at one o'clock dinner was set out for all hands, under the great tree, on a table of planks raised about a foot from the ground; round which they all sat, squat fashion, at meat, to the great fun, as well as gratification, of the white sailors, who partook of their good cheer. But the mate of the brig was on this day invited to dine with us, which we postponed till a late hour on account of the wedding-feast. Having plenty of limes, I tapped the rum cask, and gave Diego sufficient to make the whole company as much punch as would do them good. They were supplied with abundance of melons; and I allowed them to amuse themselves with dancing, for fear, if unoccupied, they might do something less innocent. About three o'clock Rota, served us up a fine fish, with other meats, flesh and fowl. Our guests were rather astonished at our hospitality and abundance; the very sight of which produced a cheerful influence on every countenance. After dinner we took some punch, and in the evening regaled ourselves with coffee and a cigar. At an early hour, every one retired to their respective quarters; the bride and bridegroom taking up their habitation with her family in the plank-house.

On Monday morning all hands went manfully to work, so that by Wednesday afternoon the schooner's cargo was

all landed, and placed under the side of the promontory; having a temporary covering of planks and boards over all, with the exception of the spars and sails for the brig.

On Thursday morning the people erected shears on board the brig, to serve two purposes: first, to take out as much of the cargo as would be requisite to lighten her, so as to get her afloat; and, secondly, to afterwards enable them to raise the fish of the mainmast into place. Xavier had kept her dry, so there was no water to pump out. They began about mid-day to take out the cargo, and I had the two casks of rum, which came out with the first portion of it, brought immediately to the store-house at the plantation, to prevent the possibility of intoxication among the men. Before evening, Captain Taylor thought the brig began to lift, and proposed taking one of the schooner's spare anchors and a cable, round in the Avon early in the morning, to try to heave her off. Derrick, and Allwood, and Xavier, and Manus Allwood, were employed in getting ready, and putting together, the pieces which were to form the fish of the mainmast, and in doing all such work as required the hand of the ship-carpenter. On Friday morning, the Avon was brought round with an anchor and cable, which was laid out astern, and by which they hove the brig off presently into deep water, drawing her back about twenty yards from where she had lain with her fore-foot aground. She still remained with her side close to the rocks, along which there was a gangway, to carry anything on board.

The vessel being now fairly afloat, it was desirable to ascertain the state of her bottom. One of the white seamen volunteered to dive under the keel, stripping at the same instant, and plunging under her bows. He soon re-appeared, reporting a piece of the false keel off forward; but, after making several voyages of discovery

under water, round and round the vessel, could not spy out any other injury. A consultation was now held with Captain Taylor, in which we agreed that if the brig did not leak more than usual after replacing the cargo, and bringing her round the promontory, he should proceed to the Bay of Honduras, without delaying to make further repairs here, the time of year being as yet favourable for fine weather, and the run not requiring more than three days. This being settled, and the vessel secured to the shore, they set about reloading her, and restowing her cargo, which was all again in place by Saturday at noon. I ordered the doors that had been taken away from the cabin, to be replaced; and also the table, and chairs, and stools to be restored.

Sunday, 20th.—We observed the Sabbath of to-day by attendance at divine service, and in innocent recreations, there not being any excuse for dancing or other noisy mirth.

Monday, 21st.—They began to fish the mast; and as there were about seven or eight feet of stump standing above board, we were of opinion that it would be made perfectly strong and secure. The shrouds and back-stays, together with the main-stay, and every other thing as far as was practicable, had been prepared at Kingston. The mast was up, and the standing rigging over-head, and the cross-trees and top on, and main-topmast pointed, by the middle of the week; and by Saturday I had the pleasure to see all the yards across, the running rigging rove, the sails bent, and every thing in place, and the brig towed round by the boats, and anchored off the plantation. I was glad to find that there had been little occasion for the pumps during the week, the leak scarcely requiring more than the ordinary spell of twice a day, and it had not increased on bringing the vessel round;

so that it was now resolved she should put to sea without loss of time.

Sunday, 27th.—There was a general muster to prayers at ten o'clock; and at one all hands were regaled with a dinner under the cotton-tree, as on the Sunday after their arrival: devotion, with contentment, and good order, being our combined object, under existing circumstances. At noon the brig hoisted her colours, which were brought down from the flag-staff on the promontory, and the large Union Jack I had brought with me from Jamaica hoisted there in its stead. The colours of the schooner and the Avon were flying also; so that, altogether we looked very grand, "low and aloft," as sailors express it.

Monday, 28th. — It was determined that the brig should not sail until the crew had assisted to get the twelve-pounder up to the flag-staff, which was a formidable undertaking. Early in the morning the gun was landed from the schooner, on the rocks beneath the plantation-house, and, by means of the timber carriage, (a clever invention for raising large pieces of timber, and great guns, by hand,) they easily transported our noble piece of ordnance to the foot of the acclivity; at the very spot where the original footpath had been made to the ravine. But the carpenters found it necessary to widen the avenue; after which, by means of planks, and tackles, and parbuckles, they succeeded in dragging the gun up to the flag-staff. That mastered, its carriage easily followed, and the gun was mounted before sunset. On their return, I gave the men a glass of grog each, and a dollar. This operation had been conducted by Captain Drake.

The captain of the brig and myself had not been idle at home; we examined all the accounts, with the invoices, and prepared the duplicates I had previously

made out. In addition to which, we had taken an inventory of whatever remained belonging to the former captain and crew; to this I subjoined, as an appendix, a list of the articles I had appropriated, which I believed to have belonged to the one or the other. A duplicate copy of this paper also, was now made, and signed by Captain Taylor and myself; making ourselves respectively responsible for such articles as still remained with him, or had been taken away by me. Of the duplicates we each took one. After I had delivered all the papers above alluded to, I handed him what are commonly called the ship's papers, and with them a narrative of the shipwreck, with a protest in form as to the accident. I then gave him letters to my cousin, and instructions how to proceed, if he did not find him at the Bay of Honduras; and also a letter to my uncle at Bristol, containing a detail of proceedings, as far as regarded his business, up to the present time. It is scarcely necessary to observe, that in my letters to my uncle and cousin, after thanking them for their intended kindness to me, I now, having other views, gave up all intention of locating at the Bay; and intimated, that I should be ready to settle our accounts, as soon after the brig's arrival in England as my uncle could examine and adjust them.

Tuesday, 29th.—About nine o'clock in the morning, I gave Captain Taylor the marks for going out of the southern channel, and he took his leave. Purdy, who knew the situation of all the reefs and shoals, was put on board the Avon; and as soon as the brig got under weigh, he made sail ahead, leading her out in safety, to the fair way in the offing. The boat and my pilot, returned about four o'clock, having seen our friend clear of the shoals, standing to the s. w. I congratulated

myself on this event, and looked forward with pleasure to be able now to attend to the immediate concerns of the colony, which now seemed, in some respects, rather pressing. I therefore lost no time in holding consultation with my dear wife, and then with Diego, with regard to the precedency of the various operations requiring to be done. In less than a month we might expect the rains; the crop was ready to be taken from the ground, and the schooner's cargo must be housed. After a long discussion with my best helpmate, and many scruples between us both, it was determined to cut away the thicket leading to the cave, and build a storehouse there, from side to side, at the entrance of the recess. So that, in fact, the cave itself would become a very important part of the warehouse, making an inner apartment of the greatest security. Having taken our resolution at last, on this unpleasant resolve, the four carpenters were sent for, and ordered to clear away all the trees and shrubs for the purpose. And, as the first step, the poultry located there, were safely removed to the pen, to be with the rest. Diego was to have the two negro lads for a few days, and Xavier's wife and Derrick's wife permanently; and two of the negro girls, to assist him in taking up the crop. Captain Drake with the two New England blacks, was to make a good platform, with pick-axes, near the flag-staff, for the gun-carriage to traverse on; while Martin and Purdy were to repair the craals, and also construct some new fish-pots, and go to the small islands to the north-east, in the canoe, to procure turtle.

Captain Drake completed his work by Thursday evening, having carried up sixty rounds of shot, and twelve rounds of powder. The latter were preserved in a water-proof chest, in which, also, were some matches for firing,

and a tinderbox, and stuff to light them when required. He had placed the tompion in the gun, and secured the touch-hole with the leaden apron, before his return; and he asked permission to fire it to-morrow evening, at sunset, with blank cartridge, and then load it for service.

He and I deemed it important to make a survey of the island, as soon as possible. He therefore employed himself on this duty during Friday forenoon, and at sunset on the same evening he fired the gun, to the great terror of some of our people, and therefore to the great amusement of the others. But I was glad to hear the *bull-dog* bark; who might, by the same token, keep an intruding Spaniard, or pirate from our door.

Till the end of the week no change was made in our arrangements. Of the negresses, my dear wife had retained Anne, the sister of Harry, to supply the place of Mira, now Martin's wife. Rota was our cook and housekeeper; indeed, she and her husband Diego, were our most useful and faithful people. A bargain was made with the wife and daughter-in-law of Allwood, to wash for the whole colony; and Mira Martin was engaged to mend their clothes. From the day of our return, I kept a regular day-book, in which every one's employment was noted down, and the amount of wages carried to their credit; their rations and other things being charged against them, respectively, male and female: and with this proceeding they were made acquainted; so that every one now felt it to be his or her interest to labour with industry, thereby to earn not only a daily subsistence, but to have something beyond, in credit on the books, to enable them to demand any particular article in store they might wish, as far as their means would go. Rota was cook to the colony, as well as to ourselves; and she and the washerwoman were paid by contribution; that

is, I paid Rota, but a small fractional charge was made to others on the washing account. In the way of polity, the machine was thus set going; and Saturday evening having brought the week to a close, the people were desired to bathe themselves every Sunday morning, and appear dressed at church by ten o'clock; the hour, in future, was to be announced by the ringing of a large bell, brought from Kingston. My dear wife, as well as myself, had been a good deal perplexed in arriving at some principle by which the labour of every one should be free, and yet, in the nature of things, compulsory; and we hoped we had now decided right: but resolving to watch the operation of our plan, with a jealous attention as to its justice, and the degree of satisfaction it gave to the people themselves.

Sunday, May 4th.—The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock; and our congregation numbered twenty-four. Before the service commenced, I said a few words on the gratitude we owed to the God that made us, and the earth on which we tread; and by whose goodness every thing grows, that we eat for food. I then added, that he had ordered one day in seven to be set apart from labour, that we may worship him, asking in prayer all that is beneficial for us, and giving thanks to him in praise for all the blessings with which we are surrounded. Those who could understand me, bowed their heads at this; and, after divine service, I told them that we intended to devote part of this day to teach some of them to read, and that such as chose to learn, might remain with us till their dinner-time—one o'clock. But I thought it well to advise that the elder people, such as Allwood and his wife, Diego and his wife, Xavier and his wife, Derrick and his wife, should not attempt it; yet, if at any time they should like to try to learn, I could have

no objection. The old people seemed satisfied with my remark, but did not at once retire; they stopped a little to see what was to be done. My dear wife brought out her large wooden-mounted alphabets;—the men being placed on one side of the hall, and the females on the other; she taking the charge of these, and I of those. I pointed to a big A made on one side of the wooden book (if a piece of board may be so called,—and why not "a wooden book," as well as "a horn book?" for such was the sort of book by which we were first taught our letters). I endeavoured to give this first letter a sound as in *father*, considering it less exceptionable than that usually taught with the alphabet. After they had severally, and then together, pronounced it, imitating the sound I gave it, I turned the other side of the board, exhibiting the letter B; and as these symbols were made by myself with chalk, they were readily replaced by others. As I proceeded with my squad, the mistress went on with hers, *pari passu*, as we would say at school. After which we tried their recollection of both letters shown together; and then one after the other, in a dodging manner, assisting them when they were at fault. They took the lesson good naturedly; sometimes laughing at one another's mistakes, sometimes at their own. The old people seemed much amused, remaining with us nearly an hour; after which they and Captain Drake went to seek other pursuits admitted by the day. We dismissed our school a little before one o'clock, expressing our pleasure at seeing them so attentive; desiring Mira, who could now read pretty well, to go over the business again under the cotton-tree in the evening. It was curious to observe, as well as satisfactory, how quickly the five young new negroes caught the sounds of the letters. And I may here remark, that we anticipated from this circum-

stance a good dialect of English among us, as Allen Derrick and his wife, with the Allwoods, were the only individuals that spoke negro. The New England blacks, and the Bermudians, might be said to have a good pronunciation when compared with the Jamaica negro dialect; and so had my Spaniards, Don Diego and his friends.

After the people dined, Captain Drake took as many as chose to go with him for a sail in the Avon; amusing them by coursing about in every direction, on the noble sheet of water that lay open to view before the house. It was therefore pleasant to us all: to those who were enjoying the sailing, and to us on shore looking on so fine a sight. At three o'clock Captain Drake came on shore with his company, and instantly sat down with us to our comfortable dinner, neatly, if not elegantly laid out. I felt particularly happy to-day in the company of our guest, who seemed a gentlemanly young man, and well-informed. Our conversation was sometimes reciprocally instructive, but always agreeable; and I sensibly felt that my young skipper would prove to us a valuable acquisition. In the evening, we took a walk, and visited Mira with her disciples under the shade of the great tree, now become "the Academic Bower;" and after looking on awhile, we strolled through the woodland region; where embarking at the black rock in the schooner's large boat, we were rowed by the two Bermudians, and the New England blacks, to the cocoa-nut grove, which we visited with much pleasure; and returned to coffee, well pleased with all we had seen and done, and retired soon after to our night's repose.

Monday, 5th.—Orders had been issued for every one to rise at daylight; and ourselves taking advantage of this cool and delightful hour, my dear wife and myself walked over to see our desolated thicket, and to give

directions for further preparations for the erection of the storehouse. As we crossed the streamlet, we found all the females of Allwood's family already at the general wash, which they were performing nearly in the same way we had done. My dear Eliza praised them for being so early at work; and on quitting them we called to mind the days, not very long passed, when we ourselves were cheerfully employed at the same labour. Captain Drake met us at the rock; and I requested him to suspend the survey for the present, and to superintend the building of the storehouse instead; adding, that the two New Englanders and the two Bermudians would be required as additions to the carpenter's crew: at the same time I put the plan into his hand. He walked up to the spot with us, where I saw an immense pile of trees and shrubs, cut up, and lying to windward of the plank-house.—"When these are dry," said Drake, "we will stow them in bundles for firewood."—I thanked him for the thought and the care. We then crossed over the rough surface of the ground, where the thicket had stood, and entered the cave; several pigeons were still roosting there, whose old domain we were now about, alas! to deprive them of entirely. It was here determined that as much soil as could be got, should be dug out, and wheeled away for other use, and so the bottom of the cave be completely cleaned; after which a foot thick of sand should be laid over the whole surface of the place on which the storehouse was to be erected. That done, the building would be commenced, which was to be altogether of wood; that is, the part projecting from the cave, which would comprise a front and roof; for the caverned rocks made two sides and the back, having the cave's mouth nearly in its centre.

The men were assembled, to begin the work; and

having given out particular orders, we returned to the plantation, where we found Diego with his party getting in the Indian corn. My dear wife had given Anna charge of the poultry, to feed them and collect the eggs; and on visiting the pen, we found her with an immense flock of feathered creatures round her, ducks, geese, turkeys, fowls, and Guinea-hens. The pigs were grunting in a corner; and the goats, ten in number, including Derrick's, just let out, were making their way to browse among the bushes on the side of the hill to the southward. The sheep had been conveyed to the opposite island, where there was some good feed for them; having a high steep ridge all round, not unlike our own position, but more fertile and extensive.

We returned to breakfast, after making these arrangements for an undertaking important to the comfort of the settlement, but not devoid of pain to ourselves, from the recollection of past events; and talked them over, with varied feelings, until Anna had returned from the pen, and put our breakfast on the table; Rota being similarly employed under the rocks beyond the spring, where the working people were to take their morning meal. I now gave orders to announce, the turn in and turn out of all the parties, by the blowing of a conch-shell at eight o'clock; which had been prepared by Diego for the purpose, that the bell might be reserved to summon only the congregation of the people on the Lord's-day. Captain Drake soon joined us; and during breakfast he and I talked over the business in hand. At nine the shell was again blown; and he repaired, followed by the people, to his station. But I promptly determined that Diego should learn to wind the bugle instead, as the shell rang sounds in my ears I did not like to hear again.—"This makes my people slaves!" said I to myself, as the deep

hollow intonations of the shell fell upon my ear—sounds I well remembered to have heard in Jamaica every morning at daybreak, when sleeping at Mr. Dickinson's pen, to turn out the slave population to task labour.—"I will no more of it," said I to my dear Eliza, who readily entered into my feelings on the subject, and applauded my resolution.—"You are right, my Edward," she replied; "let us have nothing here, to make any of our people feel that they have been bought with our money." I now hastily called Diego to me, and told him what had been passing in my mind; desiring him to blow the conch no more, but try what he could do with the bugle, which I now took down from the place on which I had suspended it, and gave to him.

Our house began to look very respectable. All our furniture was in, and one of the bedsteads put up. Besides, I might now call it our castle; for the twenty stand of arms, brought from Jamaica, were placed under its roof, in the arm-chest in which they came. I added to them, those which I formerly possessed; but I put the old ones at bottom, so as to have the newest and best near at hand. To these latter there were bayonets, and cross-belts, and cartouche-boxes, annexed. This arm-chest occupied a corner of our bed-room, and having the cot mattress laid upon it, with a large flag thrown over that, served as a settee; and to us, who once had considered the plank couch in our wooden palace a luxury, this piece of military furniture was very acceptable. At twelve o'clock Diego blew a blast from the bugle, and at one the people dined where they had breakfasted; and at two they resumed their work. We dined at three o'clock; and at six the bugle desired the labour of the day to cease. And thus we continued our arrangement, and carried on our work during the week.

Sunday, 11th.—This Sabbath was observed like the former, in devotion and teaching; but with some little variation in the afternoon amusements.

Monday, 12th.—Every one at work, as on the preceding Monday. But Diego came, to state, that it would require three or four days more to get in all the roots, and vegetables, and corn; and that the shed would not hold the tenth part of what was already taken up, and piled here and there on the ground, covered with corn-trash. I told him to proceed, and I would take the matter into consideration. Great progress had been made with the storehouse; and, as many hands make light work, it was expected to be finished by the end of this week. At least, it would be up, and the roof covered with boards, on which the shingles could be placing while the stores were getting in. But quick as this promised to be, we feared we must expect the heavy rains before it could be even so far completed. However, as it was of the utmost importance to secure the fruits of the earth, I offered the hall of the mansion for a temporary store; reserving only a corner for our dinner table. Accordingly we sent the spare chairs into the bed-room; and Diego's party began immediately to carry and stow corn, yams, coccos, tobacco, and other vegetable matters, into the back part of the hall, the shed being already full. By Wednesday, he had finished; and then, with a zeal which acted well on those under him, hastened with his men to assist at the storehouse. I directed Captain Drake, to have a sloping platform, between the cave's mouth and the floor of the wooden building, immediately laid; and all the packages, and boxes, and casks, with articles perishable by wet, conveyed into the cave, where there was ample room indeed for the whole schooner's cargo. This was all done by Thursday at noon, without interfering with the car-

penters at work: nothing being left out but the barrels of beef, pork, pitch, tar, and the like, besides the crates of crockeryware. We had run a race with the weather. On Friday morning the storehouse was boarded over, and the remainder of the things housed. In the afternoon, I desired Captain Drake to moor the schooner in the bay off the woodland region; also to get the coals out of the Avon, and moor her likewise; to unbend the sails of both, and stow them below deck in their respective vessels; and to strike the yards and topmasts of the schooner, and the masts of the Avon; this also was done. On the following day the rain came down in torrents; so that we had much reason to congratulate ourselves on our activity and foresight.

The rain fell in heavy sheets of water for two or three hours, during which broad streams of it ran round the house in every direction, notwithstanding the thirstiness of the ground. The sky cleared up suddenly in the afternoon, and the ground appeared as dry on the surface as if it had not rained a drop. During the weight of the torrents, everybody was made prisoner in the place it caught him, so that Captain Drake did not make his appearance to dinner till half-past four o'clock. But as the wet had put the cooking fire out, we, and all the people, were obliged to make the best sort of repast we could. And as we knew, by the experience of last year, that the rains fell generally at middle-day and in the night, we lost no time, when it became fair, in cooking provision for the morrow.

The Avon being only half decked, Drake sent four men off as soon as the rain ceased, to bale her out; on their return, they reported that several hogsheads of water had been collected in that small vessel during the three hours' rain: however it had washed her clean, leaving

no mark of the coals, except where the dirt had settled at the bottom.

I enjoyed my coffee and cigar very much this evening, in talking over our affairs with my dear wife and Mr. Drake; and the air being delightfully cool, added to my pleasure, and to theirs. However, as the season now stopped work of one sort, I sent for Diego, and told him to serve out some dried palm-leaves to the people, to be ready for Monday; and employ them during the rains in making hats and baskets; and this evening to take a batch of mullet.

Sunday, 18th.—The bell rang for prayers at the usual hour, and the school was dismissed by twelve o'clock; just time enough to escape imprisonment from the rain, which fell soon after the people had been sent away.

Monday, 19th.—It had poured in torrents nearly all night, with some thunder and squalls of wind, but the vessels had not driven; and all the buildings kept out the rain, excepting the great storehouse at the cave, which was as yet only boarded over. Captain Drake visited the vessels in the morning, with a few men, while the other people were occupied at the work allotted to them. The weather continued in this way for five days, but cleared up entirely on Thursday the 22d; not half the space of time the rains lasted the preceding year; but I think they were heavy in proportion, and that quite as much water fell. Diego now advised that the whole stock of poultry should be allowed to go at large over the plantation grounds, to pick up the grubs that soon would be in swarms on the ground. Martha, one of the negro girls, was appointed to herd them, as their numbers from the late hatchings were very great; of ducks and fowls there were more than a hundred of each kind. Yet I did not wish this abundant store to be diminished; it being

the intention of my dear wife and myself to divide them among the people, as soon as we could locate their families in separate habitations. And now, that the coast was all clear of intruders, a colony of the ducks was sent back to their old quarters at the fountain under the face of the promontory; and an additional hatch being made for some geese, half a dozen of these were sent also, that they might enjoy an element in which they delighted, and that we might see them now and then swimming about the shores of our lake-like harbour.

The carpenters resumed their work as soon as the boards of the storehouse were sufficiently dry to put on the shingles; which operation was more tedious as to time than all they had done. Captain Drake bent the sails of the Avon, and in a few days resumed his survey; taking with him the two new negro boys, John and Harry, in addition to the two New Englanders; it being of importance to make sailors of the boys as soon as possible. My cares meanwhile went to the agriculture; and my trusty bailiff, Diego, told me that the yams and most other things near us, excepting the maize (Indian corn), had not sun enough at our plantation, owing to the shade being cast over the ground for so many hours in the morning by the promontory, during all the year: he therefore recommended a plantation to be made on the opposite island, on the grounds to which we had sent the sheep, and to move them further along to the northward. Accordingly, he and the Bermudians were sent there with felling-axes, to clear away such trees as might stand in the way. And after the storehouse was shingled over, the four carpenters were despatched, to expedite that business in conjunction with the two Bermudians; while Diego returned to superintend matters at home. Captain Drake and his crew gave two days of their time, to

remove the provisions in the plantation storehouse, round to the great storehouse of the cave; previous to a serious commencement of his survey of the islands. The plantation storehouse being thus cleared, all the corn and roots, fruits and tobacco, were immediately transported thither from the hall of the mansion, to the great improvement of our comfort.

A boat took the men, with their provisions, to the opposite shore every morning; and when they returned in the evening, they always brought back a good freight of firewood; by which we accumulated an ample supply during the business: but after they had felled the trees, and cut off their branches for fuel, the trunks were removed, by means of the timber-carriage, to one side of the bay, for any future purpose. While a party were clearing the ground at this place, Diego, with as many hands as he could collect, planted Indian corn, and pumpkins, and melon-seeds, and sowed Indian kale, and calaloo, and ocras, within the range of our own plantation. The sugar-cane we had put in soon after our arrival, was now all but ripe, and the pine-apples had nearly come to perfection. To this little pinery, had been added some of the suckers they had thrown out from time to time; and of late, also the tops of such of the pines as we had eaten, lately brought from Jamaica. The plantain and banana-suckers, which had been put into moist places in the rock near the silk-cotton-tree spring, were thriving very well; and some of the wild banana plants, that Diego had collected last year in one of his Sunday excursions, now began to show fruit. Spades and hoes were given to Allwood's family, and a quantity of melon-seeds of both sorts, and pumpkins, which they were desired to sow in the grounds between the spring and the rocky point, to be handy for themselves or any one else resi-

dent in the plank-house; and they were much pleased with the idea, as it promised advantage to themselves.—By Saturday, the 31st, Captain Drake had completed his survey of the islands, and presented me with a chart, of which he kept a duplicate; and both being remarkably well done, I was so much pleased that I presented him with a couple of doubloons.

Having put away my chart, I asked my dear Eliza if she would like to make a visit to the opposite island, and dine there under a tree; that Captain Drake and myself might have an opportunity of seeing the place. Such a proposition was too much in unison with her own mind to require a moment's deliberation. A basket was got ready, and presently well stored for the occasion: and without much delay, she and I, and Capt. Drake, accompanied by Diego and her damsel Anna, 'squired by Fidele, marched down to the boat; in which, with a fine, fair, light breeze, we ran across in little more than fifteen or twenty minutes. Having landed, Captain Drake and myself visited the woodmen, who had nearly completed their work; they had cleared about twelve acres: some of the trees cut down were of considerable size, and many of them prime timber, mahogany, cedar, tamarind, and yellow wood; but, on the whole, the ground had been little encumbered. Diego, who knew the place, begged permission to carry the basket, and show his Señora Doña a fine, smooth, shady seat under the branches of a noble tamarind they had left standing on the northern side of the bay, at the foot of the Sugar-Loaf Hill, close to a cool run of water. My dear wife readily desired that I might allow her to proceed with our faithful Diego, so that Captain Drake and myself might have plenty of time to inspect the work done by the wood-cutters. When the lady and her damsel were seated, Diego returned to

us; and together we then visited every part of the cleared grounds, and saw that the soil was good. After this exploration was finished, we betook ourselves to join in the *fête champêtre* under the shade of the wide spreading tamarind-tree; the contents of the basket were spread forth; and we sat round them on the ground, taking what there was, with an appetite and an enjoyment not felt at a regular dinner-table. When our repast was finished, we walked to a little distance into a narrow pass, when our pleasure was not a little heightened by Fidele killing two iguanas. I was glad to see this; for I had feared his courage had received a lasting damper from the rough treatment he met with in his encounter with the peccaries. The day being thus finished delightfully, we returned to our plantation residence; the wood-cutters following us in the Avon, with a cargo of firewood.

Sunday, June 1st.—We were able this day to give ample time to the church service; also to our Sunday's teaching: it was like the dew of Hermon on the Land of Promise. Our God was with us; and we saw, with delight, our people improve in knowledge and in devotion.

Monday, 2d.—The moisture from the ground was quickly exhaling, so that I feared we should be late in putting in our yams and coccos. Besides, we had brought a quantity of cuttings of the cassava plant from Jamaica, which hitherto had been preserved in sand, and which ought to have been planted before this time; we had also some bushels of guinea-corn to sow; meaning all these articles of food to stock the grounds of our new plantation. Afraid of losing more of the season, I sent for all the people early in the morning, and told them, so much were we pressed for time, that every one, without distinction, must lend a hand; all other business being suspended: and I requested Captain Drake to head the

party to the opposite island, to see that the grounds were laid out with some regularity for the different crops; and to take the advice of Diego about the places best adapted to each. These orders were cheerfully acquiesced in by all; every person feeling an individual interest in the success of the undertaking; besides, they were kept in a temper of mind that rendered them obedient with a willing spirit.

After breakfast, they took boat, with their implements; eleven men, besides women, with Captain Drake to superintend their operations; leaving Rota alone with us, to cook their provisions and ours. On their return in the evening, I regaled the whole party with coffee; also desiring Diego to serve out a supply of home-made cigars to the men.

On Wednesday, my dear wife, Fidele, and myself, joined Drake and the agriculturists, leaving Rota and Lion to take care of the garrison. We took a supply of shaddock, and orange, and lime seeds, with us, and seeds of the capsicum and bird-pepper; and amused ourselves in planting these in appropriate situations. The situation of this new plantation was altogether beautiful. It was on part of a gentle slope, nearly half a mile in extent every way; having an amphitheatre of steep rocky eminences enclosing and adorning it, terminating only at the water's edge; these steeps being beautifully wooded, with varieties of the palm and other trees, among which we saw flocks of paroquets and some other birds. "My own love!" said I to my dear Eliza, as we stood under the shade of a magnificent palm, on the highest part of the cleared ground, "I hope to see a comfortable house built here, at no very distant day, and inhabited by some of your dear friends and mine from England."—"We want nothing else, dearest Edward," she replied, "to complete

our happiness."—Then pausing a little, she added, "No; I should be ungrateful to God to allow that wish to pass. I do not want even that to complete my happiness. I want nothing, my honoured husband," said she, tenderly pressing my hand, "but you, and the Spirit of Him we desire to love. But," resumed she, smiling sweetly (for my heart was too full to speak immediately), "I shall, nevertheless, rejoice to see our friends; and to see them here, as you so kindly and fondly anticipate."—"Sweet angel!" was all my reply.

We now bent our steps towards the people at work. Allwood's family of women were employed at the least laborious occupation, chiefly in carrying the cut roots and corn to the men planting; but all were cheerful, and greeted us cordially when we came among them. In the evening, we regaled the party, as on the preceding day; and by the end of the week this great business was so far completed, that Diego undertook to finish it, with only the two New England blacks, and John and Harry.

Sunday, 8th.—We observed this day with little deviation from the preceding Sabbath.

Monday, 9th.—Having accomplished every thing that required the whole strength of the settlement, I proposed to Captain Drake that he should undertake a voyage to Kingston in a week or two, to bring us some supplies of building materials; and that we might contribute something from the island towards paying for them, I suggested that he should take Martin and Purdy in the canoe, with provisions, and a sail to make a tent; and endeavour to catch some turtle, where they had been seen in abundance, among our small islands on the north of the eastern reef. He did not hesitate to comply with my request; indeed, I could not have found another man so

well suited, by talents and disposition, to do the various things his peculiar situation and ours required.

The carpenters were now directed to build a house on the N. E. of the mansion, corresponding in site and size to the plantation storehouse; which, as I noticed before, stood on the S. W. end of us; and I marked out the ground for it, which was immediately set about. In the evening, Captain Drake set off with the canoe to try his skill in turtling. The women, generally, were engaged in their respective habitations, in various useful employments; but Martha and Mary, two of the young negresses, were now both appointed to take care of the poultry; feeding them, and collecting their eggs, some of which were distributed every day among our people; and as young broods of ducks and chickens were daily coming forth, these girls had quite enough to do, and my dear wife also, who carefully registered all that was going on in their department.

On Tuesday morning, the canoe returned with five turtle, and had succeeded in turning six more: these were put into the craal. But Drake said he must take the Avon at the next trip, with the canoe in tow, there being safe anchorage for her between two small islands. The two negro lads were therefore withdrawn from Diego's party, to accompany him; and the Bermudians, with Hachinta and Priscilla, sent to the new plantation in their stead. The Avon, with the canoe in tow, went out of the harbour at noon: and in about an hour after, we walked to the plank-house, to have the pleasure of seeing this fine boat sail up towards her destination between the beach and the reef, till we lost sight of her by an intervening projection of the main island.

On Thursday morning, Drake made his appearance round the point, and ran alongside of the black rock,

near to which the enlarged craal was situated. My dear wife took my arm, and we strolled to the landing-place to meet our friend, whose success far exceeded my expectations. He had brought eighteen fine turtle in the Avon, and five smaller ones in the canoe. After dinner, the party set out again; and returned on Saturday morning, with the same number in the canoe, and twenty-two in the lugger.

On Friday, Diego reported his work at the new plantation completed, and that he had driven the sheep to the pasturage of the great bay to the northward. This capital feeding-place was separated from the new plantation by a narrow pass—the same in which Fidele had killed the iguana—between the ledge of rocks on the point, and the high conical hill, that stands immediately to the westward of them. Early on Saturday morning, my dear Eliza and myself visited his work, in the schooner's small boat, rowed by Diego and Ned Hall, one of the New England blacks. The field did him great credit: it was well dug; and the divisions, planned by Captain Drake, regularly planted. It must be confessed, there were many stumps of trees protruding here and there, but it would have been impossible to have grubbed them up this season. We next walked along the pass between the rock and the hill, until we opened the bay. There appeared much sand all along, extending, perhaps, fifty yards inland; but beyond this, towards the rising ground, there seemed to be good herbage for three miles beyond the place on which we stood. On our return we stopped to admire this commodious spot. Each side of the pass was bounded by a wall of rock: on one hand, that which stretched into the sea as a rock; on the other, the rocky base of the Sugar-loaf Hill, wooded to the summit; at the foot of which, the fine spring of transparent water ran

with a full stream into a little harbour of the sea, formed by the lateral projection of the rock that forms one side of the pass, on which we had just turned our backs. The contemplation of this beautiful spot induced me again to remark to my wife, how delightful this situation would be for some of our family, should they please to join us. "My dear Edward," said she, in reply, "I think we should all reside on one island, that we may be able at all times to communicate with each other: for although the channel that would divide us may not exceed a couple of miles, yet circumstances might arise which would render such an interruption to immediate communication extremely painful. And, indeed, I have had it in my mind for some days past to suggest to you this consideration, that, if you think well of it, you might alter your plans a little with regard to the places intended for settling some of the people." I reflected a while on what she said; but some possible events soon crossing my mind, "You are right, my Eliza," I replied: "I will adopt your principle in locating the people, and send some of the families to this place; and I will reserve Peccary Field and East Field, on our own island, for any branches of our family that may join us. And if they do not come, it will be time enough, after every other place is occupied, to give those lands to other settlers." We returned home just as the Avon was entering the harbour, and had the pleasure to see the turtle landed and put into the craal.

Our late exertions deserved a little extra rest and recreation; so I proclaimed a half holiday, and a turtle feast for all hands under the great tree. A calipee was dressed for ourselves, such as was never seen at the mansion-house of the Mayor of Bristol, nor even at a Lord Mayor's table; the green fat being nearly three

inches thick on the white meat: whereas, by the time these creatures reach England, after fasting nearly two months, the fat, if not quite gone, is reduced to nearly nothing; and, instead of it, the greenish gelatinous part of the fins and calipash are palmed upon the epicure for that delicious substance, which they only know by name, and taste in idea. We regaled ourselves at the mansion with lime punch, and I sent a fair allowance to the people. After dinner, the chart which Captain Drake had made was laid on the table. After looking attentively over it for some time, my dear wife requested to give a name to the islands. "The group," said she, "we have already called *Seaward Islands*: but in honour of our good king, and old England, let us name this on which we are, as being the principal, *Saint George's Island!*—and the one opposite, after my dear husband, *Edward's Island!*" Captain Drake applauded the nomination; and I showed my approval, by merely saying, "Thank you, love." She brought the pen and ink, and with her own hand wrote the names on Captain Drake's chart, and on my duplicate. "Now, dear Eliza," said I, "before the ink is dry, let us call this majestic promontory, under whose shade we have dwelt so long in peace and security, *Drake's Promontory!*" She smiled, and instantly wrote down the name, for which he expressed himself as highly honoured. We then drank the King's health; my own; Captain Drake's; my dear wife's; with all our friends and relations in England; and, finally, "Prosperity to the settlement:" finishing the day in witnessing the hilarity and mirth of our settlers, round the great tree, in dance and song, enjoying their coffee and cigars.

Sunday, 15th.—We assembled at the usual hour to prayers; and it was delightful to perceive the increasing

intelligence and devotion of our motley congregation; also the variety of intonations falling on our ear, from their united responses to the several portions of the Litany. However, I must own, some were almost too ridiculous to hear with gravity; especially "Spare us, good Lord;" as few of them could articulate the *S*. But they were in earnest, and anything else was of little consequence. In the afternoon, Mira held her school under the cotton tree, the sight of which never failed to afford us inexpressible delight.

Monday, 16th.—Captain Drake set off again on his turtle expedition, taking the two New Englanders and the two lads. The carpenters resumed their work; Diego and the Bermudians employed themselves in putting the storehouses to rights, so as to be able to lay our hands on the different packages as they might be wanted, and afterwards in restoring the produce of the late harvest. The women, excepting Allwood's family, took it in turn to grind maize, with the large wheel-mill brought from Kingston; of which a portion was to be used daily, to save flour, as I found that sort of bread would be too expensive for ordinary and daily consumption.

On Tuesday, the turtlers returned with twenty-six, and on Thursday with twenty-five; so that we now had one hundred and five in the craal. Soon after their return, the schooner was hauled to the rock, and all the bricks, with the spare anchors and cables, taken out. After which, she was ballasted with sand, to be well wetted, to give it solidity, so that it might not shift when the vessel heeled at sea: and on this bed of wet sand the turtles were laid on their backs; in which situation, buckets of sea-water would be thrown over them, two or three times a day, during the passage. On Friday evening the sails were bent, and the vessel ready for sea.

No work was done on Saturday. I settled accounts with every one in the island up to the day, allowing them reasonable wages according to their respective situations, and charging a moderate price for their subsistence, so as to give a daily balance, more or less, to each. My honest slave carpenter, Derrick, was surprised and overjoyed when I allowed him a pittance of wages also. Captain Drake and the New Englanders were paid differently. This being done (for which I had been already prepared with calculations), the people were told, the schooner should bring from Kingston, free of charge for the freight, whatever they chose to send money to purchase. This announcement created a great stir among them; and poor Drake soon found enough to do to make their respective memorandums, and receive their monies. The following day being the Sabbath, we dedicated it, as heretofore, to the more especial observance of moral and religious duties; permitting every one to indulge themselves in innocent amusement, after duly performing the duties of the day.

CHAPTER XV.

Monday, June 23d. — The men began shipping the turtle at break of day; and soon after, Captain Drake waited on me for orders. I gave him letters to Mr. Green, at Kingston; and letters for Messrs. Perry and Co., and for my uncle; and also letters from my dear wife and myself, to our friends in Gloucestershire.—"Put those in your pocket," said I; "and let us look over the list I have made out for supplies required from Kingston." We conned it over; and after making a few additions, he put this paper in his pocket also. The list embraced all sorts of lumber; that is, squared timber for building, planks, boards, shingles, etc.; then followed other items: —two canoes; a marble muller and slab, to grind our cacao into chocolate; a coffee-roaster; glass cut in squares for the windows; Spanish whiting, and linseed-oil, to make putty. Then, one ram and six ewes; a basket-cage of live pigeons; some plants of grafted fruit in tubs, bespoke by Diego in April; also a further supply of plantain-suckers; kernels of the Avocado pear, and of the Barbadoes palm, and some other vegetable propagants. As many bricks as could conveniently be stowed under the cargo were to be brought. A memorandum was added, instructing Captain Drake to obtain a free negro mason or bricklayer, if possible, to settle among us; such a person being much wanted; and to purchase four healthy young lads, to assist us in our various operations. A large clock to stand in the hall was added to the list. I estimated the cost of this cargo at 1200 dollars; and calculating on the turtle as averaging eight dollars a-piece, I took credit on their account

for 800 dollars, and gave Captain Drake 50 doubloons, which were equivalent to 800 more, so as to secure the supplies required. At sunrise our colours were hoisted; and at nine o'clock the gallant Porghee sailed out of harbour, through the northern passage—the same through which she had entered—with a fine breeze from the east.

The carpenters had now completed the house on the N.E. of the mansion, of the same size with the storehouse on the opposite side, but considerably larger than the houses of Diego and Xavier. In the absence of the Bermudians, who had gone with Drake, Purdy's wife remained with her friends at the plank-house; and Mira, Martin's wife, with her parents Diego and Rota. Diego's family was now moved, *pro tempore*, into the new house, while the carpenters were employed in stripping off the canvass sides and covering from the old ones, which they began to replace with boards and shingles; and after this was accomplished, Xavier's residence had a similar refit. Meanwhile the women were set to various occupations; none being permitted to be idle. The palm-leaves were worked into hats, the stems into brooms and baskets; besides, there was washing, and sewing, and cooking, and the grinding of maize, when nothing else could be found to do. Diego caught fish, and brought home cocoa-nuts, and gave out provisions, and looked to the plantations; and reported every evening on the state of affairs. Of all these matters I and my dear helpmate kept our registers, and our accounts likewise. And sometimes, in a leisure hour, we strolled out together along the beach, or through the trees, with one of our favourite numbers of the Spectator in my hand; and how often did we thank, over and over again, in our minds, my Eliza's kind father, for having given to her the few collected sheets he had preserved, of that invaluable

paper. We dwelt particularly on the parts where Mr. Addison points out so movingly to the reader, the poet John Milton's description of the sweet innocence, and therefore perfect felicity, of our first parents in the garden of Eden, with no other human society than themselves. We read over and over again these passages, comparing them with our own extraordinary lot; and feeling happy, most happy, in this our almost solitude, having God and ourselves! yet, with a few, now, round us, who shared our peace, and all the good his providence had so bountifully bestowed.

Thus we went on, and by the 7th of July the two huts or houses were boarded and shingled; and Diego and Xavier took possession of their respective dwellings again. I now told Allwood, and Manus his son, that they might occupy the new house for a time, if they pleased; but as it was my intention to give them both land, on which they were to build for themselves, I thought it might not be worth while to move them from the plank-house, as the women of their family washed for the settlers. Allwood said he would do as I pleased; but he wished to know what land he might have. I told him, four acres for himself and four for his son, in separate allotments; and that each must build a house on his lot, but large, or small, as he liked; only the grounds belonging to it must be fenced round with hurdles, to keep their stock within their own bounds; and that no tree, excepting such as might be in the way of their enclosures, should be cut down without my leave. I then proposed placing them on the opposite bay, which was gladly accepted. The next day Allwood and Manus accompanied me in the canoe, rowed by Diego and Xavier: the former my privy counsellor. After a little consideration, I marked out the site of their respective houses, on two contiguous

allotments of land, part of the ground that had been lately cleared and cultivated. The father and son were highly pleased, and immediately set about erecting a temporary shed for themselves. After which we returned; and on the following morning, they, being furnished with tools and provisions, and the loan of the schooner's small boat, left behind purposely for our use, set off to their tasks, to return in the evening. In this way, they took with them whatever they stood in need of, day by day, until they completed their work, which was duly noted down in our day-book.

Xavier and Derrick were now employed in putting a coat of paint on the storehouse at the cave's mouth, and on all the buildings at our plantation, excepting the mansion, which was to remain in its present state for some time. The goats and poultry were let out every morning, and brought back to the pen in the evening: the latter were very numerous, and very noisy; particularly the guinea-hens, whose loud shrill note was scarcely bearable. Rota continued to be a treasure to us; and, by her example, and my dear wife's instruction, Anna had become highly useful, and gradually became intelligent and completely civilised. Rota, like a true Spaniard, was a great observer of forms; always showing great respect for her mistress, whom she never failed to address as "La Señora:"—Anna copied her in this, as in all other matters, with surprising exactness; and we thought it prudent not to check this feeling in our dependents.

Day after day, week after week, we went on with these every-day avocations; observing, as formerly described, the Sabbath; and without anything particular occurring, until Wednesday, the 16th of July, when we had the pleasure to see the schooner enter the harbour from the northward; which welcome appearance was greeted by

hoisting our colours. At two o'clock she came to an anchor, and in a few minutes after, we had the happiness to receive letters from England.—After shaking hands with Captain Drake, and congratulating him on his return, I put a few questions to him respecting the success of his voyage, which he answered without any circumlocution,—a quality much to be esteemed at all times, but more especially when the mind of the questioner is anxious to proceed to other matters. My Eliza, after desiring Rota to get Captain Drake some dinner, had already gone into her room with her dear letters from Awbury in her hand, to read and enjoy them unobserved by a stranger; and the board being now spread for Drake, I took a chair aside to the further part of the hall, and commenced on my own budget: Perry and Co.'s first. The treasure and bills had arrived safe, which was announced by a more than business-like letter. They had paid Captain James 400*l.* for freight; and after defraying other charges, and paying a trifling commission, they had funded 56,000*l.* money in the three per cents. South Sea stock, at 83, being in stock 67,424*l.*, leaving in their hand 1092*l.* at my disposal; having made nearly 2000*l.* more by the doubloons, than I should have done by converting them into bills at Jamaica: which shows that the bills should have been given at a very trifling premium, not above $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. This information was a source of great satisfaction, although the possible result had never disquieted me a moment; but, in its consummation, I obtained the certain means of doing every thing our best wishes could desire. After I had read this letter, I hastened to my dear wife, and communicated its contents, which in their way were altogether gratifying. But she was not long in directing my attention to a letter from her much loved, and deservedly revered father; which

commenced by giving praise to Almighty God for our deliverance from shipwreck, and for his wonderful Providence towards us since that event. He received the present his beloved child had sent him, with the same feelings that she had in giving it; but he hoped before his eyes closed on this world, to embrace her once more! Her sisters also wrote most affectionately, and concluded by saying, she must not be surprised if one of them were to take us at our word, and pay us a visit. My letters from my family, which I now opened and read, were equally gratifying. In one of these, my brother expressed himself as determined to join me as soon as possible. But there was yet another letter, and that was from my uncle, which I just glanced at, and then put by for a while; having instantly perceived something in its tenor I could not at once make out. However, we read it attentively in the evening; but for his sake I will not repeat it. I will suppose he was so puzzled by what I had written, and what he had heard of money being remitted to Awbury, that he did not know what to think, and therefore could not know what to write. Had he been made acquainted with the freight I sent to England in the frigate, his brain would have been completely addled.

Captain Drake, in the mean time, left the mansion; but returned by five o'clock, with the four fine young negro lads, whom he had had the manly propriety to clothe decently in sailor's jackets and trousers. The poor youths stood before the door, perhaps pondering on their fate, perhaps careless or reckless of the future: but, lest they might possess any of those feelings common to civilised man, I desired Anna to give each of them a small wheaten cake, and to tell them to behave well, and they should be kindly treated. They all understood her, being from her own country; and they leaped for joy

when she spoke to them, and at the mark of future kindness they received from her hand.

When they went away, Captain Drake handed me Mr. Green's letter, which was short, but enclosing the invoice and receipt for the cost. All the things desired had been procured, and our captain had been quite successful in all his commissions, excepting obtaining the mason. He had made his passage to Kingston, in the short period of six days, and did not lose a turtle. On his arrival he found a ready market for them, at something more than we had anticipated; having received for the hundred and five turtles, 850 dollars. He paid 600 dollars for the four negro lads, and 70 dollars for the seven sheep; and the two canoes cost 50 dollars each. So that our turtle cargo covered all these charges, and something over. The amount of the invoice was 304 dollars: so, after paying all this, and some other incidental expenses, he brought me back 25 doubloons out of the 50 with which I had intrusted him.

We had a great deal of interesting conversation over our coffee and cigar; amongst which he told us, that Mr. Green had been very civil to him; but very inquisitive; that he observed we were "the strangest people he ever had met with!" and he threw out many hints, in half joke, that he suspected we were carrying on a contraband trade with the Spanish main, if not some other game he would not name; for he could not in any other way, he said, account for Mr. Seaward having so much money. Drake had humoured this idea by a mysterious manner and equivocal answers; saying, however, with a laugh, "that if at any time he chose to pay the pirates' nest a visit, we should be happy to see him, and would give him hospitality." This account made my dear wife and myself quite merry. We could not refrain

from laughing outright at some parts of our friend's detail; particularly when he repeated a remark that he said was always in Mr. Green's mouth, when talking to him on the subject—"But what was that large gun for, then?"

The moment the schooner came to an anchor, Diego had got the plantain suckers on shore, and lost no time in planting them near the little spring above the silk-cotton tree; just where some time ago he and Xavier had cleared away the brushwood from before that delightful little urn of refreshing water. The suckers were sufficient in number to make a double row, leaving an avenue to the approach, which in time would prove a beautiful as well as useful plantation, usually called in Jamaica a plaintain walk, on account of its cool and large extended foliage: and when he reported to me in the evening what he had done, I commended him.

On the following morning, the seven sheep were conveyed by boat to the Long Bay pasture on Edward's Island, to join the other flock; and as soon as breakfast was over, I requested Captain Drake to deliver all the little commissions to the people, which they had sent for by him, before we should begin to unload the general cargo. He lost no time in complying with my request; and a curious scene it was, especially among the women: but they were all more than satisfied; they were well pleased also with what "the good massa Captain had done." As to their commissions, many were useless, and others foolish; but as the people really had every thing here they should desire, and they were requested not to send for live stock of any kind, nothing better than trumpery could be expected, among which looking-glasses and earrings had not been forgotten; and, as all these were to be admired, it may readily be imagined there was no

work done to-day, after the sheep had been transported to the opposite side.

The new house, lately finished on our plantation, was allotted to Diego and his wife, with his son-in-law Martin, and his wife, for the present; that his former dwelling might be occupied by the four new negro lads, to whom my dear wife had given certain patriarchal names—Abel, Noah, Jacob, David. Captain Drake made the Porghee's cabin his head-quarters; and the two New Englanders, with John and Harry, the black sailor boys, were led to understand that they must consider the steerage of that vessel as their proper abode.

On Friday we began to unload; and as a first-fruits from the voyage, the clock I had sent for, was fixed up in the great hall. The marble slab for bruising cacao was placed on a stand at the back of the great tree; to the trunk of which, in the same direction, the corn-mill had been previously fixed: a pleasant and commodious situation for the operations they were to perform; an ample shade over head; a fine spring of water close at hand. Rota was glad to see the coffee-roaster; for hitherto it had been a tedious operation. The two canoes, either of which two men could manage well, and one man tolerably, were drawn on the beach; and the crates of glass, and other things, conveyed to the large warehouse. Some fine fruit-tree grafts, planted in little tubs, were for the present brought into the hall of the mansion, and a very large supply of fruits into our store-room. By Saturday night, the lumber was all on shore, piled up in due order; and as the bricks served as ballast to the schooner, they were allowed for awhile to remain on board.

Sunday, 20th.—When the bell rang, we all assembled at prayers. The four young patriarchs attended; and while

they did as they saw others do, they seemed happy in finding themselves in a situation of equality with all around them. After prayers, the business of teaching commenced, when these new scholars were turned over to Martin and Purdy to be taught their alphabet.

Monday, 21st.—The fruit-trees, eight in number, were now put into the ground, tubs and all for the present, near the sugar-canes, to remain there until they could be transplanted. This gave me occasion to observe that the canes were nearly ripe, and might be cut. However, that could not be done, with the view of propagating them, until the next rains. Some of our pine-apples also were ready for eating; and all the suckers and tops, lately put in to extend our pinery, were doing well. The whole side and bottom of the little dale looked delightfully. The variety, the beauty of the several parts, now covered with culinary vegetables and Indian corn, produced a generally pleasing effect, as viewed from the door of our mansion, or from the grounds immediately adjacent. In the afternoon, we visited the new plantation on the opposite island, attended by Captain Drake and Diego, and were well pleased to see one of the houses completely finished, and the other in progress; all the plants of every description greatly forward, which when Diego saw, he felt rather vexed and ashamed that he had not visited them sooner with the hoe; therefore, next morning, he took all the men with him, twelve and himself, and before night they went over the ground, dressing it clear of weeds, and loosing the earth about the young roots of the cultivated plants; and henceforth he was determined, he said, to look more closely after that plantation: on which I told him to consider the four young men just arrived as his assistants in the work.

On the return of the hoeing party on Wednesday even-

ing, I sent for Purdy, who, as has been stated, had married Allwood's daughter, and asked him if he would like to have a house and grounds near to his kinsfolk on Edward's Island. The question pleased him; but he did not seem quite sure that his wife's father and brother "would like to make a house for him."—"They shall do it for you, Purdy," said I; "if they will not do it for love, they will do it for money. But I have no doubt, if I find you materials, which I will do, they will not be backward in doing their part for you." And I must do Allwood and his son the justice to say, when I spoke to them on the subject, they did not hesitate a moment. The next day we passed over, and marked out the site of Purdy's house, in a line with theirs, so as to give each a plot of four acres of land attached. The front line of every man's lot being one hundred and ten yards, and the depth one hundred and seventy-six yards, in form of an oblong square; the front of these three lots just occupied the frontage of the cleared ground; there being still a considerable space uncleared at each end, and about one hundred yards between the lots and the beach; and, on an average, as much between them and the foot of the hills behind them, which, however, was in the form of a bow.

As we were now somewhat at leisure, I determined to commence building on the Peccary Field, for any of our relatives that might join us; and I requested Captain Drake to superintend the work. My gentle-hearted wife bore no enmity to the peccaries; and, foreseeing their destruction in this design, expressed some sorrow respecting them, requesting the Captain, if possible, to drive them back to same other part of the island, and not kill them. Captain Drake promised all grace in his power to these fierce little natives; but after he had heard my story, he did not choose to go unarmed.

On the following day, taking four men in the boat, with Lion, a couple of muskets, and four pikes, thus prepared, we set forth to fix on the spot most eligible for the contemplated building, and mark it out agreeable to a plan I took with me in my pocket; my Eliza for once desiring not to accompany me, fearing to witness what might happen to the peccaries. We landed at the bottom of the creek, amusing ourselves there a while in securing a dozen or two of thec rayfish that swarmed close to the shore, just where the run of fresh water falls into the sea. That done, we left the boat there, and took up the men to the Peccary Field, giving them each a pike. And in a short time, I fixed on a rising slope, about a quarter of a mile west of the little fresh water brook. This spot occupied the centre of the open ground: I say open, because the trees here were few and large. On this site, a space of forty-eight feet by thirty-six was marked out, so as to allow four bed-rooms, two on each side, with two saloons, for sitting-rooms, between. We had nearly finished our business, when the advance of a herd of peccaries intruded themselves: but Lion, being a quiet, though powerful dog, took little notice of them, as they showed no disposition to attack us or him; rather, indeed, seeming disposed to make acquaintance with us, and particularly with the dog; but one of them being somewhat rude in his caresses, Lion gave him a turn over, and a battle instantly began. The dog was engaged by three or four of them at the same instant, one of which he pinned to the ground; but the others, finding themselves unmolested, attacked him so furiously and effectually with their tusks, that the blood was seen streaming from his sides and shoulders: their numbers increased every minute, and he was beset on all sides; so that if we had not quickly run to his assistance, large and powerful as he was, they soon must have destroyed him.

The blacks were desired to charge the little desperadoes with their pikes, yet not until many of them were killed, did the rest make off. We pursued the retreating herd into the wood; but not a musket was fired, for fear of alarming her we had left behind at the plantation. The strong parts of the slain beasts were immediately cut out, to render the flesh eatable: and, after having satisfactorily completed the object on which we went, the party returned before sunset, with a cargo of live crayfish and dead peccaries.

On Friday morning, the Avon was loaded with building materials, the timber carriage, and pioneers' tools, for the Peccary shore; having on board Xavier and Derrick, and the two New England blacks, and the two sailor negro boys; Purdy being sent to assist his friends at the new plantation on Edward's Island. Diego found plenty of work for himself and his troop; so that we required a man at a call to be with us, who could paddle one of the small canoes anywhere that might be required; and I fixed on Martin for this purpose, and to visit the look-out at the flag-staff. In this way we proceeded, every one in his calling; sometimes taking away Purdy for a day from his friends, and sending him, with Martin, in the large canoe, for a supply of turtle; by which I saved some of our salted provisions; for the people began to tire of fish, which as yet necessarily constituted our chief animal food.

During a period of some weeks, the respective parties pursued with little variation the employments heretofore stated: my Eliza and myself, the while, using our intellectual faculties, to the best of our judgment, for the advancement of the general good, and our own comfort. Sometimes we visited our former haunts; and being now furnished with excellent boots, there was little inconve-

nience in our walking among the sand to the cocoa-nut grove, which was the only spot left where we could sit as formerly, quite by ourselves, with our dear little dog at our feet, and repose our spirits without the chance of intrusion. Sometimes while there I took off my coat, and climbed a tree with the gaskets, and brought down a few fresh cocoa-nuts to regale my sweet companion: sometimes we ate one of the melons, which grew in abundance around us; and on going away, she would collect some capsicums in a little basket, and say, "These will do for our dinner-table to-morrow, Edward." Now and then we conversed on what we had been reading, whether religious history, or only amusing story. And not unfrequently we talked over the scenes of our first days in this Bethel of the desert; and then, perhaps, turning our eyes to where Captain Drake and his party were at work, anticipated the day in which we should see some of our dearest friends inhabit that pleasant spot. We seemed afraid to cast a glance on the subject of our wealth: but it happened one day, that my Eliza asked me how much a year the money which had been placed in the funds would produce?—"About 2000*l.* a year, my love," I replied.—"Then, my honoured husband," said she, surely you will never again send a hundred poor turtles to the butcher, to save 200*l.* or 300*l.*!" The rebuke was just: few but herself would have made such a use of the information she had required; and I took shame to myself, on the instant she so expressed herself,—promising I never would repeat such an act again.

Friday, September 5th.—Allwood reported the three houses finished on Edward's Island; and Diego stated many articles of the harvest, ready for getting in. I told Allwood, as soon as the crop was taken up, the allotments of land round the three houses should be marked out; but

that, meanwhile, he and his son must immediately join the building party at Peccary Field, to earn some money to pay for his supplies; and this was readily acceded to, and gladly acted on. Diego required no additional hands at the harvest, taking time by the forelock; and as he cleared the grounds of it at Edward's Island, he housed it in one of the new buildings. Early in October the whole produce of all our plantations was got in and housed; that from the opposite island being brought over. The plantation-storehouse, and little shed, being filled, a considerable quantity was carried to the great storehouse of the cave. In this gathering, to my great surprise, there were three flour barrels filled with pressed tobacco leaves, of excellent quality. There had been no want, certainly, of that article heretofore; but, till now, it had not been well cured, and therefore, although our Spaniards were not bad cigar makers, I never could use our own manufacture with any degree of pleasure. And for the same reason, a few of my Havanna cigars, given to the men, had always been considered as a treat; Diego usually saying that his cigars were only "Cabana," alluding to their cottage manufacture.

Tuesday, October 14th.—It was now the time to fulfil my engagements to Allwood's family; and to this end, I sent for the three men, and told them the wood and other materials that had been used in building the houses, I should consider as a set-off against their labour in erecting them, for an occupation of seven years; that four acres of cleared ground were to be attached to each habitation, for which they should pay a dollar yearly per acre, as rent during that term, but nothing for the houses; and that, if they behaved well, the lease should be from time to time renewed on such terms as at the time might be just and reasonable; and that this, and all other rents,

were intended, under present circumstances, to form a public fund, for any future occasion that might arise for the benefit of the colony. There were no objections started to these proposals; therefore writings were delivered to each of the men, to this purport. "And now," said I, "let your wives come to the storehouse, and furnish themselves with kettles and earthenware, knives and forks, and every other thing requisite to make your homes comfortable: as to tables and chairs, and such like, you can make those yourselves, at your leisure, and I will provide you with mahogany for the purpose. When you have taken your families to live on Edward's Island, you shall draw rations weekly, which will be charged to you. But I will make you a present of one of the small canoes among you, or rather to the township; and at my expense, Diego and his lads shall set up your hurdle enclosures. So that you, Mr. Allwood, and your son, may continue to work at Peccary Field." These propositions were well received, and the women lost no time in making their demands upon the storehouse in consequence; but, like some other people who have an account with a tradesman, their orders were rather large: however, I desired they should have whatever they required; and accordingly they fitted up their three houses very comfortably. Within a few days, I paid a visit to the new hamlet, and without any difficulty subdivided the twelve acres into three equal allotments; the shape of the cleared ground having been so well adapted for division. When I had marked the corners, I left Diego with his train to set about the work of enclosure, which in the end proved tedious, as there was much difficulty in finding small wood for the purpose, without cutting down some large trees; most of the branches of those which had been felled on clearing the place, having been

cut up, and carried to the neighbourhood of our residence, to be piled for fuel: however, by Saturday the 25th of October, he had completed his task, and all was in due order at Allwood's Plantations; for so we now called it.

The house of Peccary Field, having been three months in hand, was beginning to make a respectable appearance; therefore I thought Manus Allwood might be spared from the work awhile, to make the necessary furniture for himself and friends; and I told him so, lest he and they might feel sore at the delay I had already occasioned. Two of Diego's patriarchs were added to the strength of the building party, and the other two left with the Don, to keep our place in order. Purdy was also allowed to give his whole time at home for a while to make fish-pots, and to assist the women in various other domestic provisions and arrangements necessary to the future comfort of people newly settled. Having the canoe, he could provide them with fish; and I gave him a cask, to sink as a conservatory for any superabundance he might occasionally take.

My Eliza now sent for the wives of old Allwood, and Manus, and Purdy, and gave to each of them six young hens and a cock, and as many ducks apiece; also to each a young she goat, and one male amongst the whole party. She told them these were her presents, and that all she requested in return, was, for the women to take all our guinea-fowls with them, in charge for us; rearing new broods, and providing us with eggs, and galenas for the table, when required; adding, that she had arranged it with me, that I should give them a weekly allowance of corn for all their poultry, free of any cost to them, until their own harvest came round. The women expressed much gratitude; making many professions of the warmest attachment. Their kind friend then said at parting—

"Remember, nothing but sickness must ever prevent your attendance here on the Sabbath! And on that day, a dinner will be provided for you after divine service." They took their leave, loaded with their poultry, and dragging their goats along with them, well satisfied with my gracious Eliza, and her kind and useful presents. On the same evening, their husbands came to thank her also; so they were all made happy, but she the happiest of the party.—"Mercy is twice blessed!" says our inspired Shakspeare; and I say—so is every act of kindness:—"it blesses him that gives, and him that takes;" but most the giver.

CHAPTER XVI.

Sunday, October 26th.—We were much pleased with the improved devotion of all our people this day; and afterwards, with the great progress many of them had made, in reading words of one and two syllables, in sentences conveying sense and meaning.

Monday, 27th.—It had been my orders for some time back, for a regular look-out every day at sunrise, from the flag-staff; and Martin being in the way, whose regular business it was, he reported a brig in the offing. In consequence, I detained Captain Drake, who went with me to the height; and, with the glass, we discovered a union jack flying at the fore-top-gallant mast-head of the brig. I despatched Martin with the information to my wife, desiring him at the same time to tell her not to be alarmed, as we intended to fire the gun, when we hoisted our colours. Martin was also directed to get the Avon ready to go out of harbour, by the time Captain Drake should come down from the height. The shot was then drawn from the gun, and the match lighted; and having given Martin plenty of time to deliver his message, the piece was fired, and the colours hoisted; which was answered from the brig, by the union jack being hauled down, and the ensign hoisted at the main. From this moment I had no doubt of its being Captain Taylor, returned to us in our own ark, and perhaps bringing with him some of our family. I hastened to apprise the dear partner of all my cares and joys of my anticipations. A thousand fond ideas flashed across her mind, the moment I spoke; and in her transport she threw herself on my breast, saying, "Oh, my dear

Edward! if——" then pausing, added—"but just as it may please God! I will not venture to say more. He is our gracious God, and kind Father, and I rest confidently on his goodness: be it as he will!"

The Avon was quickly under weigh, having Captain Drake on board, with the schooner's crew. As soon as she made sail, I despatched Allwood and Manus in the small boat, to tell their wives what the business was, and to bring them back with them if they pleased; but that I did not intend to give any merry-making until after the vessel's departure; considering that the presence of the strange sailors on such occasions, might lead to some unpleasant irregularities.

When the boats were fairly off, my dear wife and myself climbed the promontory; and by the time we had placed ourselves under the colours, we saw the Avon go alongside of the brig, as she lay-to, with the main-topsail aback. They both quickly made sail, the Avon leading, and soon we had the pleasure to see them approach near to the promontory, when I perceived a female on deck. On this discovery, we hastened down to receive them, with our hearts full of tender wishes, notwithstanding higher feelings of resignation. But nature will speak, if it be but in a whisper. And as we watched the vessels coming round the point, that whisper was loud enough to be felt, if not heard; the heart beat high and irregularly, and we could not prevent it. I put the glass to my eye, and now saw distinctly my brother, and my Eliza's sister, Amelia, on the quarter-deck of the brig, looking towards us.—"They are indeed there, my best beloved!" I exclaimed, "your sister Amelia and my brother!"—"Blessed be God!" she said, and sunk into my arms. The struggle within her had been great, to repress these emotions; but now that they had burst the bounds of

restraint, she was overcome. In a little, she sighed deeply, then by degrees raised up her head and smiled, looking earnestly towards the vessel. The schooner's best boat had been manned with Diego and Xavier, and the Allwoods, who had just returned with the women from the opposite shore; so that the moment the brig dropped anchor, we stepped in, and rowed alongside. My dear Eliza, with the agility of a kid, sprung up on deck, and I quickly followed her. We each flew into the arms of the children of our fathers. Blessed moment! blessed by Him we adore! and blessed by many an eye that saw it!

I was glad to see Captain Taylor again, and shook him heartily by the hand; then embarking in the boat, for the shore, with our brother and sister, who had become doubly so by their intermarriage, I requested Captain Taylor to join us at dinner; at the same time taking him aside, I told him my restrictions respecting his crew; but added, that fish and vegetables should immediately be sent off for their refreshment. Our people waited to greet our coming friends, upon the beach, with every testimony of respectful attachment; but our domestics alone followed us to the mansion. Here we welcomed our dear guests with a new embrace; my beloved wife saying, "This is indeed a happy day to us."—"And to us also, my dear Eliza," replied her sister.

They now expressed their surprise at every thing around them,—the stupendous hill, the placid and extensive lake, the beautiful shores that seemed to surround it on every side, and the little settlement opposite did not escape their observation.—"And is it here you were wrecked, brother?" said James.—"Yes," I replied; "here; we will point out the exact spot to you by and by."—"But this island is not the uncivilised, half deso-

late place, in which we expected to find you," returned he.—"No," replied my Eliza; "our God has made the wilderness to blossom as the rose! and when we were thrown on this coast, Edward and I, and Fidele here, were all our company."—"O Fidele!" cried Amelia, the little creature at last attracting her attention, "come here." The fond animal, on being spoke to, raised its fore-feet on her knee, and seemed to devour her hand with caresses.—"You know me then, Fidele?" continued she. On which the kind little creature redoubled its fondness, as much as to say, "I do indeed remember you." The ladies now soon retired to the bedchamber, and I requested my brother to walk down with me to the beach. We met Diego by the way. "Hark you," said I, "lodge the four lads in the plank-house, and remove all the stores out of our store-room into the house on the north; and have a good lock fitted to it, and some shelves instantly put up there, for the reception of the things that may require them." Diego bowed more elegantly than usual, but without speaking a word, and retired to execute the orders I had given him.—"Is that a negro?" said my brother; "I should say he is a very well-bred man."—"How can it be otherwise, brother," I replied, smiling; "is not he at court? He is my minister for the home department." This sally made James smile in return; but he evidently did not know whether to consider me in jest or earnest.

That there might not be any confusion in carrying the things through the hall, out of the store-room, during dinner, they were all removed without loss of time, and the floor of the vacated room washed out. At the appointed hour, we had the pleasure to see the two skippers walk into the hall; and our brother and sister, well dressed, quickly after make their appearance; so that

dinner had not to wait for the guests, nor the guests for the dinner,—a point of some importance to all parties; for without this observance, either the dinner is spoiled by waiting for the guests, or the appetite of the guests taken away by waiting for the dinner. During the repast, Mrs. Rota had many commendations for her excellent fare, and still more exquisite cookery; but our dear relations, as they sat at table, were more delighted with the fine view through the open doors, than with all the cunning of Dame Rota's cookery. After dinner we had the best dessert our island could afford; our first pine-apple was cut for the occasion; Diego had brought in some ripe bananas from the wild plants near the spring, to which was added a fine musk-melon, cut in the dell since we sat down to dinner. With such a display, and a bottle of Canary, I was enabled to entertain our friends nobly. The Captains, with becoming delicacy, left us at an early hour, to smoke their cigars on board. After they were gone, our second bedstead was put into the room that had been prepared for it, and three or four chairs, with a small table; and the second chest of drawers, with all other requisites, as far as our means would go, were got in, and arranged for the comfort and accommodation of the welcome accession to our family. Being alone, we now talked over family affairs, and read the letters they had brought with them from Awbury, which afforded a heartfelt pleasure to us both. After the letters had been perused, and many a kind word had passed from the lips of my Eliza, in affectionate acknowledgment of what her much revered father had written to her and to myself, we entered generally on the subject of family affairs, in the course of which her sister took occasion to say,—"So you perceive that we were determined to lose no time in joining you; for as no one would

have me, and nobody would have James,—is it not so, James?" continued she, "we cut the matter short, and followed your example."—"You little monkey!" cried her husband, "you know I had long pined to make myself happy with you, but only wanted those means which our kind brother here, so unexpectedly afforded us."—"All is well," rejoined my Eliza; "and that same brother will do every thing in his power, to make you both comfortable here, now that you have confided yourselves to his friendship." On her saying this, I took my brother's hand, which was the best speech I could make on the occasion. Our conversation next turned on my uncle, whose letter by them I had not yet read, but which I begged leave now to open. I read it to myself, and smiled:—"This is a very different letter from the last, my dear Eliza," said I, putting it in my pocket. "And there is a little postscript in it, from my good old aunt, telling me the Virginian nightingale is well; and if I have any other pretty thing to send her, Captain Taylor will take charge of it. You may, perhaps, think of something for her, dearest," continued I. All matters uppermost being now nearly exhausted, we took coffee, and soon after retired to rest.

Tuesday, 28th.—Captain Taylor waited on me early in the morning, telling me, he wished to proceed to the Bay of Honduras without loss of time, as my cousin would be expecting his arrival with anxiety; and, therefore, forthwith he would land the supplies which had been shipped for me by my uncle's orders. I told him to do so; and that I certainly would take what my uncle had sent out by him on my account, although I had not ordered anything of my uncle; and there were many things in the inventory useless to us, and many others we did not want. Among the former were blankets and

candle moulds; among the latter, large quantities of bottled beer and cheese. However, there was much welcome matter in the provision way, and otherwise. In short, such an assortment as would be ordered by a person keeping a general store in any of the West India islands.

The amount of the invoice was 480*l.*; but my uncle had not counted without his host: he had learned from Captain Taylor that I had brought an iron chest well filled with money from Jamaica, although he could not devise how I came by it; neither could the captain furnish him with any information beyond surmises. The story of our attack on the Guarda Costa's boat, having been magnified so as to throw a wonderful light on the subject, my uncle, in his letter, says (in that familiar phraseology which he sometimes chose to use in writing, as well as in speaking)—"Eh, Ned! 'tis well thee didst not lose either life or limb in the attack on the *Galleon;* how much did come to thy share?—'Tis a secret, may be! thee must have got a pretty penny; did hear thou hast a large iron chest full, besides the schooner thou bought, and what didst send to Awbury: well, thou art a good-hearted fellow, Ned: and now thy brother and his wife wish to join thee, I will let Taylor take them out for 20*l.* a head, in his way to the Bay; as he tells me he can pop in on you, without going much out of his way; and I take upon me to send thee out an investment by him, of which thee mayest take much, or little, or all: but the goods are shipped purposely for thee; and thou mayest make good profit on them, if thou knowest how; but if thou wilt not take them, I may be loser. The amount, to be sure, is large, but if not convenient to pay ready money (for which will allow five per cent. discount), thee shall have credit for twelve months, till Taylor makes his next voyage." My uncle enclosed in his letter a counter-statement to mine, re-

specting the disbursements for the brig, and the prices of the things I had taken out of her while she lay a wreck; contriving to make the balance considerably more in his own favour than I had done; however, I resolved to let it pass, without objection or comment, and pay agreeable to his own statement. After breakfast, Captain Drake employed himself in taking an inventory of the things landed, and in superintending their removal to the great storehouse. Meanwhile I was engaged in settling accounts with Captain Taylor; in doing which I took my uncle at his word, deducting five per cent. from the amount of the invoice; a subtraction, in truth, it could well bear. This being done, I gave Captain Taylor a set of bills on Messrs. Perry and Co. of London, for the amount of the invoice, and balance of the other accounts, for which I took his receipts.

Our dear friends from Awbury had not burdened themselves with many matters beyond their wardrobe, so that all their moveables were soon conveyed into our mansion. During my counting-house occupations, my wife and her sister, with James also, were busily employed in writing long letters to England, in which I interrupted Eliza, saying—"Go, dear, and put up a piece of the silver tissue for my aunt, and tell her it came from China: which I believe it did, some how or other! and write her a few lines with my love." I then sat down and wrote my own letters to England; which were rather short, but I hope to the purpose. I next dashed off a very brief but civil one to my cousin at George's Key; while my Eliza, by my desire, ordered a certain number of ducks and fowls, and melons, to be put on board the brig as a present for him, together with some yams for the crew. When all these proceedings were completed, it was too late for the brig to go out of harbour that day, seeing she

had at least five leagues to run, before she could be considered in the fair way beyond the shoals and reefs.

After work, the brig's crew were regaled again to-day with fresh fish and vegetables; and in the evening were allowed to go ashore on the isthmus, to amuse themselves by walking anywhere, except crossing the streamlet to the southward. We found there was some difficulty in getting this order obeyed; which led me to the determination, on some future day, to make a strong palisadoe (with a gate in it), from the sea to the face of the promontory, for the purpose of fencing in my own residence. We did not dine till three o'clock to-day, every one being closely employed, to enable Captain Taylor to sail in the morning.

During dinner, at which Drake was present, Taylor often expressed his great pleasure in the progress every day produced in the comforts of our little colony. His observation, I confess, delighted me not a little. But he added—" I don't see how you are to get any trade here." —" O!" I replied, with a grave air, " we can board a galleon now and then; that will do." — James and he glanced at each other.—" My dear brother," said Eliza, " you look like Gil Blas, when he saw Captain Rolando! Do you really think my husband is a pirate?—he is only playing off a joke at your uncle's expense; who says, in his letter, that *hopes Edward had a good share of the galleon he boarded!* Now that impression must have arisen from something you told him, Captain Taylor," added she, addressing Taylor, " about capturing the Guarda Costa's boat, with the two Bermudians; and that is the galleon floating in his brain." James and his wife now laughed, and Captain Taylor began to explain; but we soon perceived, by his confused apology, that he had said rather more to my uncle than had been quite correct: however,

it was of no great importance, and we passed it all over as a matter of pleasantry.

It was dark when the coffee was served this evening, so that the glass shades were placed over the candles. Amelia admired them very much. "So elegant," she said, "in their appearance, and so useful in completely protecting the flame from the current of air!" which, indeed, was pretty fresh sometimes, as we permitted it to perflate our dwelling by night as well as by day. She did not, however, seem as pleased with my cigar; and she openly expressed her dislike, when James discovered an inclination to join me. — "Amelia," said my dear wife, "we must lodge you in the plank-house, for a few evenings, where we were; and you will soon be glad to get enveloped in this delicious smoke, to protect you from the tormenting bites of myriads of sand-flies."—"Very well," she replied, "when the sand-flies bite, he may smoke! But, at no time I can ever like it. Gentlemen never smoke in England, till they are half a hundred years old, and then they use a handsome pipe, which certainly in an old gentleman's hand looks something respectable; like a justice of the peace! but as to these cigars, they remind me of dirty boys, trying to smoke a piece of stick."—Eliza and I looked at each other, and smiled. At this moment our captains came in, who had left us soon after dinner; and they joined me in the fumation, to the great amusement of my dear wife, who wished to see her sister smoked out of her prejudices, as she had avowed they could not be overcome in any other way.

In the evening, after we retired, my Eliza told me that her sister had taken a clandestine peep into the iron chest, during the minute or two it was left open, when she was bringing the tissue to me. My dear wife owned herself

vexed at the spirit of the action, and therefore had gently chided her; telling her she was welcome to look into any of her sister's drawers, but never again to attempt to pry into anything that more especially belonged to her husband, "whose desk, or other lock-up places," I told her, "even myself did not presume to look into without his permission. I was sorry," added my gentle love, "to be obliged to say so much to my sister; but I had met an attempt on her part to sift the secret of your wealth, at an earlier hour this morning; and I determined instantly to crush the spirit at once in her, on discovering her peeping into the iron chest."—"I, too, am sorry for this, dearest," returned I; "for doubts between relatives are ugly things."—"O never mind, we shall be as good friends as ever," she replied; "and now the ground is made sure."

Wednesday, 29th.—Captain Taylor took his leave as soon as the sea-breeze freshened; and the Avon got under weigh with him, to see him clear of the shoals, by the same passage he had entered the harbour. After breakfast, James and I went out together to visit the several houses on the plantation, and to show him other parts of my little domain. He was delighted with the finely-shaded walk through the woodland region, and with the gush of water that burst from the cliff. I showed him our wooden palace, and described to him how I built it with my own hands. I then took him to the inlet, where the kind providence of God had placed the brig, after delivering us from the reefs and rocks; the situation of which I also pointed out to him. I then took him into the recess where once the thicket stood, and showed him our extensive storehouse, and the spacious cavern within it, which much excited his astonishment. He said, the place, taken altogether, the depth of the recess, the per-

pendicular of the rock, its vast altitude, the completeness and fulness of the storehouse, and the extent and wonderful appearance of the cave, with the light coming in through the rock behind, filled his mind with something like the idea of an enchanted cavern. "Now, James," said I, "you must take charge of all these things, and keep books of them regularly, as I have done; and I will allow you a hundred a year for doing it; and as soon as circumstances may permit, you shall commence trading as a merchant, and all the money you can make shall be your own. I will give you a house, and lands, and servants; and I will enable you to start fair, unencumbered, and in the possession of every requisite for success."—"My dear brother," he replied, "I will be guided entirely by you; and, under that guidance, act precisely as you may point out; and, I hope, I shall not be ungrateful for your kindness."

The Avon returned about half-past twelve o'clock, and after the people had dined, we proceeded in her to Peccary Field, where the carpenters were at work. "That is a capital looking house," observed James, as we drew near the little bay.—"I hope, my dear brother," I replied, "it will be a commodious one. It is in the best situation on George's Island, and it is intended for you."—"Indeed!" he said: "but why not for yourself?"—"O, no," was my reply; "we should always treat our friends better than ourselves." Lion met us on the beach: I had given orders that he should be of the party, to keep the peccaries at a distance, and ultimately, if possible, to drive them altogether from the place. We were quite delighted with the approach to the building, and more so with the fine view from it, embracing a great part of the lake, the promontory, and our settlement: also the opposite coast of Edward's Island, with Allwood's plantation.

"This is, indeed," exclaimed James, "a charming spot." The house was now quite up, and the carpenters in the act of putting on the shingles; so that, externally, it had all the appearance of being complete. "In a couple of months," said I, "you will be able to inhabit it, if you please. But I advise you to remain with us till the latter end of February; by which time I shall be able to fit up the interior, and to furnish you with a suitable establishment." After perambulating the adjacent shore and grounds, we returned, bringing Drake along with us to dinner. James was full of what he had seen; so that the moment he entered the hall, he began to tell his wife of the wonders he had encountered beyond the woodlands, and of the fine house I had built for them at Peccary Field; and during dinner he continued to talk of nothing but what he had seen; so that our sister was quite agog to go over the ground again with him, which I promised she should do to-morrow.

Thursday, 30th.—Captain Drake was desired to send off the Avon, with the men and their requisites, to the creek; and to attend on my brother and his wife with the schooner's large boat, and row them to Peccary Field. My dear Eliza took care to put up a basket with refreshments, and a bottle of wine for the party; not forgetting a few cigars, by way of a little innocent mischief. Now Drake was fond of a cigar, like the Spaniards, at all hours; and we well knew he would not miss the treat, whenever he saw one near him; and strange to say, when he did turn to, to regale himself in this manner, Amelia began to find a cigar not quite so abominable a thing as she had declared it to be. On their return, our sister seemed quite delighted with the day's excursion; and while describing to us the pleasant spot at the head of the creek, where they had spread forth the contents of

the basket, under the ample shade of a fine tamarind-tree, she added, "After enjoying our cold meat, and wine with water from the little stream that ran at our feet, I confess I really found the smoke of Captain Drake's cigar by no means disagreeable." This confession drew forth a smile from Eliza. But all the party, as well as the lady, were pleased with the day's amusement, and enjoyed the fumes of the cigar. Our sister, however, cherished one gratifying recollection beyond either of her companions; which was, the superior appearance of the house and ground destined for her abode.

During the absence of the party, my dear Eliza and myself had felt quite happy in being again alone; and we could not help saying to each other, that, when we reflected on the bliss we enjoyed when no other human being was on the island but ourselves, and on the inexpressible relief we found in the temporary absence of even our dearest friends, we must draw the conclusion that the happiness of those who truly love each other, cannot be improved by any other mortal intercourse—God and ourselves being to ourselves all in all. "But man was made for society, dearest," rejoined I; "and it is, therefore, our duty to sacrifice even our happiness to our usefulness."—"And it is this reflection, my honoured husband," she replied, "that reconciles me to all the stir and bustle we have brought upon ourselves; certainly, at the expense of our own immediate enjoyment."*

Friday, 31st.—Martin reported a sail in the offing just after sunrise. Captain Drake immediately ascended the

* The Editor does not quite approve this exclusive theory of happiness, declared by her sweet heroine; herself feeling, that every view of virtuous happiness enjoyed by others, redoubles the individual happiness of him or her who beholds it. And, this widely reflected happiness, is one of the promised enjoyments of heaven!

New Edition, July, 1841.

promontory; and having hoisted the colours, sent down Martin to tell me it was a Spanish unarmed schooner. My good friend soon after followed his messenger. "I think she wants to come in," said he to me: "she is lying to."—"Very well," returned I: "go out to her with the Avon; but arm the boat's crew, for fear of a trap, and take Xavier to interpret." He did all I directed; and in half an hour sailed out of the harbour. Diego sounded the bugle, and Manus and Purdy instantly came over in the canoe. I then took some of the men with me to the height, to be ready with a shot, if there should be any hostile intention. But I soon perceived all was right, seeing the Spaniard follow in the wake of the Avon. However, as this fellow would carry some report of us somewhere, I thought it prudent to put on my commander's uniform; and give a musket and accoutrements to Allwood and his son (who had both been militiamen at Jamaica), and post them as sentinels; one at the landing-place near the Black Rock, and the other to walk to and fro on the open ground before the mansion. When the Spaniard came to an anchor, I sent my brother in the four-oared boat, to bring the captain on shore. When he made his appearance, I received him with all the importance and gravity of a Spanish hidalgo; which did not fail to make the desired impression. Diego was standing behind my chair; but my Eliza and her sister were in one of the bed-rooms.—"Where did you come from?"—"From Santa Martha."—"Where are you bound?"—"To the Havanna."—"What do you want here?"—"I have sprung a leak; and, seeing the land, stood in as far as I could for the breakers; and hoisted my colours, in hope of relief."—"Do you know where you are?"—"I am not sure," he replied; "I believe these islands are called the Serranhas;

but no one ever thinks of coming near them, if he can help it, on account of the shoals and reefs."—"This is St. George's Island; in the dominion of the King of England," replied I: "you will know it again, I hope, when you see it! Your schooner shall be repaired with all possible despatch.—What is your cargo?"—"Cacao, xinchona, vanilla, dye-woods, wax, and some dollars."

I now sent for Drake, and desired him to take the Porghee alongside of the Spaniard, and assist him to unload with all speed; and, while his schooner was heaving down, to give the Spanish captain share of his cabin; but to lodge the crew in the Avon; and not to allow any of them to stray into the settlement. I bade him make sentinels of the Bermudians and New Englanders, four hours and four about, at the Black Rock; and to set the four carpenters at work on the vessel's bottom, as soon as she was hove down. This was quite enough for Drake: he was master of my hints in a moment, and put them in execution. But he moreover suggested to me the policy of firing a morning and evening gun, while the Spaniard was here; to which I instantly acceded. Accordingly, at sunset he fired the gun, and hauled down the colours; and again in the morning, when they were hoisted: and this he continued punctually to do while the foreign schooner remained.

Saturday, 1st November.—They had got out great part of the cargo into the Porghee; and as we did not know what to do with the Spaniards on Sunday, I, on mature deliberation, determined, that as they were birds of passage, and could not join in our devotions, to leave them to themselves to do as they pleased; which was to continue at the work of getting out their cargo.

Sunday, 2d.—The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock; and all the settlement were soon present, excepting Cap-

tain Drake and the sentinel on guard. Every one came dressed in their best; and our brother and sister were much impressed by the scene they witnessed. I believe it raised us higher in their esteem, than all our wealth. The teaching, however, was this day dispensed with; having desired Diego to make the people walk by twos and threes on the isthmus; and to row to different places backwards and forward all day in the boats, and in the canoes, both men and women; so as to impress our visiters with a belief that we were more numerous than in reality we were. The settlement at Allwood's Plantation made a respectable appearance; and the empty house at Peccary Field looked very grand; so that by this stratagem, and the firing of the gun, I hoped to obviate any despicable opinion the stranger might otherwise conceive of the English colony in these islands.

Monday, 3d.—By middle day, the Spaniard had got out all his cargo, and was brought alongside of the Black Rock; and there soon hove keel out. She had started a plank, and it is only to be wondered that she did not founder; for it was loosened fore and aft. Formidable as this accident really was, it could be repaired in a day: I therefore, putting on my ordinary dress, went with my brother in a boat to the rock; and, calling Xavier, told him to tell the Spanish captain to walk up to the store, and see if there were any things he would wish to buy, or to take in barter, for some of his cargo. All our people knew the policy of my conduct towards the Spaniard, and therefore concealed from him my being the same person he saw in the commandant's uniform: and having now put aside my wig, as well as my laced suit, I might well personate some other individual. The captain readily accompanied us to the storehouse, where Diego and two of his patriarchs were apparently employed. Xavier then

returned to his work; and I desired Diego to show the Captain the hams, and cheese, and some of the hardware and crockery. He asked the price of the various articles, of which we informed him, having the invoices with the prices in our hands; but laying on the usual Jamaica advance, of 50 per cent., exclusive of the difference of currency. He seemed very well satisfied with the prices; and picked out several cheeses, and a quantity of checks, and linens, and hardware, and crockeryware, for which he paid in dollars to the amount of 700; and said, he would call at the island, on his return from the Havanna, and take some of the other articles, as well as more of those he had already selected, as he could find a good market for them at Santa Martha. I desired him to enumerate the things he would most want, that I might ensure a supply for him; and asked him when we might expect him again. He replied, "in about two months and a half." I then desired him to bring me twenty boxes of cigars.

A new plank was put into the schooner, and caulked, and the seams payed over, before Tuesday night. So that, on Wednesday, he re-embarked his own cargo from the Porghee, and also took in that he had purchased from us from the store; making room in his vessel, by leaving out some of the dye-woods, which I bought of him for a mere trifle.

I charged him only 40 dollars for repairing the schooner, which he paid with great satisfaction; and on Thursday, the Avon accompanied him clear off the reefs, through the same channel by which he had entered. On the return of the Avon, I assembled the people, to praise their good and judicious conduct during the stay of the schooner; and I then distributed the 40 dollars among them, not forgetting my six young bondmen; but to each

of the carpenters, including my poor slave Allan Derrick, I gave five dollars. "Tank you, massa," said he; "you treat me same as free man."—"Yes, Derrick," I replied, "no one shall feel here that he is not free, unless he is bad; and all who are not free, who continue good for seven years in my service, I will then give to them their freedom."—"Tank you, massa," cried the poor negro, clapping his hands; and all around joined in the acclamation.

I brought the bag of dollars I had received from the Spaniard, into my own room, on my return to the house with James, after distributing the amount paid for repairing the schooner among the people. "Now," said I to my brother, "let us make an entry of this transaction in the books." And while we were so employed in the hall, our wives joined us. I then left James writing; and brought the bag of dollars out of our room, and placed it on the table. "Here, brother," resumed I, "calculate the freight and insurance on the goods we have sold; add to that the invoice prices; and see what profit arises."—"The invoice prices, said he, "amount to 111*l.* sterling, and the freight, etc, say to 9*l.*, making 120*l.* sterling, which is 504 dollars."—"Well, then, James," returned I, counting out 196 dollars from the bag; "there is the profit for you, and thus I will deal with you as long as we are brothers." He was overpowered by my generosity, and Amelia also; who said—"It is no wonder, Edward, you are so rich, if money comes in like this!" The sight of so many dollars was a novelty to her; and while she was turning over the splendid coin, her sister brought her out an empty bag from our coffers, to put them in. Poor souls! they were quite overjoyed at this commencement of their good fortune: we, although not thus exhilarated, joined in their pleasurable feelings; and

being relieved from the care which the presence of the Spaniard had occasioned, sat down in high spirits to our excellent dinner. But we did not feast alone: an ample repast was provided on this occasion for the people, under the cotton tree, where they regaled themselves with unusual festivity.

Captain Drake dined with us; and we laughed heartily, over a good bowl of punch, at our grand display of a flag, a cannon, a fine coat, a wig, and a sentinel, to our Spanish visiters.

We did not sit long over our glass; my brother and Drake and the ladies making a visit to the joyous group at the head of the glade; leaving me at home, by my own request, to meditate on a measure which the visit of the Spaniard had induced me to consider. I was not long in determining on the expediency of immediately doing what my mind had suggested for consideration. Having come to the determination, I quickly conceived the details of the business; so that when the party returned, I told Captain Drake I found it expedient to send him to Jamaica. "Therefore," said I, "get the schooner ready for sea to-morrow; take out the bricks, and ballast her with limestone from the rocks of the promontory; then take in the dye-woods, and your orders shall be ready for you, and you shall sail on Saturday morning." —"It shall be done, sir," he replied; and before the people dispersed, he went out to them, and informed them of his intended speedy departure. But they had no money at present to send for commissions, nor did they require anything. It was necessary, however, that the sailor men should know of the intention, that they might be ready accordingly. This measure was not taken on account of goods wanted for the Spaniard; our store was yet well supplied; but I wanted more strength, and

some things for my brother's house. I therefore chose to embrace the interval of the Spaniard's absence, to have this voyage made, which, at any rate, must otherwise have soon been undertaken. When my soul's partner and I retired to our own room, I explained to her the objects I had in view by sending off the Porghee so suddenly. We consulted together on the subject, during the greater part of the night, discovering every now and then something more that would be desirable for Drake to accomplish when at Kingston. And having, at last, satisfied our minds with a full contemplation of the matter, we offered up our prayers at the throne of grace; and then, endeavouring to dismiss all worldly care, resigned ourselves to the welcome influence of sleep.

Friday, 7th. — We were all busily employed this morning, in writing to England; my wife, and her sister, to our friends; I transcribing duplicates of letters, with bills, given to Captain Taylor for my uncle, together with an order for goods by the Mary next year. I wrote also to Perry and Co., and to Mr. Green, at Kingston. These done, I made out Captain Drake's orders, desiring him to procure two sawyers and one bricklayer, all free people, if he could find them. I did not care whether they were whites, blacks, or mulattoes, with or without families. But if he could not procure free people, he was to purchase slave workmen; single men, if he could get them; but if not, to take husbands, wives, and children, at a fair price. Also, to buy seven young negro men, and four young females newly arrived from Guinea; and to take in bricks, planks, boards, one hundred bushels of maize, bales of negro clothing, bales of checks and stripes, boxes of linen, boxes of large coloured handkerchiefs for the head, bales of leather, two grindstones, packages of hoes and bill-hooks, bags of nails, etc., agreeable to

memoranda of items, and one chest of tea; also household furniture, as per memorandum; and to bring with him a fast-rowing six-oared boat; also twenty stand of arms more, with accoutrements; and to procure fifty suits of soldiers' clothing, if possible.

By the evening, the schooner was ready for sea; and the wages of Martin and Purdy, and the two New Englanders, Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, were now paid up to the day. On receiving their money, Martin and Purdy expressed a desire to take their wives to Kingston; and Hall and Hacket asked me if I would give them houses and a piece of ground, if they could bring wives with them from Jamaica. I granted both these requests, of which I informed Captain Drake, when I put my papers into his hand; telling him, at the same time, to be very careful on his return, to preserve propriety in the schooner; and to give the women the steerage entirely to themselves, with directions to the wives of the men going out, to take special charge of the brides and negro girls. My dear wife hearing this, sent for Mira, Martin's wife, into our bed-room, and there gave her some useful advice, following it up by a present of ten dollars.

Saturday, 8th.—Early in the morning Captain Drake came to take leave, when I counted him down 225 doubloons, equal to 3500 dollars, which is about 860*l.* sterling; but desired him, with a smile, to bring back as many of the gold pieces as he could; that sum being, indeed, quite sufficient to cover the whole order, supposing he should be obliged to purchase all the articles wanted. He got under weigh about nine o'clock, and passed through the northern channel, with a fine breeze, at E. by N., carrying the good wishes of the settlement in his wake, for him and his crew; who were now not only our fellow-settlers, but our fellow-worshippers, and

bound up with us in one interest, and in one faith, serving each other in love.

Three carpenters were still kept on at Peccary Field house, to finish the interior, in doing which they required no extra assistance. Manus continued at Allwood's Plantation, making furniture; and Diego and his four men being now at leisure, had set about completing the painting of the great storehouse, roof and sides, and all the houses on our plantation, excepting the mansion. One of the two poultry girls was added to the washerwomen, in lieu of Mira; a single "henwife" (as my father used to call such a person in his farm) being found quite enough for the business, since its management had become better understood. Still there was plenty to do, notwithstanding the late abstraction of poultry for Allwood's Plantation; for the young broods of geese, turkeys, ducks, and fowls were numerous, and the whole flock, taken together, quite a swarm. Besides, the pigs had multiplied from four to twenty-four, and the goats, after sending away four to Allwood's settlement, still numbered ten. It is true that Diego's men looked after the pigs; which now had a commodious sty, boarded off for them in the S. E. corner of the great stoccade, never being allowed to range about but when Abel, or some other of the patriarchs, could be spared to run at their heels.

Sunday, 9th.—We enjoyed our assembling together on the Sabbath, in happy quietness; no hurry of spirits, no distraction of thought: and our school, after prayers, was strictly attended to; in which duty our brother and sister cheerfully lent their aid, and I was happy to see their zeal in the business.

Monday, 10th.—Our men having their several occupations assigned them, at which they were to continue till finished, I took this opportunity of making my brother

master of the books, and of the principles on which they were kept, with respect to the people. Even Diego's department, and that of the stock, were represented by figures.

We now found leisure to enjoy ourselves with our dear friends, in personal recreations. Sometimes we walked abroad in the cool of the morning on the beach, collecting shells; or, when the sun was high, reposed under the shade of one of our numerous fine trees, and there read books of amusement,—Gil Blas, or the Arabian Nights' Entertainments, or Swift's Gulliver. But my dear Eliza's favourite was the Paradise Lost of Milton, which, with a few other choice books, her father had sent to her by Amelia. From this sublime work she would sometimes read a fine passage to us, and always with great pathos; for her soul was in the subject, and she therefore did the author justice. I will not, however, dissemble, that my evening cigar, a gratification not quite so elevated, in which now my brother heartily joined, afforded great pleasure both to ourselves and to our wives; as one or other read out to us by the shades on the table, during that ceremony. Thus we passed our time, observing faithfully the Sabbath, as it came round.

Monday, 1st December.—The carpenters reported the house at Peccary Field completed; we therefore visited it in the Avon on the same day, and were highly pleased with it altogether; its commodious size, the beauty of the situation, and the excellent workmanship and materials that built it. I bestowed much praise on Mr. Allwood and his coadjutors; and requested they would endeavour to knock up two small houses near this new mansion, for its domestics; and to do it before the schooner's return. I proposed them to be sixteen feet by fourteen each. Allwood did not hesitate to promise that they

would set about the job immediately; and as Diego had finished the painting, two of his men were to be sent to their assistance: Diego himself, with the others of his party, being retained to grind corn, procure fish, and do other things required in his victualling department. Besides, poor old fellow, he was now our look-out at the flag-staff.

There was, however, a business hanging over us to be done, in which my dear wife took a lively interest. The pigeons must be shut out from their ancient domain, the cave; for we found they soiled the packages stowed there. My Eliza deeply regretted the necessity of this measure; and stipulated, for these ancient possessors of the place, that they should receive at our hands the best indemnity in our power. After many consultations, it was at length determined to construct a large pigeon-house round the sides of the natural shaft of their entrance; which was to be closed at one end by lattice-work, so as to admit light and air into the cave; and, as this lattice-work frame was to be placed in the interior of the opening, the passage to which through the rock might be six or eight feet, we hoped a sufficiently commodious habitation would thus be afforded to the poor ousted natives of the cavern. But as time must pass, before it could be completed, it was also resolved that the pigeons should be allowed quiet possession of their former home, till the new one was ready for them. We, therefore, meanwhile, directed the stores to be removed from the sides of the cave, where, only, they were liable to be smeared. But this reminds me to notice that the pigeons which Captain Drake brought from Jamaica, above three months ago, had taken kindly to a tea-box we had stuck up at the end of the fowl-house in the stoccado; but our own two little wild pets would not associate with them, but left us when

their wing-feathers were allowed to grow, no doubt to join their old friends.

Early in December, we became anxious for the arrival of the schooner; but as the weather continued fine, I attributed her delay to Drake's difficulty in executing some of the commissions without a great sacrifice of money. Manus having now finished the furniture for the three houses at Allwood's Plantation, joined the other carpenters at Peccary Field; and by Thursday the 18th, the two outhouses were completed. But the schooner had not arrived, and our anxiety gradually increased. In this state of suspense, I prevailed on my dear wife to consent to my going in the Avon to the extreme part of the northern channel, that I might look out beyond the reefs, from some accessible part on the high land on that part of the island. I took the carpenters in the boat, which they managed very well, having been accustomed for some time back to sail to and fro with her from the Black Rock to Peccary Creek. I landed with Manus, the most active of the party, opposite to the outermost little low island, on a fine open spot of rich ground, and with great difficulty gained the summit of a height after an hour's laborious climbing; from whence we saw all the reefs on that side, which I examined carefully with my glass, but could not discover any sail in sight. We, therefore, descended; and, re-embarking, landed two or three times on this part of the main island, which I perceived to be well suited for settlements, if our increase of population should at any time require them.

On the morning of the 19th, we received the unexpected intelligence that Xavier's wife, Hachinta, had brought forth a male child in the night. We could scarcely believe Rota, who gave the information; for we did not even suspect Hachinta's pregnancy, she having

continued her work as usual. My dear wife and her sister lost no time in visiting the little stranger, administering every thing necessary to the mother; and on their return they set about making baby-clothes, with which, I afterwards understood, the mother would gladly have dispensed, having wrapped the child up in a large coloured cotton handkerchief, which she thought quite sufficient and less troublesome; but as the infant must be dressed after the English fashion, our two ladies soon carried it into effect, though to the great discomfort of both mother and child. But he was our first-born! and there was, of course, a great fuss about him; and to honour him as much as possible, his name must be *George,* after our good king. "Very well," said I, "be it so: and if he take his father's name as a patronymic, it will sound altogether nobly, *George Xavier!*" But, alas! the peculiar pronunciation of the Spaniards was not favourable to the name of this *august infant;* for both father and mother, and Diego too, when speaking of him by his name, called him "*Gorgy Shaver,*" or "*Corky Shaver,*" which, in a great measure, destroyed the sublimity of my intention.

Notwithstanding the interest this new event excited in the mind of my dear wife, she could not help observing my anxiety respecting the Porghee, and took every opportunity of consoling me, and setting my mind at rest; first, by showing the probability of unexpected delay in accomplishing my orders; and next, by directing my intellectual eye to the providence of that God who had hitherto made us his especial care. During Saturday, I gave too much occasion for her kind solaces; and on Sunday, during divine service, our anxious hearts openly offered up a prayer for their safety.

CHAPTER XVII.

Monday, 22d December.—I was preparing to go out again in the Avon, when a schooner was discovered from the flag-staff by Diego, and reported as standing in for the promontory; but he had not been able to make her out, being as yet too far distant in the offing. I lost no time in ascending the height; and instantly, to my great joy, recognised our anxiously-expected vessel. She had now approached near enough to allow me to see distinctly with the glass everybody and every thing upon deck: and the sight a good deal confounded me. "Diego!" said I, "Captain Drake has brought all Kingston with him, I believe! take the glass; and see what a crowd is there; what am I to do with all those people?" Diego took the spy-glass in his hand; but I did not wait his reply, hurrying myself away to tell my dear wife the news, and to prepare for the reception of my friend Drake, and his numerous companions. When I arrived, Diego was close at my heels; and, having acquainted my Eliza and our friends, that Drake was now coming round his own promontory, we all hastened to the front of the open ground close above the rocks, to await the arrival of the schooner: she was not long in making her appearance; and in a few minutes after, passed us, and then came to an anchor. We were all filled with wonder at seeing her deck so full of people; but the more so by observing that many of them, men, women, and children, were *whites*. However, as soon as the anchor was down, Drake came on shore: I welcomed him heartily, as one found that had been lost, exclaiming almost at the same instant—"But who, all, have you got there?"—"I don't know," returned he, "whether I have

done right or wrong; but I have brought four families I saw in distress at Kingston. The men had belonged to the temporary corps that was raised, you may remember, for putting down the Maroons; but being found useless, it was disbanded. Such as chose were sent back to America, whence they came; but these four families, being foolishly advised, remained in Jamaica; and gradually found themselves in no better condition than the free negroes, which is bad enough."—"Go and tell them," said I, "they shall be well received; but where to lodge them, Drake, I really do not know. Who else have you got?"—"Every one," he replied, "you desired me to obtain."—"You have done well!" returned I. "Go and tell them also, they shall be kindly treated; but for a little time they must put up with great inconveniences. And let them land forthwith."

In about half an hour, the soldiers and their families were conducted to the mansion, and brought into the hall. I received them courteously; and my dear wife, who never could bear to see even an insect in suffering, spoke kindly to the women. The men were beyond the prime of life, and looked the worse for wear; the wives were slatterns; and the children looked sickly. The youngsters were nine, altogether; and the eldest of them a boy about twelve years old: there were four boys, and five girls, the youngest of which was in its mother's arms. I told Diego to show them under the cotton-tree, whose ample shade would make a comfortable temporary retreat, and to desire Rota to give them some solid refreshment.

"James," said I to my brother, after they were gone, "there is nothing for it, I perceive, but to convert your house into a barrack, till we can turn ourselves round, for these people."—"It is yours, brother," he replied;

"do with it as you please; but if it were not, you should be quite welcome to it for the purpose wanted."

The black strangers were next brought on shore, and introduced in rotation. The sawyers had been purchased at 400 dollars each; a great price, but they were fine fellows, and unencumbered. I spoke civilly to them, and desired Captain Drake to request Allwood to take them with him in the evening, for the present, to his plantation; the bricklayer came next; a mulatto free man, named Hart, with a wife and two young children, male and female. I told him I would fulfil every agreement made by Captain Drake; but for a little time he and his family must put up with such lodgings as we could give them, until a place can be fixed on for their residence. I then desired him to get his things on shore, directing Diego to lodge his family in the plank-house; on which he observed, he was in my hands, and must rely on me altogether for dealing fair by him. "You may not doubt it," said my dear Eliza; "all who behave well, will be more than fairly dealt with here; but I should leave the people to tell you this: I will say, however," continued she, taking one of the children by the hand, and looking kindly on it, "if you love yourselves, we will love you, and show you all kindness." The new negroes were now mustered; and well looking young people they were, decently clad in Osnaburgh; seven men, and four girls. "I do not know what to do with all these," muttered I to myself; then pausing a moment, concluded to send the men to occupy the out-houses at Peccary Field. That my embarrassment might be more complete, the two New Englanders had brought wives with them, who were presented to us in their turn. "Dame Rota," said I, "what are we to do with these?" —"Let them be with Derrick and his wife, if it please

massa," she replied, courtesying. "We would take them ourselves," continued she, but Mira is come back, and she and Martin are again with us; and La Señora, I know, would not send them to trouble Hachinta and her little child."—"But then," I rejoined, "Derrick and his wife must take their husbands also."—"But they not married yet," rejoined Rota, looking with no inconsiderable importance, as she made the reply.—"You are quite right, Duenna," I exclaimed; "we will see about that on Sunday; and you may now tell them so."

There was so much bustle in the settlement, by the arrival of all these people, that we found no time even to sit down to dinner. Captain Drake handed me my letters, and gave me an outline of his voyage and expenditures, while snatching a morsel; but we were too much engrossed in considering and in doing what was now required of us, to enter on details. He merely told me he had sold the dye-woods well, but that the proceeds and all the doubloons, excepting ten, had been expended; and these he now gave me. "Finish your sangaree, my good fellow," said I; "and take the soldiers and their families, and whatever they may have brought with them, to Peccary Field house, in the Avon; take the seven new negro men also, and put the New Englanders into the boat to work her; it may be as well for the present to keep them out of the way. Lodge the soldiers in the four bed-rooms, and put the negro men into the out-houses, where they will be sufficiently well accommodated. And I should wish, moreover, that you would take your cot with you to sling in one of the saloons, so as to keep an eye on the strangers until we know them better. Desire Diego," continued I, "to furnish you with provisions for their subsistence, and whatever else you think you may require to take with you." Drake

made no other reply than, "Very well, sir;" quickly after, moving off to carry the order into execution.

Purdy and his wife returned home with their friends, the Allwoods, in the evening, taking the two sawyers with them. And now the two black sailor boys only, were left in charge of the Porghee. At night a shake-down was made in the hall of the mansion for the four new negro girls, who, with the other three, Martha, Mary, and Anna, lay down quietly, and well satisfied, to sleep on the floor. Thus I had found quarters for every one, consistently with the relative condition of all concerned. It may be thought, such circumstances too light a matter, to be worth all the troublesome arrangements it forced upon me to observe; but in all such things the fruit is worth the labour—a certain harvest of amity and peace.

Tuesday, 23d.—Early in the morning, I took my dear wife and Diego, with my brother and sister, into council on the subject of providing permanent accommodations for the people, but most immediately for our young negresses. We all seemed puzzled. The rainy season was approaching; ground was to be cleared of timber, to be ready for the husbandmen; and there was no time for building. After a considerable pause, my sable minister at last spoke as follows:—"If it so please my good massa, I will go back from big small house to my own house, after Hall and Hackett take away their wives; and then Derrick go to live again with Shavier. Martin and Mira stay with us, will be four—and will only be four and child at Shavier's; then, you master, sir, can give big small house to somebody; black girls can be made to lodge there, if it please my good massa?"—"Thank you, honest Diego," I replied; "you are always ready to put yourself to any inconvenience for the accom-

modation of others; but I cannot give that house to the negro wenches, since you are so good as to leave it at my disposal."—"Take house there on other side, good massa, sir," he replied; "cave large, sir; great storehouse large, sir; plenty of room there, sir. Can empty plantation storehouse, and make place for all the young women in it, sir. May be, La Señora and the hermana Donna will put some little things that they and Rota may want, in their own rooms here, sir."—"A very good proposal, Diego," said I; "so let all the bulky stores be removed from the plantation storehouse this very morning: its shelves, however, may be still occupied by jars and the fruits; but as soon as the ground-floor is cleared, send Xavier and Derrick to fit it up for the girls to sleep in." To this arrangement the ladies made no objection; but, on the contrary, commended Diego for his sagacity.

Captain Drake came now over from Peccary Field, with two of the soldiers. One of these men (James Craig, a Scotsman) had been a corporal in the corps to which he formerly belonged. My zealous friend thought it his duty to offer Craig to my notice as a well-behaved, sober-minded man: on which I called him to me, and told him he should have charge of the barrack, as long as the people were to remain in it, and that all provisions and other things for their use would be placed under his care; that I should look to him for a regular account of all disbursements; and that he would be furnished with pens, ink, paper, and a book for the purpose. The corporal touched his hat, and I was well pleased thus to rid my friend Drake of a troublesome office. It was not long before the soldiers returned to their quarters, with the necessary supplies in our large canoe, rowed by the two New Englanders.

Having got rid of these people, Drake and I paid Diego a visit, who, with his men, were busy removing the stores round by water to the Black Rock; and having also taken a look at my brother James and his party, making stowage for the roots, and some other such articles, by placing boards on beef barrels in the cave; I told Drake to send the fruits, brought from Kingston in the schooner, on shore; and then move her into Peccary Creek, that she might be in a place of safety in the event of bad weather, until we could find time to unload her. I added, he might sleep on board, if he liked, which would, perhaps, be more comfortable to him; and still he would be on the spot to superintend the clearing and laying out of the ground for planting, which must now be set about with all expedition. "And," said I, "you shall have the two sawyers, who are capital woodmen, and the seven new negroes, under your command; and you must employ the soldiers, to assist also in the best way they can." Allwood, who stood by, was now directed to take Diego's four men, as soon as the work in hand was done, and with these, and his son, to clear the land of trees to the southward of their allotments, within the lines formerly marked out by Captain Drake; to be ready for the spade and the hoe after the expected rains.

My dear wife had, as usual, not been idle this morning. All things required from the plantation storehouse, that could not remain there, and could be placed on the shelves in my brother's bed-room, our original storehouse, were brought to the house; and among other matters, she took care that the sable damsels were all well washed with soap and water in the stream, where the trees of the woodland region conceals it from view: and after this operation, at which Rota superintended, they were neatly

dressed in striped linen, with coloured handkerchiefs on the head, tied *à la Française en bandeau;* and when this was done, she appointed to each their respective occupations, placing them more immediately under the direction and control of their governant, good old Rota.

Wednesday, 24th.—The schooner had been moved over to the creek in the afternoon: and this morning, Martin and Purdy, with Hall and Hackett, the two New Englanders, were sent in the Avon to the eastern islands, to procure a supply of turtle; while Drake and his party at Peccary Field, and Allwood with his party at Edward's Island, were hard at work felling trees, to make clear the grounds for our approaching field labour. Being now a little at leisure, I sent for Hart the bricklayer, and came at once to an understanding with him about wages and so forth; telling him a regular account should be opened for him, so that whatever conveniences he wanted for his family, he might now have from the store on credit. Having thus disposed of him, and the great body of the people being well employed, I found my mind somewhat at rest.

My brother, however, still had full occupation at the storehouse, with Derrick and Xavier for assistants, in making good stowage of the things; so as to be all conveniently at hand, without incurring confusion and delay, when any particular article might be wanted. But it now became absolutely necessary to exclude the wild pigeons from the cave, and I felt myself called upon to perform the terms my Eliza had stipulated for on their behalf; and to this end, Hart and Xavier were instructed to fit up the gallery which communicates with the cavern from without, for their retreat; and then place a lattice-work partition across the inner opening; so that, while we gave them the best accommodation in our power, I

took care that both light and air should still find their way through this extraordinary passage.

Thursday, 25th.—We could not make this day a holiday, our numbers were so increased, and the stormy season so near; therefore I told the people how it was, adding, that I hoped next year, we should be able to honour the day as we ought. I visited the working parties at noon, and took a hamper of beer in the boat, with which I regaled the men; leaving some bottles for another, for each to drink after the labour of the day. With this treat they were well satisfied; and having plenty of provisions, the business went on with alacrity and method. I returned to dinner, but it was not a *Christmas* feast; yet I was glad to sit down, and recreate myself with the conversation of those I loved.

In the evening, my Eliza and her sister named the new negro girls, Delia, Phebe, Clara, and Hebe, who in due time were to be baptized.

Friday, 26th.—The Avon returned with fourteen turtle, ten of which were immediately put into the craal; she was then sent with two to Allwood's, and two to Peccary Field, being directed to bring back a load of firewood; but Purdy was left at Allwood's, to fish for the party; and on the return of the boat, Martin and the New Englanders were set to work on two more fish-pots for the settlement; and, in the evening, they made a great take of mullet by torchlight, and replenished the conservatory.

Saturday, 27th.—My dear wife, with her sister and myself, paid a visit to Peccary Field, for the express purpose of taking some comforts to the soldiers' families, which she had got ready; namely, coffee, sugar, butter, flour, and some soap; besides a piece of striped and checked linen, with all the requisites of tape, thread,

needles, etc., to make up their clothes. The women were much gratified at seeing her, but more so when the presents appeared; but I left her with them, and visited Drake and his party, who were getting on apace. After my Eliza had finished her kind donations to the wives and children of the soldiers, (during which she gave them salutary admonitions about cleanliness, and their expected attendance on Sundays at divine worship,) we then embarked, and returned home much pleased by our expedition.

Sunday, 28th.—At ten o'clock, the whole settlement assembled to divine worship; which was conducted with as much order and solemnity as possible, considering the motley group that formed our congregation. After prayers, Xavier's infant was baptized; and then I proceeded to marry Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, the two New England blacks, to their respective betrothed spouses, who had accompanied them from Kingston. There was no school teaching to-day, the ceremonies mentioned having made it late. Besides, in consequence of our great numbers, I thought it best to send the soldiers and their families back to Peccary Field; and also Allwood's families to their homes, immediately after service; the bridegrooms with their brides being put in temporary possession of the vacant house at our plantation.

Monday, 29th.—This morning I desired Hart the bricklayer to construct a limekiln on the isthmus, to the north-west of the plank-house. There were plenty of bricks on the ground. The coals had been landed close to the black rock, and the whole promontory was mountain limestone, so that his work was altogether quite at hand; and hammers being provided to break the limestone small, I told him I should expect great expedition in turning out a kiln of burnt lime. The ground-clearing

woodcutters continued assiduously at their work, and I added what strength I could to each party; sending the two New Englanders, with their wives, to Peccary Field; and desiring Martin, as well as Purdy, to assist at Allwood's. Hart having finished all a mason could do towards fitting up the gallery in the rock for the wild pigeons, Derrick joined in the carpenter's work, which now quickly would be finished. It was a part of my arrangement at this time to employ the two black sailor boys in rowing a despatch canoe from one place to another, as there might be occasion.*

Early in the week, Allwood reported the twelve acres cleared of wood, and ready for the planter; having removed all the trunks of the trees to the side of the bay, where those cut on a former occasion now lay. The smaller wood fit for hurdles and faggots had also been put together; and he brought over with him the timber carriage, to send to Peccary Field for the transportation of their felled trees, to a proper place for sawing them afterwards into planks. By the end of the week, Drake had finished his task also, so that now nearly all hands were set at liberty.

Our zealous and useful friend was now able to give us a little of his company, which was a pleasure to us, and a recreation to him after his late labour. I thanked him for the complete way in which he had seen the work performed, and the taste and judgment he had exercised in leaving a fine tree standing here and there on the

* If the Editor had taken the liberty of abridging any parts of the original journal, it would have been in one or two such passages as the above; where the changes of occupations and residences of the different individuals are so circumstantially, and somewhat tediously, detailed. But they belong so truly to the style of the narrative altogether, that, without making an awkward rent in it, nothing of them can be omitted.—Ed.

cleared ground, which altogether might amount to fourteen acres.

I took the opportunity which our present leisure afforded, to send for the soldiers. I told them it was my intention to lodge Corporal Craig in a vacant house on my own plantation, in consideration of his being their non-commissioned officer; but I would give the others each a house with some land, at the northern extremity of the isthmus; and that no time should be lost in the business, provided each and every one of them continued to act with the same propriety they hitherto had done: and I requested Drake to go the next morning early, and take any persons with him he might choose, to mark out six lots, of four acres each, in a line between the high black rock east of Peccary Field, and the little rivulet.

This little rivulet was the same my dear Eliza and myself had seen, when we feared we might again encounter the rocks, after having been delivered from the perils of the reef.

My dear helpmate had not been unmindful of the bricklayer's family, since they landed at our settlement. She had supplied them with many comforts; and took the trouble to admonish the woman on points of order and cleanliness, and directed Mira to spare an hour in the day to teach the children to read. Martin now again became our look-out and our fisherman, and attended my brother occasionally at the store; and thus we proceeded, observing the Sabbath, as it came round.

1736. Tuesday, January 6th.—The wind was very unsettled all day; I therefore gave orders for all work to be suspended, and sent such supplies, as might be required for a week or two, to the distant settlements. Captain Drake was requested to return to Peccary Creek immediately. The sails of the schooner were unbent,

and the topmasts, and yards, and gaffs got down, and all made snug. The Avon and the six-oared boat were secured there, within the schooner, and all the other boats and canoes were hauled up before night upon the beach of the isthmus; and a kiln of quicklime, that had been turned out in the morning, was covered over with planks slantingly, so as to protect it from the heavy rains, which might now every minute be expected.

The event of the night bore testimony to our foresight and precautions; for it blew and rained tremendously, chiefly from the northward, threatening every moment to blow in our door and window-shutters, and at times increasing with such violence as to make us fear it would carry away the house. We had not forgotten to pray, although of late I have said little about it; but on this night, our brother and sister, and ourselves, were not one minute in our beds, but together in the hall, comforting each other, and imploring the protection of that God whose hand can bridle the fury of the wind, and preserve his people. The noise of the storm was great; the howling of the wind, the pelting of the rain, the uproar of the waters beating up against the rocks not two hundred yards below the house! and now and then we heard the bleating of the goats, and the mixed noises of the frightened poultry. Our settlement was the only one completely exposed to the violence of the tempest: which reflection, on thinking of the others, afforded us some consolation.

As the sun rose, the gale abated, but the rain continued to fall in torrents. The wind came now only in squalls, but these squalls were bad enough. This dreadful weather continued with scarcely any intermission, for five days; clearing up suddenly, and permanently, on Monday at sun-rise.

Monday, 12th.—Notwithstanding our care of the lime, the rains had got to it; and some of the planks were nearly consumed by taking fire: but as the heat extricated itself below, the rain kept down the inflammability of the wood, and little further damage ensued. We found the beach covered with sea-weed, and broken reeds, and shells. The turtle craal was knocked in pieces, and the staves scattered in every direction. Our tub conservatory was also thrown on the strand. The sugar-canes were broken off short above the roots, or knocked down; and the pine-apple plants much injured. The canoes and boats drawn up upon the beach, had been moved from their places, but without receiving much damage. All the buildings stood secure; but the stoccado of the poultry yard was blown down, and part of it carried to a considerable distance, and some of the poultry killed. Early in the day, we were visited by Captain Drake, who reported all well at Peccary Field; and we had the pleasure to receive the same tidings from Edward's Island.

Tuesday, 13th.—Mr. Allwood with his son, and Xavier, and the two sawyers, were now despatched to commence work at the northern extremity of the isthmus, with directions to get up three houses as soon as possible on the plan of those on Edward's Island; and the three soldiers, and the two sailor boys, John and Harry, were directed to assist in transporting materials to the spot, and in any other way make themselves useful; and as soon as Derrick could repair the damage done by the storm to the stoccado and turtle craal, I promised to add him to their party.

Diego now took the field with all his strength—his own four patriarchs, and the seven negro men; to which the two New Englanders were added; commencing operations at my brother's plantation. In a few days, they

did their business here, planting the fourteen acres that had been cleared. He then took the whole force to Allwood's Bay, where Purdy joined him; and with this strong party he finished his work there by the 28th. Plantain suckers from our own plantation had been put in both at Peccary Field and at Allwood's Bay. Cuttings of our broken sugar-canes, and cassava cuttings also, were planted. But the bulk of the grounds was occupied by yams and coccos, maize and guinea-corn, and tobacco. What may be called garden ground, was sown with Indian kale, calaloo, ocra, pumpkin, and melon seeds; and in a choice spot, offsets from our pines in the dell, formed an infant pinery. When Diego had finished his labours, I visited the two settlements; and could not but express myself highly pleased with the masterly manner in which the grounds had been cultivated, and the alacrity with which all hands must have worked to accomplish so much in so short a time.

During this time, Martin, with the women, had planted our grounds in the dell. The pumpkin and melon beds, between the spring and black rock, after being enriched with the soil from the cave, were put in order, and duly sown, by Hart and his wife.

The grand agricultural operations being finished, we had now time to attend to minor matters. Four of the fruit trees (that came from Jamaica in tubs) were removed to Peccary Field: where, the hoops being knocked off, the trees, with all the earth about their roots, were taken out of the tubs and planted: and in the same manner, the other four trees were put into the ground, as near to our own mansion as the nature of the soil would admit. But being desirous of doing still more in the propagation of fruits, two of Diego's patriarchs were sent off, day after day, in a small canoe, with

seeds of the shaddock, orange, limes, and peppers, to plant in the best situations they could find all along both coasts of the two islands. On taking a survey of our vegetable stores, after planting the thirty-six acres of ground, besides our own little plantation, we found very few yams and coccos remaining; and from the great consumption of corn by the poultry, the maize also was brought to a low ebb; so that it was well we had a hundred bushels of that grain in the schooner.

There was now leisure to unload the Porghee; so after taking out the furniture for my brother's house, and a grindstone for Peccary Field, she was moved over from the creek to the black rock below the promontory, and the cargo landed. Our storehouse and cave were again pretty well filled; and notwithstanding the paucity of our yams and coccos, we had every thing else in abundance. By Saturday, nothing remained in the schooner but the bricks, which we were not in a hurry to land, as there were a great many already on shore, and those on board would serve for the present as ballast; and by way of a finish to the day's work, the second grindstone was set up close by the duck-hatch, near the spring.

The following Sabbath was observed with due reverence, as I hope every former one had been since our landing on the island; and the Sunday teaching was conducted this day upon an enlarged scale.

Monday, 26th.—The buildings at Soldiers' Town were proceeding rapidly: and there being now three kilns of lime turned out, the bricklayer was ordered to mix a quantity of mortar, and, with the assistance I should give him, see that stones and bricks, and other materials, were carried to the rear of the stoccado, well backed towards the hill, to build there an ample stone and brick kitchen for our settlement.

We were now looking out rather expectingly for the Spanish schooner on her return to Santa Martha, the time being expired at which he promised us a visit. And having judged it expedient to make a display of our little force on the occasion, should he come, to prevent any report to our disadvantage, which might afterwards draw on us some adventurous Picaroon or other Marrover; with this object in view, I sent for Corporal Craig, and his three comrades, and told them my ideas on the peculiarity of our situation, signifying my intention of devoting every Saturday to military exercise; to which end, they must accustom the men about us, as soon as possible, to fire with blank cartridges, and afterwards to try them with ball at a target placed on the isthmus. But, in the mean time, I wished Craig and his three comrades, to fit on a suit of clothing each, and tally them with their names; so that, in the event of the sudden arrival of the schooner, or any other strange vessel, the men could repair to head-quarters, and dress in an instant, ready to be placed as sentinels. They were quite delighted with this information; it renewed in their minds the recollections of proud days gone by, without the annoyances and abject circumstances that attended them. The clothing-chest was opened, and having their choice, they managed a tolerably good fit; looking well with their broad-flapped red coats and cocked hats, quite like brave musqueteers as they were: but when they put on their broad belts, and shouldered arms, I felt a glow within me I cannot describe. I hoped some day to see all my people appear thus. I now desired Craig to remove with his family to my residence, and take possession of the vacant house I had reserved for him near our own; which I only delayed giving him, until I had assured myself, by observing his conduct, that he was worthy of the confidence I desired to place in him.

On Saturday morning, we had a grand muster in the shade, to the north of the promontory; in all, thirty-four, including ourselves and Drake. The arms were brought to the ground, and the men were put in training. We kept them at it till noon, when dinner was served to the whole party on the field; after which they recommenced the drill, and at five o'clock returned to their respective habitations.

Sunday, February 1st.—Our new associates began to show something like devotion at prayers, which afforded us much satisfaction. I endeavoured on this occasion, in a few plain words, to impress on them their dependence on Almighty God, not only for their preservation in this life, but for a participation in the life to come; also the duties he required of us, both as to himself, and to each other, and to all men of every country and colour. And I took the opportunity of stating to them, that, although some of them were my slaves, bought with my money, should treat them as the white indented servants in Jamaica were treated; that is, after a service of seven years, every man and woman should be free: and it was my determination that such should be the law of the island: agreeable to which, every resident on it should sign a paper to that effect; and that every child born on the island of slave parents, should be considered as free from the moment of its birth, excepting that, in compensation for the support the master gave to such children in their childhood, they should be bound to serve him until the completion of their twentieth year. All this was explained particularly to the new negroes; on which the whole assembly poured forth a joyous acclamation.

Monday, 2d.—Mr. Allwood reported the three houses finished at Soldiers' Town. In consequence, I desired him now to set about the building of three similar dwell-

ings at Edward's Island—one on each of the four-acre lots lately cleared and cultivated; to observe his front line accurately, and not to encroach upon the intersecting road as marked out by Captain Drake. In reply, he requested me to give him a few days to attend to some private affairs, and he would then set about the erection of the houses required; but hoped that I would render him every assistance he might desire; which I duly promised, and as duly performed. During the week, some of our people were employed in procuring turtle; some in transporting the small wood lately cut at Peccary Field, to our own settlement, and there building it into stacks for firewood.

On Saturday we had another day of drill; and, on Sunday, the sabbath was kept with due solemnity.

During the two following weeks nothing remarkable occurred; but I gave Mr. Allwood so much assistance, that the buildings on Edward's Island seemed to rise as if by magic; Diego the while, with his men, enclosing the land around them with hurdles, made from the loppings of the trees lately felled there in clearing the grounds.

Tuesday, 24th.—Martin reported a Spanish schooner off. We answered his signal, by hoisting our colours, and with a gun; on which the bugle was sounded, and all the men hastened, by boats and canoes, to head-quarters. Captain Drake went out in the Avon, to pilot the stranger into port. In the mean time the soldiers were dressed in their regimentals, and a sentinel planted at the pass between the black rock and promontory, and another before the mansion. The other people were variously disposed, some in boats, others set to carry bricks, but all moving about, so as to be seen from the sea. And as the Spaniard anchored, the Allwoods and their party

were made to return by boats to their settlement; having shown themselves, which was all that was required.

The captain of the schooner landed, escorted by Drake to the mansion. I had dressed for the occasion; and was sitting in state, with Corporal Craig, in regimentals, standing on one side, and Diego on the other. The Spaniard said he had again come from Santa Martha, but on purpose to trade with us; that he had missed the islands in his return from the Havanna; adding, that he had been so well treated the last time he was here, that the report he had made of it, he was sure would occasion some other Spanish vessels to visit the place. I assured him of my protection, and hoped he would have no reason to complain of any treatment he might receive at the island; and I hoped I should not have any complaint against his people, all of whom must be on board every evening at gun-fire. He bowed, and took his leave of me; but went to the storehouse, accompanied by Diego, where my brother awaited him.

They proceeded immediately to business, at which my presence was not at all required. Fifty per cent. on the invoice was the ratio of sale, so that James could tell him the price of every article in an instant; and as he fixed on things, they were turned out. He took nearly all our refined sugar: two boxes of linen; several boxes of stripes and checks, and coloured handkerchiefs; some bales of negro clothing; and, to our surprise, most of the blankets, and all the candle moulds, which he said were for the Cordilleras, or mountainous country, to the westward of Santa Martha. He took also a quantity of our hoes and bill-hooks, some barrels of salt beef and pork, a few hampers of cheese; a large quantity of copper, both in pigs and sheets; some brass and tin, also in pigs; almost all the crockery we could spare, and several chests

of ironmongery and nails. The articles fixed on, amounted to 570*l.* sterling by invoice; to which 50 per cent. being added, to cover freight, insurance, and profit, gave 855*l.* sterling, which is 1197*l.* Jamaica currency, viz. 3591 dollars. We took from him in return, dyewoods to the amount of 300 dollars; two tons of bees' wax, 296 dollars; one hundred bags of cacao, at 16 dollars each, 1600 dollars; and twenty boxes of cigars, 160 dollars; amounting in all to 2356 dollars. By Thursday evening, the one cargo was out, and the other shipped; and the necessary papers being exchanged, he paid the difference in hard dollars, amounting to 1235.

On Friday, Captain Drake disembarked the bricks, and took in the goods purchased of the Spaniard; with which he sailed on Saturday for Kingston, taking with him 2000 dollars in addition, to purchase an assortment of merchandise, such as the Spaniards were most likely to require. And I desired him to bring, for our own use, a certain quantity of American flour and Irish provisions, and maize, together with as many yams as he conveniently could stow away.

On Saturday, while the men were at drill, I adjusted the books with brother James, and, agreeable to my promise, paid him over the profits of the sale just made, which amounted to 987 dollars, after deducting ten per cent. for freight and insurance; and to these I added 30 dollars that had been cleared on the dyewoods, sent the last trip to Kingston.

I now told my dear brother, that from this day forward I would have nothing more to do with the trade. He was to charge himself with the amount of the whole stock on hand, and also with what should arrive either from Jamaica or England. However, he was to keep my island account for supplies, but it was to be totally dis-

tinct; and I added, that I would lend him more capital at any time he required it, only desiring to be reimbursed when his circumstances would allow him to do it without inconvenience. He received my determination and assurances with many expressions of gratitude; and the sum he had just received was, he said, a handsome earnest of his future fortune.

The three privates, with their families, having removed sometime ago to their own quarters at the further extremity of the isthmus; and my brother's house at Peccary Field having undergone a thorough scouring, two beds were now put up in two of the bedrooms, and all the furniture unpacked and arranged ready for the reception of the family; and as Hart had finished our stone kitchen, and was quite at leisure, he with some assistants were despatched, to build one at my brother's mansion, of similar materials.

Thursday, the 11th of March, James took possession of his house and grounds at Peccary Field; having one of his back rooms fitted up as a store chamber, well filled with all requisite supplies. On their leaving us, my dear wife and myself appointed the following persons to reside at his plantation: Xavier, with his wife and child; David and Jacob, two of Diego's agriculturists; Mary, one of the young women who had waited on my wife; besides two of the new negro girls, and also one new negro man; together with a good stock of every kind of poultry, and two she goats with kid.

The buildings at Edward's Island being finished, I sent the wives of the two New England blacks to occupy one house destined for themselves and their husbands; and the two sawyers, and four of the new negro men, were to take up their abode provisionally in the others,—they being bondmen, and the former about to be employed

in sawing the felled trees into boards. There now only remained with us, Diego and Rota; Martin (when at home) and his wife Mira; Derrick, the carpenter bondman, and his wife; two new negro men, and two of Diego's patriarchs; Anna and Martha, my wife's maids; with two other negro girls, and the corporal's family.

I had the old plantation warehouse fitted up again for a store; and my kind wife gave directions for the chamber our brother had slept in, and which had been a storeroom originally, to be furnished with two beds, and every thing necessary for her maids and the other girls, agreeable to the manner of civilised life. After these arrangements, drill-day came; and when the men had fired half a dozen rounds of blank cartridge, the orders for the operations of the ensuing week were issued, liable to interruption only from casualties; and this was adopted as a rule of procedure in the colony.

In the evening, when the people and our brother had returned to their respective homes, my dearest Eliza and myself felt once more to live and breathe in freedom; being again alone, and quiet; and as we congratulated each other, our dear little dog seemed to participate in our feelings, by every demonstration of gaiety and fondness. "You have now put the machine together, my dear Edward," said she, "and have set it going; and I do think the arrangements you have made with our brother, may be calculated on to continue it, without harassing yourself almost to death, as you have of late done."—"Indeed, love," I replied, "I hope things now will go on pretty smoothly without much trouble, and with great pleasure to ourselves and to the people; and I bless God for making me the instrument of so much good." She leaned over me, as I smoked my cigar, while thus we talked; which imparted to me a happiness all my wealth could not have purchased.

Sunday, 14th.—After prayers, the four patriarchs were baptized by their respective names, also Anna, Mary, and Martha, and the children of Hart; but we did not consider the seven young negro men, and four young negro women, who arrived last amongst us, sufficiently advanced in Christian knowledge to entitle them to the rite of baptism. Our school, too, was duly attended too: but, from the great increase of persons requiring tuition, little could be effected with each individual: however, as our only object was to enable them to read the Scriptures, we hoped in time to accomplish it.

Monday, 15th.—I convened the people, and in their presence placed one of the new negro men with Allwood, and one with Manus Allwood, and one with Xavier, and one with Derrick (although himself a slave), and one with Hart the bricklayer; to be with them for four years, to learn their respective trades: and it was stipulated that after they had served the four years with their masters, they should be considered as my servants again, until their seven years of bondage was completed; when they should have a house and grounds allotted to them, and they would then live and work for their own profit.

Xavier and Derrick, having roofed in the kitchens built by the bricklayer, went next, with their apprentices to make a formidable stoccado barrier of wood, with a strong gate, from rock to rock, across the entrance that leads to the great storehouse at the cave. There was nearly wood enough in the old palisadoes, which had been placed there in a loose and hurried manner on a former memorable occasion, so that the job could not be either long or tedious. Between this barrier and storehouse there was a fine intermediate area, that might at some future time be occupied advantageously. But, in the meanwhile, it was intended to place a doghouse there for Lion; so that if, by accident,

among our increasing population, any dishonest person should arrive, he would feel little inclination to make his way clandestinely to our stores. Diego was sent off to-day, with his two remaining patriarchs, and one of the new negro men, to Soldiers' Town, to assist in making hurdles to enclose their lands; and he was desired, after showing what was to be done, to leave his men at the place until the enclosures were completed. As there were not any trees on the ground although the soil was good, nothing further at present was required to be done in preparing it for the hoe and the spade, to be in readiness for the falling of the rains.

I now found time to put a favourite plan of my intelligent helpmate into effect; which was, to construct an underground conduit of brick from the great fountain, through the woodland region to the grounds below the cotton tree; there to empty itself into a reservoir covered from the sun; from thence to overflow, and irrigate the planted grounds in the dell between it and the lake. The bricklayer and his apprentice were forthwith set about this work.

The two sawyers were now directed to form a sawpit on the south side of the grounds at Allwood's, where all the trunks of the felled trees had been carried; and make it their daily occupation to saw them all into boards, many of them being timber of the first quality.

Corporal Craig took the look-out at the flag-staff permanently, and charge of the gun; and the regimentals and arms for his three men were lodged in his house. In fine, he became my day-orderly for government arrangements, while Diego attended for domestic concerns; and therefore, as I said when I introduced him to my brother James, he was my minister for the home department; and an honest and faithful minister he proved.

My dear wife and myself made frequent visits to Peccary Field, to see our brother and sister; for they were so much occupied with the improvement of the place, that they could not conveniently leave it: and as Xavier was now borrowed from them for a time, I promised them an equivalent in Derrick, as soon as the stoccadoes should be finished; although the one before the storehouse was equally important to James as to myself. But I was desirous in all things to observe every appearance of equity between man and man, and to show my brother that I did so.

Friday, the 19th, Captain Drake arrived, bringing a full cargo for my brother; which was conveyed to the storehouse. And to my order he brought a free tailor, with his family, consisting of a youth of fifteen, bringing up to his own trade, and a wife and two young daughters. He also brought with him half-a-dozen she-goats, for the benefit of the settlement.

One of the houses lately built at Allwood's Bay was given to the tailor and his family, which was fitted up for him with every thing needful. A she-goat and a stock of poultry were added to him; and the same also now to the New Englanders, who had a lot next to him. Two of the remaining goats were sent to Peccary Field; and the others retained at our plantation, where the stock by this time was much diminished.

We now began to dress all our people in regimentals for drill, and the tailor was set to work to alter such of the clothing as required it; each suit being tallied with the man's name to whom it belonged, when finished.

Wednesday, April 7th.—Two schooners were reported in the offing: our colours were hoisted, and the gun fired. Captain Drake discovered one of them to be armed. The gun, therefore, was reloaded with shot; and he equipped

the crew of the Avon; and putting on his old midshipman's uniform, went out to reconnoitre, signals being agreed on. The alarm bugle was sounded; and the whole force of the colony collected, then dressed, and put under arms. I repaired to the flag-staff, and saw the Avon, board the schooners. One of them had a pendant flying, which implied that she was a King's vessel; they were both Spaniards, and I recognised the merchant schooner as our old friend. They soon all filled their sails, and stood in for the harbour. I desired the Corporal to furnish the men with thirty rounds of ball cartridges, by way of precaution, and place all but the sentinels behind the house. In an hour or two the vessels came to anchor in Woodland Bay; and Captain Drake, having remained on board the armed schooner, was rowed on shore, with the Spanish captain in his boat. Seeing with my glass, that the Spaniard was in uniform, the sentinel above the landing-place was ordered to present arms to him as he passed; and also another of the soldiers, that had been planted before the mansion house, paid him the same compliment.

I received him in full dress, not omitting my Adonis, with all possible courtesy; and having Diego for interpreter, asked him to what accident I was indebted for the honour of this visit. He answered, he was sent by the Governor of Santa Martha, in consequence of some trade with this island having been reported by the master of the schooner now in company with him. That the Governor was not aware of these rocks being inhabited, much less in the occupation of a British authority; and he was therefore despatched to enquire into its truth. "You have seen and heard the truth, sir," replied I: "tell his Excellency, that you have seen the British flag, and heard our guns."—"But may it please your Excel-

lency," said he, "I come in peace,—peace being long established between the two countries; and it is the desire of the Governor from whom I come, that nothing may occur of an unfriendly nature on his part: and I am directed, if your Excellency will favour me with a sight of your commission, to assure you of his friendship; and to put you in possession of the laws and regulations of his Majesty the King of Spain, with respect to our trade with the English colonies and settlements." Diego had some trouble to make out all this; but he was quite intelligible; and I have put it in such language as I suppose the Governor of Santa Martha would have dictated. I told the officer, it was an unusual request to show my commission to the commander of an armed vessel; but in the same spirit of amity he had been sent, I would send him back, and therefore he should see it and hear it. I then ordered the Corporal to parade the guard before the house, and went into the inner room for my commission. On coming out, I perceived the men drawn up on the open space; and before I sat down to read the commission, and show it to the Spaniard, I desired the Corporal to march them to the plank-house in a body, and in a quarter of an hour send Allwood back with a corporal's guard of five, to lay on their arms near to the landing-place below. Having given these orders, as if it were a matter of course, I read the commission; which Diego interpreted to the Captain in the best way he could, and I then put it into his hands. He returned it immediately, with many apologies; and then took a packet from his pocket, which he delivered to me. I instantly opened it, in due respect; and by Diego's assistance, in about an hour I seemed to comprehend the purport of the communication. A great part was empty compliments; among which, incredible as it may appear, were

these words: "*and may your Excellency live a thousand years!*"—"You mistake, Diego," interrupted I: "Methuselah fell short of that."—"O yes, 'tis, sir," he replied; "*mille annos*, a thousand years."—"O, very well," said I; "tell the Captain, I return the same vain wish for his Excellency of Santa Martha."

The commercial instructions, as to what was, and what was not, *contraband*, and so on, were the subjects of an enclosed paper: I therefore sent to the storehouse for my brother, who was dressed as an English merchant ought to be, to hear these papers read by the Spaniard, and interpreted by Diego, and at the same time to take down the substance of the translation. I ordered a hamper of strong beer, and a good Gloucester cheese, to be put into the Spaniard's boat; and wishing him "*mille annos*," he took his leave; receiving the salute of the guard on embarking in his boat, to which Diego attended him. He returned me his thanks, by that faithful servant, for the present I had made him; and in half an hour, accompanied by the Avon, clear of the shoals he stood out to sea.

The military body was now marched back, and unclothed, all but the corporal and his three comrades. And a sufficient number of men being appointed to assist my brother, he proceeded to negotiate with the captain of the trading schooner; unloading her of her goods from Santa Martha, and loading her with such of his own as the Spaniard thought fit to take: and a profitable business it was, James having told me he did not clear less than 1000 dollars by his sales, besides what he might get on the Spanish cargo at Kingston.

All the tradesmen, and every one else, were settled with in a few days after the departure of the trading schooner, and Drake sent off again to Jamaica. There was little

or no money yet coming to any of the people; but they were satisfied, feeling fully provided, and without a care. I had no order for Captain Drake, but to bring four new negro men, and as many girls; and I gave him 1100 dollars for the purpose.

During the absence of the schooner, our respective operations were going on. The sawyers had accomplished a good deal; the soldiers' lots were enclosed, and pretty well prepared for planting. My brother had done much to Peccary Field; and our settlement was cut off from the isthmus by a strong barricado from the Black Rock to the face of the promontory. And the barricado before the great storehouse, was also completed; each having a strong gate; and the conduit from the spring to the grounds below the cotton tree, was proceeding as fast as we could expect.

Saturday, May 1st.—Captain Drake arrived with a cargo for James, while we were at drill. We were happy to see him, and the more so when he laid before us letters from England. Our brother and sister dined with us to-day; and as the schooner was not to unload till Monday, we enjoyed ourselves much by reading the letters, and with all the variety of news, public and private, he had brought us.

Business, too, had speeded well: four negro men, and as many girls, which I had sent for, arrived, and they cost rather less than the sum I had given to purchase them; the four men were instantly turned over to Diego, and lodged in the old kitchen, with his remaining two patriarchs, and one other negro that had been retained for agricultural purposes; two of the four girls were sent to Peccary Field, to add to our sister's establishment, and the other two kept with ourselves.

On Monday and Tuesday the schooner's cargo was

discharged; and, before the end of the week, the conduit and its reservoir were completed. It was delightful, when the communication between them and the spring was opened at the source, to see the full body of water come pouring into the reservoir as clear as crystal; and in half an hour overflowing at a notch made for the purpose, and running in a small stream towards the sea; but in its course the thirsty earth gradually drank it up, many little channels having been made with a hoe to irrigate the cultivated ground. This capacious reservoir being covered over with thatch made of palm-leaves, afforded a large supply not only of fresh but cool water to the settlement; sparing the people having to go through the woodland region to the spring-head, when our little cotton tree rill failed them here; so that I considered this suggestion of my dear Eliza one of the finest things we had accomplished.

I took occasion, on muster-day, to tell all hands to get in their crops with every possible despatch, as we might expect the rains in a week or ten days; and that I would have no drill on the next Saturday, to allow plenty of time for the work in hand. On Monday, the 10th, Diego set the example with his people: he commenced reaping the twelve acres south of Allwood's lot; and last, the fourteen acres at Peccary Field, which as yet had not been alienated. The corn, and the tobacco, and many of the roots, were got in by the 21st, and housed when the rains commenced, which lasted about five days. After they ceased, the remainder of the crop was taken up, and the grounds replanted with all expedition; in doing which, I took care to assist every one that required it; the ground now under cultivation out of my hands, being too much for the strength of the occupiers; and by the 31st of May all was finished.

During these operations, the sweet partner of all my cares and joys, and myself, had often conversed together on the propriety of making a visit to England; and having determined the matter, we now opened the subject to our brother and sister. They could not but acknowledge that we felt and judged rightly; and in a few days after, we convened the people, and told them of the necessity of my absence for a few months. On this occasion, several papers which had been drawn up, were now signed and delivered to the settlers; and their verbal compliance with the terms stated therein, taken before the congregation, and a note made at the foot of each paper to that effect. I then gave my brother a commission as my lieutenant, which was read aloud to them; and I expressed my hope that the people would be governed by him, as they had been by me, who, I was sure, would do every thing for their welfare: and, having appointed the following morning for a complete settlement of accounts with every individual of the colony, they were permitted to retire.

In a day or two after, all the accounts having been adjusted, I gave Diego a long interview; during which I expressed my attachment to him, promising him a mark of it at some future day, and desiring him and Rota to take charge of the house and plantation in my absence. I bade him look well after every thing, and to confer with my brother daily, giving him a report of proceedings. And I enjoined him to improve the grounds about our plantation, as much as possible; also, to lend assistance to my brother, or to any of the colonists, when required; and to exercise six of his men, as frequently as he had time, in the six-oared boat, so as to make a crew of expert rowers for me on my return; and that he must learn to steer me; and that I wished the sandy

beach of Long Bay, at Edward's Island, where the sheep where grazing, to be planted with cocoa-nut trees; also, the front of Allwood's settlement with a double row of the Barbadoes palm, now growing in our nursery below the cotton-tree. I particularly told him to mind the progress of the settlers' crops, to instruct them in all matters thereon, and, as soon as they should get them in, to distribute the pigs among them; but, in the meanwhile, to feed the herd with our own produce. And if at any time he should discover that any of the people needed help in any way, to represent it to my brother, that it might be given; taking care at the same time not to encourage idleness, and to be watchful over the conduct of all persons, so that any irregularities, if they should arise, might instantly be repressed.

When I had done with Diego, I sent for Allwood, and told him I wished the mansion to be exactly doubled, by running up its counterpart at the back, so as to give us two halls and four bed-rooms as at Peccary Field; and when these were done, to surround the house with a lofty piazza, and to paint the whole a lemon colour, except the pillars of the piazza and window-shutters, which were to be green; and to let Manus prepare window-sashes, and glaze them, ready to put in after my return. The details of this subject were now entered into, and the various points settled to Mr. Allwood's satisfaction and to mine.

I next sent for Hart, and gave him the last of the new houses built at Allwood's Bay; to which boon my kind Eliza added a suitable stock of poultry, and a she-goat with kid. This being arranged, I told Corporal Craig to take charge of the arms and ammunition; and I desired him to tell the soldiers, I should expect them to take guard, day and day about, from sunrise to sunrise, at the plank-house, which in future should be reserved entirely

for that military purpose; and they were to have charge of the barrier-gates, and storehouse, and boats and canoes, near their post, and any stores or other things within their observation: and this was the duty they were to perform for the pay allowed them, being the same as king's pay. By these arrangements, I hoped to guard against any bad individual, or individuals, that might be among us, or come among us, and my dear helpmate applauded my foresight. "The want of which," she said, "often exposes the foolish and wicked to fall into a snare, which a little prudence and precaution might have prevented: and it is certainly better," continued she, "to prevent crime than to punish it."

After drill on Saturday, the 5th of June, accompanied by my brother and Captain Drake, and Allwood and Hart, not omitting my faithful and intelligent Diego, we walked down towards the rocks that form the sea line of the open ground before the mansion. Here I pointed out a position within forty yards of the shore, where I proposed to erect a ten-gun battery *en barbette*. And after a little consultation with Drake, we marked out a line of 120 feet, nearly parallel to the beach, flanking it at either end with a line of sixty feet at an angle of 135 degrees. Along the whole extent of this line, I proposed a brick wall of five feet in height to be built; and a bank of sand extending from the summit of the wall outwards, in a sloping manner, to be made, so as to form a curtain to the battery. This work being planned out, I took the occasion of the presence of these chief men of the colony, to impress them with all I expected from them in my absence; and to do them justice, my address was met by a good spirit on all sides.

Sunday, 6th.—We held a solemn festival to the Lord. And on the following day, my dear wife and myself, with

our faithful little dog, together with our trunks, a box of fine shells, and the iron chest (containing 1930 doubloons and 3800 dollars, besides the contents of the Spanish box of gold and silver articles), embarked in the Porghee; attended by our brother and sister, followed closely by Diego and Rota, and all the people, who crowded round us, before we could step into the boat; our older friends embracing our knees, or kissing our hands; and thus, with the blessings of our people, and the blessing of God, we sailed out of the Northern Channel, with a fine breeze from the east, for Jamaica.

END OF VOLUME I.

LONDON:
Printed by Manning and Mason, Ivy-lane, Paternoster row.